

social welfare  
residential care

1950–1994

VOLUME II  
NATIONAL INSTITUTIONS



# Table of Contents

Table of Contents .....	2
Outline .....	8
Holdsworth .....	9
Physical description.....	9
Resident profile.....	13
Length of stay .....	16
Programmes and care .....	17
Work and training .....	21
Resident-to-resident issues .....	21
Health and medication .....	21
Psychiatric hospital placement .....	23
Staffing .....	24
Schooling .....	30
Absconding .....	43
Secure care .....	43
Discipline.....	44
Physical punishment .....	44
Drugs, alcohol, and tattoos .....	44
Smoking .....	44
Contact with field social workers.....	45
Contact with community.....	46
Visiting committees .....	47

Contact with families .....	48
Preparation for discharge and after care arrangements .....	49
Kohitere .....	51
Physical description.....	51
Resident profile.....	52
Length of stay .....	54
Programmes and care .....	55
Work and training .....	59
Resident-to-resident issues .....	60
Health and medication .....	60
Psychiatric hospital placement .....	62
Staffing .....	62
Schooling .....	64
Absconding.....	65
Secure care .....	66
Discipline.....	70
Physical punishment .....	71
Drugs, alcohol and tattoos .....	72
Smoking .....	72
Contact with field social workers.....	73
Contact with community.....	73
Visiting committees .....	74
Contact with families .....	75
Preparation for discharge and after care arrangements .....	76
Hokio .....	77
Physical description.....	77
Resident profile.....	78

Length of stay .....	80
Programmes and care .....	82
Work and training .....	84
Resident-to-resident issues .....	85
Health and medication .....	85
Psychiatric hospital placement .....	86
Staffing .....	86
Schooling .....	88
Absconding .....	91
Secure care .....	92
Discipline.....	93
Physical punishment .....	93
Drugs, alcohol and tattoos .....	93
Smoking .....	93
Contact with field social workers.....	94
Contact with community.....	94
Visiting committees .....	94
Contact with families .....	95
Preparation for discharge and aftercare arrangements .....	95
Campbell Park .....	96
Physical description.....	96
Resident profile.....	97
Length of stay .....	102
Programmes and care .....	103
Work and training .....	106
Resident-to-resident issues .....	107
Health and medication .....	108

Psychiatric hospital placement .....	109
Staffing .....	109
Schooling .....	114
Absconding .....	118
Secure care .....	118
Discipline.....	118
Physical punishment .....	119
Drugs, alcohol, and tattoos .....	119
Smoking .....	119
Contact with field social workers.....	120
Contact with community.....	120
Visiting committees .....	121
Contact with families .....	121
Preparation for discharge and after care arrangements .....	121
Weymouth.....	123
Physical description.....	123
Resident profile.....	124
Length of stay .....	127
Programmes and care .....	127
Work and training .....	133
Resident-to-resident issues .....	134
Health and medication .....	136
Psychiatric hospital placement .....	138
Staffing .....	138
Schooling .....	145
Absconding .....	149
Secure care .....	150

Discipline.....	156
Physical punishment.....	157
Drugs, alcohol, and tattoos.....	157
Smoking.....	158
Contact with field social workers.....	158
Contact with community.....	159
Visiting committees.....	159
Contact with families.....	160
Preparation for discharge and after care arrangements.....	161
Fareham House.....	162
Physical description.....	162
Resident profile.....	164
Length of stay.....	168
Programmes and care.....	169
Work and training.....	172
Resident-to-resident issues.....	173
Health and medication.....	174
Psychiatric hospital placement.....	176
Staffing.....	176
Schooling.....	190
Absconding.....	196
Secure care.....	197
Discipline.....	198
Physical punishment.....	199
Drugs, alcohol, and tattoos.....	199
Smoking.....	200
Contact with field social workers.....	201

Contact with community.....	202
Visiting committees .....	204
Contact with families .....	205
Preparation for discharge and after care arrangements .....	207
Kingslea .....	208
Physical description.....	208
Resident profile.....	210
Length of stay .....	214
Programmes and care .....	216
Work and training .....	223
Resident-to-resident issues .....	225
Health and medication .....	227
Psychiatric hospital placement .....	233
Staffing .....	234
Schooling .....	243
Absconding.....	248
Secure care .....	251
Discipline.....	260
Physical punishment.....	262
Drugs, alcohol, and tattoos .....	262
Smoking .....	264
Contact with field social workers.....	265
Contact with community.....	266
Visiting Committees.....	270
Contact with families .....	271
Preparation for discharge and after care arrangements .....	274



# Outline

This volume of the report (Volume II) profiles national institutions. The material from this volume can be cross-checked against the national policies and practices information in Volume I. National institutions for boys are presented first, from north to south, and these are followed by the national institutions for girls, Fareham House and Kingslea. This volume contains profiles of:

1. Holdsworth
2. Kohitere
3. Hokio
4. Campbell Park
5. Weymouth
6. Fareham House
7. Kingslea

Volume III of this report contains the district institutions (boys' and girls' homes) selected for profiling. Please see Volume III for profiles of:

1. Owairaka Boys' Home
2. Wesleydale Boys' Home
3. Hamilton Boys' Home
4. Epuni Boys' Home
5. Christchurch Boys' Home
6. Dunedin Boys' Home
7. Allendale Girls' Home
8. Miramar Girls' Home

Volume I contains national and other contextual information including the methodology adopted for this report.

Holdsworth, Kohitere and Hokio were national institutions for boys. Campbell Park was a special school for boys.

Chapter

1

# Holdsworth

## Physical description

Holdsworth opened in June 1971 as a National Training Institution for a maximum of 60<sup>1</sup> boys aged between 8 and 12 at the time of admission<sup>2</sup> who required up to two years residence in a controlled environment.<sup>3</sup> It aimed to provide social, educational and recreational training for disturbed or disadvantaged boys whose "difficulties and behaviours have not been successfully contained by community based programmes"<sup>4</sup> and for whom the traditional community resources were thought inappropriate.<sup>5</sup> Most of the boys resident at Holdsworth were expected to be State Wards.<sup>6</sup>

Holdsworth School was established at a site that was formerly the NZ Friend's School administered by the Quaker Society.<sup>7</sup> The Institution was set on 15 hectares of grounds in St Johns Hill, Wanganui.<sup>8</sup> This decreased to 6 hectares by about 1983.<sup>9</sup> It was just outside the city boundary - about three kilometers from the central shopping area.<sup>10</sup>

The Principal believed that the semi-rural outlook, the trees and fields, gave a feeling of spaciousness which was ideal for the residents.<sup>11</sup> He believed that pressures to abscond were lessened, and tensions caused by the proximity of family were removed.<sup>12</sup>

The main building, erected in 1928, was two-stories, with all dormitories on the first floor, and service and recreation areas on the ground floor.<sup>13</sup> There were three dormitories, and three shared rooms for senior boys.<sup>14</sup> Attached to this block was the original property homestead, which was used as the administration area around

<sup>1</sup> Memo, DH Ross to Mr W Renwick, S.S.S, 14/08/70, Holdsworth Staffing, 2006/977.

<sup>2</sup> Information about Holdsworth School for Social Workers 1975, Holdsworth Reports F000001599381, p1.

<sup>3</sup> Memo, DH Ross to Mr W Renwick, S.S.S, 14/08/70, Holdsworth Staffing, 2006/977. This document said that Holdsworth would cater for boys in the 8-13 age group (not 8-12).

<sup>4</sup> Annual Report 1976, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793, p1.

<sup>5</sup> Information about Holdsworth School for Social Workers 1975, Holdsworth Reports F000001599381, p1.

<sup>6</sup> Memo, DH Ross to Mr W Renwick, S.S.S, 14/08/70, Holdsworth Staffing, 2006/977.

<sup>7</sup> Information about Holdsworth School for Social Workers 1975, Holdsworth Reports F000001599381, p1.

<sup>8</sup> Report, Illegible, for Acting Director-General to the Minister of Social Welfare, 25/02/82, Holdsworth Profile, 32157, p1.

<sup>9</sup> Holdsworth School, Holdsworth Profile F5000002388341.

<sup>10</sup> Holdsworth School, Holdsworth Profile F5000002388341.

<sup>11</sup> AK McLean, Principal to Director-General 18/02/81, Holdsworth Profile 32157, p2.

<sup>12</sup> AK McLean, Principal to Director-General 18/02/81, Holdsworth Profile 32157, p2.

<sup>13</sup> Information about Holdsworth School for Social Workers 1975, Holdsworth Reports F000001599381, p1.

<sup>14</sup> Questionnaire to MP Doolan, Principal, Holdsworth School, 10/08/77, Holdsworth Profile, 5000002388341, p2.

the early 1980s.<sup>15</sup> A kitchen/dining room complex, two classroom blocks and various sheds and out-houses, together with staff houses, and a block of staff flats completed the complex.<sup>16</sup> Three of the six staff houses were on Holdsworth's property.<sup>17</sup> A library was being established in 1975.<sup>18</sup>

The property had a swimming pool and playing fields, but no gymnasium, despite repeated requests for one by the Principal.<sup>19</sup>

Holdsworth's premises were leased for five years from 1970,<sup>20</sup> but in 1972 the Department purchased the property.<sup>21</sup> In early 1971 a contract was completed for fire protection measures and minor structural work recommended by Ministry of Works.<sup>22</sup>

In June 1971, because of the increasing shortage of accommodation for boys and in the belief that the necessary renovations would be done within a few weeks, the Superintendent opened the institution with limited staff and boys.<sup>23</sup>

In 1972 a proposal was put forward to the Minister of Social Welfare to enable tenders to be called for alterations and renovations on Holdsworth.<sup>24</sup> Criticisms were about the poor physical state of the Institution.<sup>25</sup> This affected the number of boys that the institution could hold,<sup>26</sup> the type of staff who could be recruited,<sup>27</sup> and the number of staff who could live-in at Holdsworth to provided supervision and to be on call in emergencies.<sup>28</sup>

According to the 1974 proposal Holdsworth, it could take up to 50 boys, however it only had 38 boys in residence at that time.<sup>29</sup> The principal limiting factor, according to the proposal, was the lack of suitable accommodation for live-in staff.<sup>30</sup>

<sup>15</sup> Holdsworth School, Holdsworth Profile F5000002388341.

<sup>16</sup> Information about Holdsworth School for Social Workers 1975, Holdsworth Reports F000001599381, p1.

<sup>17</sup> Inspection Report, R J Wilson, visit of 10-12 March 1975, Holdsworth Reports 32156, p6.

<sup>18</sup> Inspection Report, R J Wilson, visit of 10-12 March 1975, Holdsworth Reports 32156, p6.

<sup>19</sup> Annual Report 1974, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793, p3. Annual Report 1975, Holdsworth

Reports, F5000006406793, p 2. Annual Report 1977, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793, p1.

Proposal, IJD MacKay, Director-General (Designate) to Minister of Social Welfare 02/03/74, Holdsworth Profile, 2006/978, p2.

<sup>20</sup> Proposal, IJD MacKay, Director-General (Designate) to Minister of Social Welfare 02/03/74, Holdsworth Profile, 2006/978, p1.

<sup>21</sup> Report, Illegible, for Acting Director-General to the Minister of Social Welfare, 25/02/82, Holdsworth Profile, 32157, p1.

<sup>22</sup> Proposal, IJD MacKay, Director-General (Designate) to Minister of Social Welfare 02/03/74, Holdsworth Profile, 2006/978, p1.

<sup>23</sup> Proposal, IJD MacKay, Director-General (Designate) to Minister of Social Welfare 02/03/74, Holdsworth Profile, 2006/978, p 1.

<sup>24</sup> Proposal, IJD MacKay, Director-General (Designate) to Minister of Social Welfare 02/03/74, Holdsworth Profile, 2006/978, p1.

<sup>25</sup> Memo, J M Wiseley, District Inspector of Schools, to Mr Ross, Officer for Special Education 22/02/72, Holdsworth Profile, 2006/965.

<sup>26</sup> Proposal, IJD MacKay, Director-General (Designate) to Minister of Social Welfare 02/03/74, Holdsworth Profile 2006/978, p2. According to the proposal Holdsworth, if it could be opened to full capacity, would take up to 50 boys, however it only had 38 boys in residence at that time.

<sup>27</sup> Proposal, IJD MacKay, Director-General (Designate) to Minister of Social Welfare 02/03/74, Holdsworth Profile 2006/978, p2. Married officers could not be recruited because of lack of suitable accommodation for them.

<sup>28</sup> Proposal, IJD MacKay, Director-General (Designate) to Minister of Social Welfare 02/03/74, Holdsworth Profile 2006/978, p2.

<sup>29</sup> Proposal, IJD MacKay, Director-General (Designate) to Minister of Social Welfare 02/03/74, Holdsworth Profile 2006/978, p2.

<sup>30</sup> Proposal, IJD MacKay, Director-General (Designate) to Minister of Social Welfare 02/03/74, Holdsworth Profile 2006/978, p2.

The Director General (Designate) was satisfied that the work proposed was essential to avoid a public scandal.<sup>31</sup> He recommended that the Superintendent approve expenditure for alterations and renovations to enable Holdsworth School to be opened to its full capacity.<sup>32</sup>

During 1973 considerable redecoration took place. Because it was a leasehold property, much that the Principal wanted to see done was not possible or justifiable because of the temporary nature of the Institution.<sup>33</sup> A new, relocatable, single class room was used this year.<sup>34</sup>

In 1975 a full-scale inspection carried out.<sup>35</sup> The Inspector commented that since his last visit, the accommodation had been rearranged, resulting in much better working conditions.<sup>36</sup> It was noted in the inspection report that the replacement of the old brick main building was urgent.<sup>37</sup>

The Inspection Report noted that the furniture in the dormitories was in very bad condition, and that a start had been made to replace it.<sup>38</sup>

In 1975 there was a transfer of office functions from Wanganui District Office, to the Institution so that almost all clerical functions were handled in Holdsworth's office.<sup>39</sup> This enabled the Principal to exercise closer oversight of the Institution's administration.<sup>40</sup>

In 1977 the Principal was concerned with the fire danger in the main accommodation block,<sup>41</sup> as was the Ministry of Works Fire Protection Officer.<sup>42</sup>

In 1980 the second Social Work Inspection of Holdsworth took place.<sup>43</sup> At this time there were around 40 boys in residence, although the maximum capacity was 60.<sup>44</sup>

Between 1974 and 1980 concerns were expressed about the physical state of the buildings,<sup>45</sup> including the main building being an earthquake risk.<sup>46</sup> Inspectors considered that the building needed to be urgently replaced.<sup>47</sup>

<sup>31</sup> Proposal, IJD MacKay, Director-General (Designate) to Minister of Social Welfare 02/03/74, Holdsworth Profile 2006/978, p2.

<sup>32</sup> Proposal, IJD MacKay, Director-General (Designate) to Minister of Social Welfare 02/03/74, Holdsworth Profile 2006/978, p2.

<sup>33</sup> Annual Report 1973, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793, p4. This is inconsistent with what was said in the Report by Illegible for Acting Director-General to the Minister of Social Welfare 25/02/82, Holdsworth Profile 25/02/82 – that the Department purchased the property in 1972.

<sup>34</sup> Annual Report 1973, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793.

<sup>35</sup> Annual Report 1975, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793, p 1.

<sup>36</sup> Inspection Report, R J Wilson, visit of 10-12 March 1975, Holdsworth Reports 32156, p3.

<sup>37</sup> Inspection Report, R J Wilson, visit of 10-12 March 1975, Holdsworth Reports 32156, p3.

<sup>38</sup> Inspection Report, R J Wilson, visit of 10-12 March 1975, Holdsworth Reports 32156, p3.

<sup>39</sup> Annual Report 1974, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793, p1.

<sup>40</sup> Annual Report 1975, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793, p 1.

<sup>41</sup> Annual Report 1977, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793, p2.

<sup>42</sup> Annual Report 1977, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793, p2.

<sup>43</sup> Inspection Report, J A Blair, J M Callon, 20/10/80, visit of 21-24 March 1980, Holdsworth Reports, 32156, p1.

<sup>44</sup> Inspection Report, J A Blair, J M Callon, 20/10/80, visit of 21-24 March 1980, Holdsworth Reports, 32156, p2.

<sup>45</sup> Annual Report 1974, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793, p3.

<sup>46</sup> Inspection Report, J A Blair, J M Callon, 20/10/80, visit of 21-24 March 1980, Holdsworth Reports, 32156, p6.

<sup>47</sup> Inspection Report, R J Wilson, visit of 10-12 March 1975, Holdsworth Reports 32156, p3.

During the late 1970s the Department was reviewing its residential services and felt the pressure of criticism that beds for the extended care of difficult children tended to be hundreds of miles away from their homes.<sup>48</sup> In 1980 the general redevelopment of Holdsworth was under consideration.<sup>49</sup>

The Department was aware of the need to replace Holdsworth School because of the structural inadequacy of the main buildings.<sup>50</sup> The cost of this was estimated at \$2.2 million dollars, which was just under the department's total works programme for one year.<sup>51</sup>

The information that the Department would not rebuild Holdsworth was conveyed on 21 January 1981.<sup>52</sup> The Principal described this news as a 'bombshell'.<sup>53</sup>

While canvassing possible alternatives for Holdsworth, it became clear that, according to the Director-General, the time was opportune for the department to make a radical change in the way it provided residential placements for the age group catered for in Holdsworth. A survey of admissions to Holdsworth and Fareham over a five year period showed that the children came from five catchment regions, and the proposal now developed provided for each catchment region to have a staffed family group home of between ten and twelve beds, bearing some relationship in size and facilities to Family Group Homes, but staffed by Resident Social Workers.<sup>54</sup>

The programme in Holdsworth was to continue as normal for the whole of 1981.<sup>55</sup> If the first two group homes were available by the beginning of 1982, as was hoped, the roll of Holdsworth was expected to drop as a result of the intake into the new units.<sup>56</sup> There was uncertainty about when the phasing out would begin, but was expected to be mid-1982.<sup>57</sup> Its completion was tentatively planned for early 1983, according to the Director-General, by which time a group home was intended to be operating on the Holdsworth site.<sup>58</sup>

The Principal reported that in 1982 the ratio of staff to children was maintained at a good level right to the end of the year, and that services were fully operational.<sup>59</sup> In that sense, he considered that 'phasing down' went very smoothly.<sup>60</sup> In late 1982 it

<sup>48</sup> Report, Illegible, for Acting Director-General to the Minister of Social Welfare, 25/02/82, Holdsworth Profile, 32157, p1.

<sup>49</sup> Inspection Report, J A Blair, J M Callon, 20/10/80, visit of 21-24 March 1980, Holdsworth Reports, 32156, p6.

<sup>50</sup> Circular Memorandum, SJ Callaghan, Director General to Department of Social Welfare, Head Office, 1981/9, 03/02/81, Holdsworth Profile, 5000003267103, p1.

<sup>51</sup> Circular Memorandum, SJ Callaghan, Director General to Department of Social Welfare, Head Office, 1981/9, 03/02/81, Holdsworth Profile, 5000003267103, p1.

<sup>52</sup> Circular Memorandum, SJ Callaghan, Director General to Department of Social Welfare, Head Office, 1981/9, 03/02/81, Holdsworth Profile, 5000003267103, p1.

<sup>53</sup> Annual Report 1982, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793, p1.

<sup>54</sup> Circular Memorandum, SJ Callaghan, Director General to Department of Social Welfare, Head Office, 1981/9, 03/02/81, Holdsworth Profile, 5000003267103, p1.

<sup>55</sup> Circular Memorandum, SJ Callaghan, Director General to Department of Social Welfare, Head Office, 1981/9, 03/02/81, Holdsworth Profile, 5000003267103, p2.

<sup>56</sup> Circular Memorandum, SJ Callaghan, Director General to Department of Social Welfare, Head Office, 1981/9, 03/02/81, Holdsworth Profile, 5000003267103, p2.

<sup>57</sup> Memo, AK McCallum (for Director-General of Education) to W R Mosley (Department Head Office to Wanganui Education Board), 38/6/41, 17/07/81, Holdsworth Profile, 2006/972.

<sup>58</sup> Circular Memorandum, SJ Callaghan, Director General to Department of Social Welfare, Head Office, 1981/9, 03/02/81, Holdsworth Profile, 5000003267103, p2.

<sup>59</sup> Annual Report 1982, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793, p2.

<sup>60</sup> Annual Report 1982, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793, p2.

was agreed that the existing programme at Holdsworth would cease on 12 December 1982.<sup>61</sup>

The demolition of the main residential block was completed in November 1982.<sup>62</sup> The Principal noted that for the last term the children were housed in a former staff house and that the rest of the operation was spread around several buildings.<sup>63</sup>

The original plan to open a Group Home on the Holdsworth site with a classroom attached was not proceeded with, rather a cottage complex for 20 boys and girls was close to becoming a reality in 1983.<sup>64</sup>

Around 1984 Holdsworth's administration office had been converted to a ten bed residential assessment unit.<sup>65</sup>

The 1982 Annual Report noted that in Holdsworth's history, it had cared for approximately five hundred boys who had been placed in the care of the Department of Social Welfare.<sup>66</sup>

## Resident profile

The children at Holdsworth were some of the most difficult and disturbed children that the Principal (Mr McLean) had seen.<sup>67</sup> According to Mr McLean, invariably children came from situations in which they proved to be out of control.<sup>68</sup>

Residents had a varied history of previous placements – foster and family homes, private institutions, boys' homes, health camp and Education Department residential schools for maladjusted children.<sup>69</sup>

In 1975 the roll comprised of children who exhibited patterns of behaviour including, chronic truancy, running away from home, petty theft over lengthy periods, markedly aggressive behaviour towards others, severe educational under achievement, explosive behavioural outbursts, inability to relate adequately with others and acting out behaviour.<sup>70</sup>

New boys were quickly and quietly adjusted into the routine of the institution, according to the Inspectors.<sup>71</sup>

<sup>61</sup> Letter, JD Scott, for Director General to Director-General of Education, 22/11/82, Holdsworth Profile, 52157.

<sup>62</sup> Annual Report 1982, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793, p2.

<sup>63</sup> Annual Report 1982, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793, p2.

<sup>64</sup> Letter, A McLean, Principal Holdsworth School to District Senior Inspector of Schools, 09/03/83, Holdsworth Education, 32157.

<sup>65</sup> Circular Memorandum, JW Grant, Director-General to Department of Social Welfare, Head Office, 1984/79, 03/07/84, Holdsworth Profile, 5000002368864, p1.

<sup>66</sup> Annual Report 1982, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793, p1.

<sup>67</sup> AK McLean, Principal to Director-General 18/02/81, Holdsworth Profile 32157, p2.

<sup>68</sup> AK McLean, Principal to Director-General 18/02/81, Holdsworth Profile 32157, p2.

<sup>69</sup> AK McLean, Principal to Director-General 18/02/81, Holdsworth Profile 32157, p3.

<sup>70</sup> Information about Holdsworth School for Social Workers 1975, Holdsworth Reports F000001599381, p1-2.

<sup>71</sup> Inspection Report, J A Blair, J M Callon, 20/10/80, visit of 21-24 March 1980, Holdsworth Reports, 32156, p4.

Between 1972 and 1981 most boys admitted were Maori, followed by European, with Pacific Island boys by far accounting for the lowest number of boys in residence.<sup>72</sup>

A dramatic swing discernible in 1973 was the greater number of European admissions, which accounted for 47 percent of admissions.<sup>73</sup> This was the largest number of European boys admitted in any one year between 1972 and 1981. The percentage of European boys admitted in a year did not drop below 24 percent during this time period.<sup>74</sup>

Between 1972 and 1981 the number of Pacific Islanders admitted did not rise above eleven percent. In 1972, 1975 and 1976 no Pacific Islanders were admitted.<sup>75</sup>

Maori made up for at least half the number of boys admitted to Holdsworth every year between 1972 and 1981. The most Maori admitted in one year was in 1981 when Maori accounted for 70 percent of the institution's population.<sup>76</sup>

### Admission Policy and Numbers

Between 1972 and 1981, Holdsworth admitted boys who ranged in age between seven and fourteen years with <sup>77</sup> the majority aged between eleven and twelve years.<sup>78</sup> Holdsworth's age range for admission, 8 to 13 years, overlapped with Hokio's range (11 to 14 years) to ensure that boys over 11 who were physically small and socially immature could be accommodated with boys their own size, and not be exposed to larger, more sophisticated boys at Hokio.<sup>79</sup> Similarly, large 11 and 12 year olds were recommended to go to Hokio as were boys at or near third form level of schooling (unless circumstances were exceptional).<sup>80</sup>

Between 1972 and 1981 boys were admitted from Auckland, Hamilton, Lower Hutt, Christchurch and Dunedin Boys Homes, as well as from other institutions (other National Institutions or Psychiatric Hospitals), and directly from districts.<sup>81</sup> Over this period most of the admissions came from Auckland Boys' Home, followed by Lower Hutt Boys' Home.<sup>82</sup>

Between 1972 and 1981 Holdsworth's roll ranged from 25 (in December 1981) to 44.<sup>83</sup> Occasionally in 1979 it reached 50.<sup>84</sup> In 1982 the Principal indicated that the opening roll for 1982 would be about 25, and that it would not rise above 40 in that

<sup>72</sup> Annual Report 1973, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793 to Annual Report 1981, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793. In 1972, 1975 and 1976 there were no Pacific Island boys in residence.

<sup>73</sup> Annual Report 1973, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793, p1; table IV.

<sup>74</sup> Annual Report 1974, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793 to Annual Report 1981, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793.

<sup>75</sup> Annual Report 1974, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793 to Annual Report 1981, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793.

<sup>76</sup> Annual Report 1981, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793, p1.

<sup>77</sup> Circular Memorandum 1971/30, undated, Holdsworth Profile, 5000001599381.

<sup>78</sup> Annual Report 1973, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793 to Annual Report 1981, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793.

<sup>79</sup> Circular Memorandum 1971/38, to all DCWOs and Principals, 10/09/71, Holdsworth Profile, 5000001599381.

<sup>80</sup> Circular Memorandum 1971/38, to all DCWOs and Principals, 10/09/71, Holdsworth Profile, 5000001599381.

<sup>81</sup> Annual Reports from 1973 to 1981, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793, table II.

<sup>82</sup> Annual Reports from 1973 to 1981, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793, table II.

<sup>83</sup> Annual Report 1971, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793, table I to Annual Report 1981, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793, table I.

<sup>84</sup> Report, illegible to Mr Lucas, 21/12/79, Holdsworth Reports, 31424, p1.

year.<sup>85</sup> No new admissions were to be made after the first term, according to the Principal, and all boys were to be discharged in December of that year.<sup>86</sup> The Principal reported that 1980 saw the highest number of admissions in any one year recorded, and by December, Holdsworth was full for the first time in 18 months.<sup>87</sup>

In the latter half of 1974 Holdsworth was asked to take some overflow from Hokio Beach School, and admitted six or more boys, who on the basis of age and offending history, would normally have gone to that institution.<sup>88</sup> They were absorbed with little difficulty, according to the Principal.<sup>89</sup>

In 1974 and 1975 there was an increase in 'the number of boys being admitted direct from Districts without undergoing the assessment procedures of a Boys' Home'.<sup>90</sup> The Principal saw the increase as a significant figure, and suggested that it indicated that pressures on Boys' Homes were so severe that Districts were beginning to bypass them as a resource and seek long-term training in the first instance.<sup>91</sup> The number of admissions directly from districts dropped only once between 1975 and 1981.<sup>92</sup> The 1975 Inspection Report stated that once Beck House was operational, Holdsworth's admission criteria should be looked at again, particularly the use being made of it by individual districts.<sup>93</sup>

An Inspector commented that in 1975 there were still difficulties in admission arrangements.<sup>94</sup> According to him, meal times and weekends were times of staff shortage, which meant children admitted at this time did not get an adequate reception.<sup>95</sup> He also commented that some boys were still not properly prepared for admission.<sup>96</sup>

According to the Inspector admissions, which were approved through Head office, were controlled by the Principal.<sup>97</sup> An induction on admission procedure operated and was controlled by an action sheet.<sup>98</sup>

In June 1982 the Principal believed that admissions to Holdsworth should cease, as staffing levels were expected to drop as staff left to take new positions.<sup>99</sup> At that time the Principal was under increasing pressure to take urgent admissions from Districts and Regional institutions, and he felt Holdsworth could not cope with any more than twelve boys in the last term of 1982.<sup>100</sup>

<sup>85</sup> Letter, AK McLean, Principal Holdsworth School to Director General, 10/12/81, Holdsworth Profile, 32157.

<sup>86</sup> Letter, AK McLean, Principal Holdsworth School to Director General, 10/12/81, Holdsworth Profile 32157.

<sup>87</sup> Annual Report 1980, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793, p1.

<sup>88</sup> Annual Report 1974, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793, p1.

<sup>89</sup> Annual Report 1974, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793, p1.

<sup>90</sup> Annual Report 1975, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793, p 1.

<sup>91</sup> Annual Report 1974, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793, p1.

<sup>92</sup> Annual Report 1975, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793, table II, p 1 to Annual Report 1981, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793, table II, p 1

<sup>93</sup> Inspection Report, R J Wilson, visit of 10-12 March 1975, Holdsworth Reports 32156, p7-8.

<sup>94</sup> Inspection Report, R J Wilson, visit of 10-12 March 1975, Holdsworth Reports 32156, p7.

<sup>95</sup> Inspection Report, R J Wilson, visit of 10-12 March 1975, Holdsworth Reports 32156, p7.

<sup>96</sup> Inspection Report, R J Wilson, visit of 10-12 March 1975, Holdsworth Reports 32156, p7.

<sup>97</sup> Inspection Report, J A Blair, J M Callon, 20/10/80, visit of 21-24 March 1980, Holdsworth Reports, 32156, p5.

<sup>98</sup> Inspection Report, J A Blair, J M Callon, 20/10/80, visit of 21-24 March 1980, Holdsworth Reports, 32156, p5.

<sup>99</sup> Letter, AK McLean to Director-General, 17/06/82, Holdsworth Profile, 52157.

<sup>100</sup> Letter, AK McLean to Director-General, 17/06/82, Holdsworth Profile, 52157.



## Relationships

In 1973 and 1974 the Principal commented that good relationships existed between the boys and staff.<sup>101</sup> The Principal believed that in an Institution as open as Holdsworth, effective control depended more on the positive relationships boys developed with staff, than on repressive, negative and regimented measures.<sup>102</sup> In 1974, according to the Principal, there was a stable and relaxed atmosphere where residents could come to grips with themselves and their difficulties, with the help of supportive adults.<sup>103</sup>

## Length of stay

Residents' stays ranged from between three months to two years nine months.<sup>104</sup> In 1981 the Principal commented that two years was the exception rather than the rule.<sup>105</sup> The average length of stay, which was just over 14 months, reflected this.<sup>106</sup> In 1981 the average length of stay decreased to 12.3 months, the lowest figure ever recorded at Holdsworth.<sup>107</sup>

In 1974 the Principal made reference to empirical evidence that suggested as much could be accomplished in 8 to 12 months residential training as from a much longer period. He commented that "we are persuaded at times to keep boys longer than we feel it is wise to, largely because of the non-availability of suitable placements in the community. Our experience is that boys kept too long past their peak, regress in their behaviour and attitudes and much good work is undone in the process".<sup>108</sup>

In 1980 the Inspectors stated that boys normally required four to five terms in residence before they are ready for discharge (which in most cases was to their own home).<sup>109</sup> This was less time than some years previously, according to the Inspectors.<sup>110</sup>

According to the Principal in 1981 discharges were up to 44 percent – the highest that he could recall.<sup>111</sup>

<sup>101</sup> Annual Report 1973, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793, p4; Annual Report 1973, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793, p4.

<sup>102</sup> Annual Report 1973, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793, p4.

<sup>103</sup> Annual Report 1974, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793, p1.

<sup>104</sup> Annual Report 1972, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793, table V to

Annual Report 1981, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793, table V.

<sup>105</sup> Letter, AK McLean, Principal Holdsworth, to Area Welfare Officer, Otara, 12/11/81, Holdsworth Profile, 32157, p1.

<sup>106</sup> Annual Report 1972, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793, table V to

Annual Report 1981, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793, table V.

<sup>107</sup> Annual Report 1981, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793, p1.

<sup>108</sup> Annual Report 1974, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793, p 1.

<sup>109</sup> Inspection Report, J A Blair, J M Callon, 20/10/80, visit of 21-24 March 1980, Holdsworth Reports, 32156, p2.

<sup>110</sup> Inspection Report, J A Blair, J M Callon, 20/10/80, visit of 21-24 March 1980, Holdsworth Reports, 32156, p2.

<sup>111</sup> Annual Report 1981, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793, p1.

## Programmes and care

Holdsworth provided social behavioural and educational training that aimed to return boys to the community with a reduced probability of chronic dysfunction.<sup>112</sup> In that respect, Holdsworth was not “offence” oriented.<sup>113</sup> Rather, children were considered for admission who exhibited a pattern of behaviour which, if it continued, would be likely to result in offences or personality maladjustment – however, this was subject to the prerogative of Head Office, where admissions were approved.<sup>114</sup>

The average child who arrived at Holdsworth needed to be taught how to behave, and did not have the ability to cope with the pressure and frustrations of normal daily living – moving from one conflict situation to another.<sup>115</sup> Often boys admitted had not been properly taught basic tasks of daily living – like toileting, eating and socialising.<sup>116</sup>

### Privileges/rewards systems and educational programmes

In 1973 the Principal commented that while programmes, routines and incentive/disincentive systems would have a temporary effect on the behaviour of children, in the long run, it would be the impact that the staff have on the boys that would “ring in the changes”.<sup>117</sup> He commented that the programme would encourage boys to think for themselves, to accept responsibility for their own behaviour, and to develop their self-respect.<sup>118</sup>

The Institution’s therapeutic emphasis in 1975 was on relationships therapy. Attempts were made to increase the child’s capacity to relate effectively with peers and adults and to modify his emotional responses and demands accordingly.<sup>119</sup>

In 1976 all of the programmes – educational, social and recreational – were merely means to achieve three set objectives: to return boys to the community with a reduced incidence of offending or dysfunctional behaviour; to provide boys with a new experience of relating to adults in a way that enabled them to reinterpret what authority was all about; and to encourage the boys to regard themselves as persons of worth, with control over their lives, and who can love and be loved.<sup>120</sup> Three therapeutic approaches were adopted, namely, behaviour modification, relationships therapy and reality therapy.<sup>121</sup>

In 1976 the Principal commented that “all institutions operate some form of internal assessment procedure, which has, as one of its objectives at least, the allocation of rewards, punishments, pocket-money, or privileges of one sort or another, to encourage or promote pro-social behaviour. The ‘Token Economy’ – we prefer

<sup>112</sup> Information about Holdsworth School for Social Workers 1975, Holdsworth Reports F000001599381, p1.

<sup>113</sup> Information about Holdsworth School for Social Workers 1975, Holdsworth Reports F000001599381, p1.

<sup>114</sup> Information about Holdsworth School for Social Workers 1975, Holdsworth Reports F000001599381, p1.

<sup>115</sup> AK McLean, Principal to Director-General 18/02/81, Holdsworth Profile 32157, p3.

<sup>116</sup> AK McLean, Principal to Director-General 18/02/81, Holdsworth Profile 32157, p3.

<sup>117</sup> Annual Report 1973, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793, p4.

<sup>118</sup> Annual Report 1973, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793, p4.

<sup>119</sup> Information about Holdsworth School for Social Workers 1975, Holdsworth Reports F000001599381, p3.

<sup>120</sup> Annual Report 1976, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793, p1.

<sup>121</sup> Annual Report 1976, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793, p2.

'Credit Card system as a title - employed at this Institution, sets out to do just that.'<sup>122</sup> In 1975 it was noted that the behaviour modification programme which operated had been amended several times since its introduction in 1971.<sup>123</sup> The token economy concentrated on the 'what' rather than the 'why' of behaviour, and was based on the theory that disabling patterns of behaviour can be unlearned and enabling patterns learned.<sup>124</sup>

The system was a form of internal assessment procedure which had as one of its objectives, the allocation of rewards, punishments, pocket money and privileges to promote pro-social behaviour.<sup>125</sup> The system isolated behaviours that required modifying very quickly, so that staff did not need to try and modify the whole child unnecessarily.<sup>126</sup> Rewards were allocated on the basis of pro-social responses, over ten categories, for which behavioural criteria had been established.<sup>127</sup> The Inspector noted in 1975 that there were promising indications that the programme was effective with the boys, and that further research by the Housemaster was continuing.<sup>128</sup>

The Inspectors reported in 1980 that after spending an initial period in an induction group (with limited privileges) boys could graduate to higher groups, and that while the overall philosophy was towards behaviour modification and positive reinforcement, the system is not all-important as has been the case elsewhere.<sup>129</sup>

In 1977 the Principal was very satisfied with the development of Holdsworth's training programme to help the disturbed and difficult boys in ways that did not require repressive, regimented techniques.<sup>130</sup>

In 1980 a credits and debits system operated as part of the pocket money system and in line with most other national institutions an averaging system operated.<sup>131</sup> There was no further information in the Holdsworth files about either of these systems.

## Recreation

In 1974 a teacher was employed for five hours a week to educate the residents about Maori language, etiquette, handicrafts, folklore, action song and haka.<sup>132</sup>

According to an Inspection Report, leisure time was well occupied in 1975, despite the paucity of facilities.<sup>133</sup> A full range of range of summer and winter sports was

<sup>122</sup> Annual Report 1976, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793, p1.

<sup>123</sup> Inspection Report, R J Wilson, visit of 10-12 March 1975, Holdsworth Reports 32156, p5.

<sup>124</sup> Information about Holdsworth School for Social Workers 1975, Holdsworth Reports F000001599381, p3.

<sup>125</sup> Annual Report 1976, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793, p1.

<sup>126</sup> Annual Report 1976, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793, p1.

<sup>127</sup> Questionnaire to MP Doolan, Principal, Holdsworth School, 10/08/77, Holdsworth Profile, 5000002388341.

<sup>128</sup> Inspection Report, R J Wilson, visit of 10-12 March 1975, Holdsworth Reports 32156, p5.

<sup>129</sup> Inspection Report, J A Blair, J M Callon, 20/10/80, visit of 21-24 March 1980, Holdsworth Reports, 32156, p3.

<sup>130</sup> Annual Report 1977, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793, p 3.

<sup>131</sup> Inspection Report, J A Blair, J M Callon, 20/10/80, visit of 21-24 March 1980, Holdsworth Reports, 32156, p5.

<sup>132</sup> Inspection Report, J A Blair, J M Callon, 20/10/80, visit of 21-24 March 1980, Holdsworth Reports, 32156, p5.

<sup>133</sup> Inspection Report, R J Wilson, visit of 10-12 March 1975, Holdsworth Reports 32156, p5.

available, and there was provision for more individual specific pursuits.<sup>134</sup> There were links with two other schools, both in sport and other recreational activities.<sup>135</sup> Hobby classes in woodwork, carving, leatherwork, art and the like were held outside of school hours.<sup>136</sup> Other activities available included non-denominational Christian activities, and feature films.<sup>137</sup> Boys had free time to follow their own pursuits under general staff supervision.<sup>138</sup>

In 1975 the Inspector commented that there were few trips away from the institution.<sup>139</sup> The Inspector noticed a tension, which he attributed to the boys not getting away from Holdsworth often enough.<sup>140</sup> The Principal intended to use Camp Rewa as often as possible and housemasters and teachers were to be encouraged to take small groups there for two to three days.<sup>141</sup> A very successful camp, according to the Inspector, was held offsite in 1974.<sup>142</sup>

Special events that occurred in 1976 included five days at a Camp School, overnight and day trips to Camp Rewa, regular sessions of school singing, a carol service for Christmas, a variety concert, a programme of elective clubs featuring music, drama, weaving, badminton, macramé, and leather work.<sup>143</sup> Maori studies were terminated.<sup>144</sup> There were a variety of off site class trips.<sup>145</sup> In 1976 swimming instruction and sports were given special attention.<sup>146</sup> The annual winter sports event with Ratana School was held and teachers arranged social sports fixtures with several local district schools.<sup>147</sup>

In 1978 arrangements were made by the Inspectorate for instruction to be given at the Manual Arts Centre for boys from one and over.<sup>148</sup> Boys paid for approximately one third of articles made, while the Department of Social Welfare paid for the remainder.<sup>149</sup>

In 1979 full use was made of fee for service in a general hobbies programme.<sup>150</sup> Four nights a week classes in Maori carving, pottery arts and crafts, slot cars stamp collecting and woodwork were run.<sup>151</sup> In 1979 camps jointly run by teachers and social workers were held at a variety of locations.<sup>152</sup>

In 1980 the Inspectors remarked that a very positive and caring approach was being made by the staff towards the programmes operating, and that every effort was

<sup>134</sup> Information about Holdsworth School for Social Workers 1975, Holdsworth Reports F000001599381, p3.

<sup>135</sup> Inspection Report, R J Wilson, visit of 10-12 March 1975, Holdsworth Reports 32156, p5.

<sup>136</sup> Information about Holdsworth School for Social Workers 1975, Holdsworth Reports F000001599381, p3.

<sup>137</sup> Inspection Report, R J Wilson, visit of 10-12 March 1975, Holdsworth Reports 32156, p5.

<sup>138</sup> Information about Holdsworth School for Social Workers 1975, Holdsworth Reports F000001599381, p3.

<sup>139</sup> Inspection Report, R J Wilson, visit of 10-12 March 1975, Holdsworth Reports 32156, p6.

<sup>140</sup> Inspection Report, R J Wilson, visit of 10-12 March 1975, Holdsworth Reports 32156, p6.

<sup>141</sup> Inspection Report, R J Wilson, visit of 10-12 March 1975, Holdsworth Reports 32156, p6.

<sup>142</sup> Inspection Report, R J Wilson, visit of 10-12 March 1975, Holdsworth Reports 32156, p6.

<sup>143</sup> Annual Report 1976, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793.

<sup>144</sup> Annual Report 1976, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793.

<sup>145</sup> Annual Report 1976, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793.

<sup>146</sup> Annual Report 1976, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793.

<sup>147</sup> Annual Report 1976, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793.

<sup>148</sup> Notes supplied by Head Teacher for visit of L Silcock 12/04/78, Holdsworth Profile, 2006/982, p4.

<sup>149</sup> Notes supplied by Head Teacher for visit of L Silcock 12/04/78, Holdsworth Profile, 2006/982, p4.

<sup>150</sup> Annual Report 1979, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793, p 2.

<sup>151</sup> Annual Report 1979, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793, p 2.

<sup>152</sup> Annual Report 1979, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793.

being made to make the programmes interesting and effective.<sup>153</sup> They also commented that good use was being made of the fee for service provisions - 33 hours a week was being used for remedial reading, arts and crafts, pottery, woodwork, stamp collecting, Maori carving, and slot cars.<sup>154</sup>

In 1980 a mixture of free play and organised play times made for a good balance of recreational activity, in the Inspectors' opinion.<sup>155</sup> and there was a wide selection of activities that the boys could participate in.<sup>156</sup>

According to the Principal participation locally in team sports, and continued use of the camping programme continued in 1980.<sup>157</sup> The Principal stated that the addition of a bus made camping ventures particularly, much easier to organise. Evening hobby classes continued.<sup>158</sup>

In 1980 the Principal reported that at the end of year seminar Holdsworth took a very hard, critical look at its performance, and made adjustments to its programme.<sup>159</sup>

In 1981 the Principal reported that various camps and trips were run, which as well as being pleasurable outings, were seen as ideal opportunities to test the boys in different situations, and to observe how they interacted and related to others.<sup>160</sup>

The Principal said that as much as was possible, staff maintained former programmes in 1982, as it was felt that it was unwise to make more changes to what was already a rather unsettled institution.<sup>161</sup>

In 1983 a range of summer and winter sports were available and there was provision for more individual specific pursuits.<sup>162</sup> Hobby classes in woodwork, carving, leatherwork, art and the like were held outside of school hours.<sup>163</sup> Boys had ample free time to follow their own pursuits under general staff supervision.<sup>164</sup> Camps and regular day trips at weekends were organised, and boys enjoyed sporting and cultural contacts with local schools and clubs.<sup>165</sup>

## Administration

In 1975 all diaries, occurrence books, punishment register medical treatment register and attendance records were properly kept up to date, according to the Inspector.<sup>166</sup>

In 1980 there was a diary in use which was used to record coming events, admissions, discharges and abscondings.<sup>167</sup> There was also an occurrence book

<sup>153</sup> Inspection Report, J A Blair, J M Callon, 20/10/80, visit of 21-24 March 1980, Holdsworth Reports, 32156, p8.

<sup>154</sup> Inspection Report, J A Blair, J M Callon, 20/10/80, visit of 21-24 March 1980, Holdsworth Reports, 32156, p1.

<sup>155</sup> Inspection Report, J A Blair, J M Callon, 20/10/80, visit of 21-24 March 1980, Holdsworth Reports, 32156, p3.

<sup>156</sup> Inspection Report, J A Blair, J M Callon, 20/10/80, visit of 21-24 March 1980, Holdsworth Reports, 32156, p3.

<sup>157</sup> Annual Report 1980, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793, p1.

<sup>158</sup> Annual Report 1980, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793, p2.

<sup>159</sup> Annual Report 1980, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793, p3.

<sup>160</sup> Annual Report 1981, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793, p3.

<sup>161</sup> Annual Report 1982, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793, p2.

<sup>162</sup> Holdsworth School, Holdsworth Profile F5000002388341

<sup>163</sup> Holdsworth School, Holdsworth profile F5000002388341

<sup>164</sup> Holdsworth School, Holdsworth profile F5000002388341

<sup>165</sup> Holdsworth School, Holdsworth Profile F5000002388341

<sup>166</sup> Inspection Report, R J Wilson, visit of 10-12 March 1975, Holdsworth Reports 32156, p7.

which recorded the movement of all boys on and off the property. The Inspectors commented that 'the recording of checks of boys during night hours was made on a fairly regular basis and it was suggested that these checks be made on a more irregular time pattern basis'.<sup>168</sup>

## Work and training

Due to the younger age group at Holdsworth, the only reference to this topic on file is that in 1979 some boys participated in the work experience programme. This involved the resident attending school for part of the week, and spending the remainder of the school hours with the handyman/instructor, and learning basic skills in carpentry, plumbing and glazing, for example.<sup>169</sup> According to the Principal, this proved to be reasonably successful.<sup>170</sup>

## Resident-to-resident issues

There is nothing in the Holdsworth files about this topic.

## Health and medication

Many of the boys admitted to Holdsworth in 1973 were deeply disturbed and were of the age when specialist therapeutic treatment was seen by the Principal to be most effective.<sup>171</sup>

The Psychiatric Charge Nurse from Lake Alice Hospital visited Holdsworth weekly in 1973, supervising medication and offering a follow up for boys discharged from Lake Alice.<sup>172</sup> The Principal noted that this proved most useful and was pleased to see the reduction in recent months of the number of boys on behavioural control medication.<sup>173</sup>

No psychiatric services were available in 1977.<sup>174</sup> In 1979 the Principal stated that little use was made of psychiatric services, and that if they were available, staff would be able to gain a better assessment of children who presented very disturbed behaviours, as well as being able to set up a more effective treatment programme.<sup>175</sup> In 1980 the Inspectors commented that psychiatric services had previously been available through the Adolescent Unit at Lake Alice Hospital, but that this was now

<sup>167</sup> Inspection Report, J A Blair, J M Callon, 20/10/80, visit of 21-24 March 1980, Holdsworth Reports, 32156, p4.

<sup>168</sup> Inspection Report, J A Blair, J M Callon, 20/10/80, visit of 21-24 March 1980, Holdsworth Reports, 32156, p4.

<sup>169</sup> Annual Report 1979, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793, p 2.

<sup>170</sup> Annual Report 1979, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793, p 2.

<sup>171</sup> Annual Report 1973, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793, p2.

<sup>172</sup> Annual Report 1973, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793, p2.

<sup>173</sup> Annual Report 1973, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793, p2.

<sup>174</sup> Questionnaire MP Doolan, Principal, Holdsworth School, 10/08/77, Holdsworth Profile, 5000002388341, p4.

<sup>175</sup> Annual Report 1979, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793, p 2.

closed and a limited service was provided by Doctor Fraser.<sup>176</sup> In 1981 the Psychiatrist, according to the Principal, spent one day a week at Holdsworth, carrying out assessments, discussing cases with teaching and social work staff and giving full support to Holdsworth's programme.<sup>177</sup>

In 1973 the Principal commented that the psychologist was not spending sufficient time at Holdsworth.<sup>178</sup> In 1974 and 1975 it was hoped that a psychologist would provide a weekly service, however this did not eventuate until 1977.<sup>179</sup> In 1979 and in 1980 the Principal again complained about the lack of psychological service.<sup>180</sup> The 1980 Inspectors believed the psychological services provided were barely adequate.<sup>181</sup>

Between 1973 and 1981 Principals commented on the high quality of the services provided by the Psychologists.<sup>182</sup> In 1976 the psychologist made suggestions for care and training and was interested in the school and classroom programmes.<sup>183</sup>

Between 1975 and 1979 the Principal made several comments that medical and dental servicing of Holdsworth was of a very high standard<sup>184</sup> which the Inspectors in 1975 and 1980 echoed.<sup>185</sup> In 1975 and 1977 a general practitioner visited once a week.<sup>186</sup> In 1975 and the Matron or her deputy held twice daily medical parades.<sup>187</sup> In the same year, the Inspector commented that medical records were well kept, but that drug storage should be improved.<sup>188</sup> In 1980 the procedures in relation to the storage and administration of drugs and prescriptions were checked by the Inspectors and found to be very satisfactory.<sup>189</sup>

In 1975 a medical certificate stating the child was free from communicable disease was required on admission.<sup>190</sup> In 1980 Inspectors reported that entrance medicals were carried out by a doctor shortly after admission<sup>191</sup> and that ongoing medical checks and basic administration of first aid was carried out in the mornings and

<sup>176</sup> Inspection Report, J A Blair, J M Callon, 20/10/80, visit of 21-24 March 1980, Holdsworth Reports, 32156, p6.

<sup>177</sup> Annual Report 1981, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793, p2.

<sup>178</sup> Annual Report 1973, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793, p2.

<sup>179</sup> Annual Report 1974, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793, p2; Inspection Report, R J Wilson, visit of 10-12 March 1975, Holdsworth Reports 32156, p7; Questionnaire MP Doolan, Principal, Holdsworth School, 10/08/77, Holdsworth Profile, 5000002388341, p4.

<sup>180</sup> Annual Report 1979, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793, p 2; Annual Report 1980, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793, p2.

<sup>181</sup> Inspection Report, J A Blair, J M Callon, 20/10/80, visit of 21-24 March 1980, Holdsworth Reports, 32156, p6.

<sup>182</sup> Annual Report 1974, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793, p2; Annual Report 1981, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793, p2. Other annual reports reflect this.

<sup>183</sup> Annual Report 1976, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793.

<sup>184</sup> Annual Report 1975, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793, p 2; Annual Report 1979, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793, p 3.

<sup>185</sup> Inspection Report, R J Wilson, visit of 10-12 March 1975, Holdsworth Reports 32156, p6; Inspection Report, J A Blair, J M Callon, 20/10/80, visit of 21-24 March 1980, Holdsworth Reports, 32156, p6.

<sup>186</sup> Inspection Report, R J Wilson, visit of 10-12 March 1975, Holdsworth Reports 32156, p6; Questionnaire MP Doolan, Principal, Holdsworth School, 10/08/77, Holdsworth Profile, 5000002388341, p4.

<sup>187</sup> Inspection Report, R J Wilson, visit of 10-12 March 1975, Holdsworth Reports 32156, p6.

<sup>188</sup> Inspection Report, R J Wilson, visit of 10-12 March 1975, Holdsworth Reports 32156, p6.

<sup>189</sup> Inspection Report, J A Blair, J M Callon, 20/10/80, visit of 21-24 March 1980, Holdsworth Reports, 32156, p6.

<sup>190</sup> Information about Holdsworth School for Social Workers 1975, Holdsworth Reports F000001599381, p3.

<sup>191</sup> Inspection Report, J A Blair, J M Callon, 20/10/80, visit of 21-24 March 1980, Holdsworth Reports, 32156, p5.

afternoons by the supervisor (previously designated matron) and the Assistant Supervisor.<sup>192</sup> They reported that the present supervisor had nursing training, but was not qualified.<sup>193</sup> According to the Inspectors, the general medical area was causing the Principal some concern, and he would be making representations to Head Office for a part time (qualified) visiting nurse.<sup>194</sup>

In 1980 the Principal commented that overall there were no major health problems among the residents.<sup>195</sup> He further noted that steps were taken to ensure all medical procedures were correctly carried out.<sup>196</sup> While the need for a part-time nurse had been shown, he said the matter would not be pursued at that time.<sup>197</sup>

Formal sex-education was presented by the Health Department with follow-up education carried out by the Housemasters in 1977.<sup>198</sup> There is no information about how and if this was taught in other years.

The Principal reported that 1981 began with a scare when seven boys were admitted to Hospital for overnight observation after sniffing and tasting a poisonous substance while the group were camping on a farm.<sup>199</sup>

## Psychiatric hospital placement

In 1973, 16.25 percent of the total roll was admitted to the Adolescent Unit at Lake Alice Hospital, for periods ranging from four to twenty three weeks, the average length of stay being 11.3 weeks.<sup>200</sup> The length of stay and the number of admissions concerned the Principal, which he thought supported the need for a special institution, such as that planned for France House, Napier.<sup>201</sup>

Holdsworth employed behavioural modification as one of its basic training techniques, and while the Principal commented that it could be remarkably successful with the acting out, delinquent boy, it had little effect with children suffering from intrapsychic maladjustment – neurotic or pre-psychotic states.<sup>202</sup> The Principal felt that being able to transfer such children to an institution geared to meet their needs was long overdue and welcomed the Department's plan to open France House as early as possible.<sup>203</sup>

In 1974 there was a nil return for admissions to psychiatric hospital.<sup>204</sup> The Principal stated that this resulted from a stated policy that 'we would attempt to deal with our

<sup>192</sup> Inspection Report, J A Blair, J M Callon, 20/10/80, visit of 21-24 March 1980, Holdsworth Reports, 32156, p5.

<sup>193</sup> Inspection Report, J A Blair, J M Callon, 20/10/80, visit of 21-24 March 1980, Holdsworth Reports, 32156, p5.

<sup>194</sup> Inspection Report, J A Blair, J M Callon, 20/10/80, visit of 21-24 March 1980, Holdsworth Reports, 32156, p6.

<sup>195</sup> Annual Report 1980, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793, p2.

<sup>196</sup> Annual Report 1980, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793, p2.

<sup>197</sup> Annual Report 1980, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793, p2.

<sup>198</sup> Questionnaire to MP Doolan, Principal, Holdsworth School, 10/08/77, Holdsworth Profile, 5000002388341, p3.

<sup>199</sup> Annual Report 1981, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793, p3.

<sup>200</sup> Annual Report 1973, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793, table VI.

<sup>201</sup> Annual Report 1973, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793, p2.

<sup>202</sup> Annual Report 1973, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793, p2.

<sup>203</sup> Annual Report 1973, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793, p2.

<sup>204</sup> Annual Report 1974, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793, p1.



more disturbed boys within our own setting first, instead of seeking their hospitalisation'.<sup>205</sup> This policy had remarkable results, according to the Principal.<sup>206</sup> A lower roll, and improved staff to child ratio were important factors in the result, but more so was the determination of staff to work closely with the boys to effect the required changes.<sup>207</sup> The Holdsworth policy of refusing to accept irrational behaviours, or limiting acting-out responses, or encouraging and rewarding appropriate behaviours was effective for the majority of boys for whom psychiatric help may once have been sought, according to the Principal.<sup>208</sup>

In an Inspection Report it was noted that 'there have been serious doubts among social workers generally about conditions in the Adolescent Unit at Lake Alice. Control is far from satisfactory and the general feeling is that children are discharged more difficult if not more disturbed than when they were admitted'.<sup>209</sup>

An Inspection Report stated that it was interesting that with adequate staff and a good programme, even extremely disturbed children could be contained in an open institution, like Holdsworth.<sup>210</sup> A valuable side effect, according to the Inspector, was that staff morale appeared to increase as staff grew more competent and were able to demonstrate this confidence in caring for the most difficult children.<sup>211</sup> The Inspector noted however that there were a few boys who were so disturbed that placement at Holdsworth was inappropriate.<sup>212</sup>

## Staffing

### General staffing information

Being a completely open institution adjacent to a busy road and catering for very disturbed small boys, there was a need for good and continuous staff cover according to an Inspection Report.<sup>213</sup>

In 1973 Holdsworth's first Principal, Mr Powierza, left Holdsworth, leaving much of the administrative burden on the shoulders of the Assistant Principal.<sup>214</sup> The following Principal, M P Doolan, who took up his appointment towards the end of 1973, commented that to the Assistant Principal's credit, the Institution continued to operate smoothly despite the stresses and strains placed upon it by staff shortages and the change of Controlling Officer.<sup>215</sup>

In 1973 the number of House Masters was increased by one, to six.<sup>216</sup> Despite this, for much of this year there were chronic staff shortages and the Principal believed that Holdsworth was still understaffed.<sup>217</sup> The Principal noted that it was to the credit

<sup>205</sup> Annual Report 1974, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793, p2.

<sup>206</sup> Annual Report 1974, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793, p2.

<sup>207</sup> Annual Report 1974, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793, p2.

<sup>208</sup> Annual Report 1974, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793, p2.

<sup>209</sup> Inspection Report, R J Wilson, visit of 10-12 March 1975, Holdsworth Reports 32156, p6.

<sup>210</sup> Inspection Report, R J Wilson, visit of 10-12 March 1975, Holdsworth Reports 32156, p7.

<sup>211</sup> Inspection Report, R J Wilson, visit of 10-12 March 1975, Holdsworth Reports 32156, p7.

<sup>212</sup> Inspection Report, R J Wilson, visit of 10-12 March 1975, Holdsworth Reports 32156, p7.

<sup>213</sup> Inspection Report, R J Wilson, visit of 10-12 March 1975, Holdsworth Reports 32156, p1.

<sup>214</sup> Annual Report 1973, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793, p2.

<sup>215</sup> Annual Report 1973, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793, p2.

<sup>216</sup> Annual Report 1973, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793, p2.

<sup>217</sup> Annual Report 1973, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793, p2.

of the staff that life at Holdsworth 'rarely missed a beat'.<sup>218</sup> Apart from school hours, the total responsibility for the control and supervision of up to 60 youngsters fell on the shoulders of two senior officers, six Housemasters, and two General Attendant nightwatchman.<sup>219</sup> The Principal expressed concern that at times, cover was down to two men, and for short periods, one man.<sup>220</sup> He believed that to expect two or three men to adequately supervise the Institution, in the Principal's view, an unreasonable requirement.<sup>221</sup>

In 1973 the Principal expressed regret that Holdsworth did not have a Senior Housemaster and that Housemasters did not have the support of a day-time cover of General Attendants.<sup>222</sup> He remarked that counselling and relationship therapy is the most important role of a Housemaster, and that it too often had to take second place to routine duties a General Attendant could do.<sup>223</sup> He hoped that staffing would be increased to enable Housemasters to work more closely with the boys on their caseloads, and to give them the time they required to develop their professional expertise.<sup>224</sup> The Principal felt the appointment of a third Senior officer was a priority that should not be delayed too much longer.<sup>225</sup>

In 1973 the Principal said that the female staff were invaluable in helping the boys mould acceptable social relationships.<sup>226</sup>

In 1974 there was an increase of two Assistant Housemasters, and a replacement of the sixth Housemaster by a Senior Housemaster.<sup>227</sup> While staff ceiling controls prevented Holdsworth achieving an optimum level of staffing,<sup>228</sup> the extra staff brought the institution to a minimum staffing level.<sup>229</sup> As a result of the extra staff, the staff cover, according to the Principal, was much improved and the timetables improved substantially, although some compromises still existed.<sup>230</sup> In the same year the Principal commented that the determination and enthusiasm of staff to achieve something with the boys produced some very good results.<sup>231</sup>

In 1975 there were 32 staff, and 8 part time staff in arts and crafts capacities.<sup>232</sup>

The Inspector had some reservation in 1975 that the load of administrative duties on the Principal was removing him too far from child care work – as a result of the pressure of work which needed to be done, rather than by inclination.<sup>233</sup> He wanted to see the Principal freed more to take part in the treatment programme.<sup>234</sup>

<sup>218</sup> Annual Report 1973, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793, p2.

<sup>219</sup> Annual Report 1973, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793, p2.

<sup>220</sup> Annual Report 1973, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793, p3.

<sup>221</sup> Annual Report 1973, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793, p3.

<sup>222</sup> Annual Report 1973, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793, p3.

<sup>223</sup> Annual Report 1973, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793, p3.

<sup>224</sup> Annual Report 1973, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793, p4.

<sup>225</sup> Annual Report 1973, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793, p4.

<sup>226</sup> Annual Report 1973, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793, p3.

<sup>227</sup> Annual Report 1974, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793, p3.

<sup>228</sup> Annual Report 1974, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793, p3.

<sup>229</sup> Inspection Report, R J Wilson, visit of 10-12 March 1975, Holdsworth Reports 32156, p1.

<sup>230</sup> Annual Report 1974, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793, p3.

<sup>231</sup> Annual Report 1974, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793, p3.

<sup>232</sup> Information about Holdsworth School for Social Workers 1975, Holdsworth Reports F000001599381, p1.

<sup>233</sup> Inspection Report, R J Wilson, visit of 10-12 March 1975, Holdsworth Reports 32156, p1.

<sup>234</sup> Inspection Report, R J Wilson, visit of 10-12 March 1975, Holdsworth Reports 32156, p1.

At some point when AK McLean was Principal there were a total of 36 staff working at Holdsworth.<sup>235</sup> Nine of them were domestic staff, three were clerical staff, six were teaching staff; there was an instructor and a gardener, and sixteen social work staff.

In 1977 Holdsworth had five Housemasters, carrying a caseload of up to eight inmates, and four Assistant Housemasters, each with a caseload of four inmates.<sup>236</sup> Children were assigned to a Housemaster on arrival, and that Officer was then responsible for case recording and reporting.<sup>237</sup> Formal counselling was not favoured.<sup>238</sup>

In 1978 Mr M Doolan left Holdsworth, after being Principal there for 6 years.<sup>239</sup> He had developed Holdsworth into an extremely efficient and well run institution, according to Mr A K McLean, the Principal who succeeded him.<sup>240</sup>

In 1979 the loss of some very experienced people during the year was offset by the high calibre of Assistant Residential Social Work induction trainees who joined the staff.<sup>241</sup> In the same year, the Principal was unable to complete certain tasks as soon as would normally be expected due to the prolonged delay in having an Assistant Principal take up duties.<sup>242</sup>

In 1979 the past clerical problems cleared with the appointment of a Senior Section Clerk, leading to an efficiently run administrative section entirely independent from the Wanganui District Office.<sup>243</sup>

According to the Principal, 1980 was a very demanding year as there were several staff vacancies.<sup>244</sup> In the 12 months before the Inspection in April 1980 there were three positions (at Residential Social Worker level) which had been vacant, each for four months prior to appointments being made.<sup>245</sup> The Principal's position was also vacant for four months and the Assistant Principal's had only recently been filled after being vacant since January.<sup>246</sup> No positions had had to be frozen up to the time of the Inspectors' visit.<sup>247</sup>

The Principal reported that the high number of admissions during 1980 year placed a great amount of pressure on staff, several of whom were coming to terms with their

<sup>235</sup> Holdsworth Establishment Chart, undated, Holdsworth Staffing, 32156. AK McLean was Principal when it was made, so document was probably produced between 1979 and 1982.

<sup>236</sup> Questionnaire MP Doolan, Principal, Holdsworth School, 10/08/77, Holdsworth Profile, 5000002388341, p4.

<sup>237</sup> Questionnaire MP Doolan, Principal, Holdsworth School, 10/08/77, Holdsworth Profile, 5000002388341, p4.

<sup>238</sup> Questionnaire MP Doolan, Principal, Holdsworth School, 10/08/77, Holdsworth Profile, 5000002388341, p4.

<sup>239</sup> Annual Report 1979, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793, p 1.

<sup>240</sup> Annual Report 1979, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793, p 1.

<sup>241</sup> Annual Report 1979, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793, p2.

<sup>242</sup> Annual Report 1979, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793, p1.

<sup>243</sup> Annual Report 1979, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793, p3.

<sup>244</sup> Annual Report 1980, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793, p1.

<sup>245</sup> Inspection Report, J A Blair, J M Callon, 20/10/80, visit of 21-24 March 1980, Holdsworth Reports, 32156, p1.

<sup>246</sup> Inspection Report, J A Blair, J M Callon, 20/10/80, visit of 21-24 March 1980, Holdsworth Reports, 32156, p1.

<sup>247</sup> Inspection Report, J A Blair, J M Callon, 20/10/80, visit of 21-24 March 1980, Holdsworth Reports, 32156, p1.

new positions.<sup>248</sup> During this year Resident Social Workers carried a caseload of up to eight boys and Assistant Residential Social Workers carried up to four.<sup>249</sup>

When the inspection of Holdsworth took place in 1980 the Principal had been in post for four months (and this was still a provisional appointment) and the Assistant Principal's position was vacant.<sup>250</sup> This situation had meant that the leadership team was not able to function at full strength.<sup>251</sup> Nevertheless, the Inspectors found that throughout Holdsworth there was a co-operative spirit, good morale, and a happy atmosphere.<sup>252</sup> The Principal and Head Teacher were, according to the Inspectors, receiving excellent support from the staff.<sup>253</sup> The Principal complemented the calibre of staff who had been placed at Holdsworth after induction training at the Residential Social Workers Training School (RSTS).<sup>254</sup>

In 1981 the Principal commented that despite the anxiety amongst staff as the full implications of the proposed closure of Holdsworth were realised, there was a marked increase in staff performances overall.<sup>255</sup> Staffing (apart from the teaching staff) remained very stable, according to the Principal, but Holdsworth was without both Senior Residential Social Workers for a considerable period while they were on leave.<sup>256</sup>

Many staff were interested in seeking positions in the planned ten bed units.<sup>257</sup>

In 1981 the Director-General reported that the department was fully appreciative of the disruption.<sup>258</sup> The Principal stated that from the staff's viewpoint, it would have been better for Holdsworth to have closed within six months or a year, as the past two years, in his opinion had been a painful, slow demise.<sup>259</sup>

### Individual Staff Members

Section 29(1)(a) Privacy Act 1993- Affairs of Another

In [REDACTED] the Inspector described the Assistant Principal [REDACTED] as an officer of lengthy practical experience, newly promoted to grade 322.124, loyal and hard working, but who unfortunately displayed a 'negative approach to his duties'.<sup>260</sup> The Inspector reported that [REDACTED] was still very concerned about the incident two years ago in which his behaviour and attitude towards the boys in the institution were severely questioned.<sup>261</sup> No further information about this incident is in the Holdsworth files.

Section 29(1)(a) Privacy Act 1993- Affairs of Another

<sup>248</sup> Annual Report 1980, Holdsworth School Reports, F5000006406793, p1.

<sup>249</sup> Inspection Report, J A Blair, J M Callon, 20/10/80, visit of 21-24 March 1980, Holdsworth Reports, 32156, p2.

<sup>250</sup> Inspection Report, J A Blair, J M Callon, 20/10/80, visit of 21-24 March 1980, Holdsworth Reports, 32156.

<sup>251</sup> Inspection Report, J A Blair, J M Callon, 20/10/80, visit of 21-24 March 1980, Holdsworth Reports, 32156, p1.

<sup>252</sup> Inspection Report, J A Blair, J M Callon, 20/10/80, visit of 21-24 March 1980, Holdsworth Reports, 32156, p1.

<sup>253</sup> Inspection Report, J A Blair, J M Callon, 20/10/80, visit of 21-24 March 1980, Holdsworth Reports, 32156, p8.

<sup>254</sup> Annual Report 1980, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793, p2.

<sup>255</sup> Annual Report 1981, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793, p1.

<sup>256</sup> Annual Report 1981, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793, p2.

<sup>257</sup> Annual Report 1980, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793, p3.

<sup>258</sup> Circular Memorandum, SJ Callaghan, Director General to Department of Social Welfare, Head Office, 1981/9, 03/02/81, Holdsworth Profile, 5000003267103, p2.

<sup>259</sup> Annual Report 1982, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793, p1.

<sup>260</sup> Inspection Report, R J Wilson, visit of 10-12 March [REDACTED] Holdsworth Reports 32156, p1.

<sup>261</sup> Inspection Report, R J Wilson, visit of 10-12 March [REDACTED] Holdsworth Reports 32156, p1.

Section 29(1)(a) Privacy Act 1993- Affairs of Another

According to the Inspector [REDACTED] claimed that he now kept his distance from the boys, and that this affected his work and job satisfaction.<sup>262</sup> He further reported that [REDACTED] was insecure in his position, and was reconciled to having received his 'last' promotion.<sup>263</sup>

Section 29(1)(a) Privacy Act 1993- Affairs of Another

### Management Practices

In 1978 the Head Teacher reported that policy for Holdsworth was ultimately determined locally by the Principal after consultation with his senior staff, including the Head Teacher.<sup>264</sup>

In 1978 written reports were submitted to the Principal every four months during a boy's residence.<sup>265</sup> During the same year the Principal attended the weekly teachers' staff meeting, chaired by the Head Teacher.<sup>266</sup> The Head Teacher attended the weekly Senior Staff meeting chaired by the Principal.<sup>267</sup> Every teacher met with the Principal and his staff early in the term to discuss proposals for discharging boys at the end, or during, the current term.<sup>268</sup> Written reports were submitted by teachers.<sup>269</sup> Towards the end of the term every teacher met with the Principal and his staff to review the progress of each boy in his or her class.<sup>270</sup>

In 1980 the Inspectors reported that regular weekly staff meetings were held with the Principal and all house staff, and a weekly newsletter was available after these meetings.<sup>271</sup> Additionally, that weekly conferences were held (in which all staff on duty participated) to review each boy's progress and to consider the most appropriate privilege group.<sup>272</sup> This time was also available for raising any matters of concern to staff.<sup>273</sup> While each boy was assigned their own social worker, there was also a team approach to casework.<sup>274</sup>

In 1980 the Inspectors commented that a perusal of files indicated a wide variation in the adequacy of case recording, in some instances a lengthy delay in the formulation of case work plans on paper.<sup>275</sup> The Inspectors commented that this problem was perennial but that the Principal felt improvements were being made.<sup>276</sup>

<sup>262</sup> Inspection Report, R J Wilson, visit of 10-12 March [REDACTED] Holdsworth Reports 32156, p2.

<sup>263</sup> Inspection Report, R J Wilson, visit of 10-12 March [REDACTED] Holdsworth Reports 32156, p2.

<sup>265</sup> Notes supplied by Head Teacher for visit of L Silcock 12/04/78, Holdsworth Profile 2006/982, p4.

<sup>266</sup> Notes supplied by Head Teacher for visit of L Silcock 12/04/78, Holdsworth Profile 2006/982, p4.

<sup>267</sup> Notes supplied by Head Teacher for visit of L Silcock 12/04/78, Holdsworth Profile 2006/982, p4.

<sup>268</sup> Notes supplied by Head Teacher for visit of L Silcock 12/04/78, Holdsworth Profile 2006/982, p4.

<sup>269</sup> Notes supplied by Head Teacher for visit of L Silcock 12/04/78, Holdsworth Profile 2006/982, p4.

<sup>270</sup> Notes supplied by Head Teacher for visit of L Silcock 12/04/78, Holdsworth Profile 2006/982, p4.  
<sup>271</sup> Inspection Report, J A Blair, J M Callon, 20/10/80, visit of 21-24 March 1980, Holdsworth Reports, 32156, p4.

<sup>272</sup> Inspection Report, J A Blair, J M Callon, 20/10/80, visit of 21-24 March 1980, Holdsworth Reports, 32156, p2.

<sup>273</sup> Inspection Report, J A Blair, J M Callon, 20/10/80, visit of 21-24 March 1980, Holdsworth Reports, 32156, p2.

<sup>274</sup> Inspection Report, J A Blair, J M Callon, 20/10/80, visit of 21-24 March 1980, Holdsworth Reports, 32156, p2.

<sup>275</sup> Inspection Report, J A Blair, J M Callon, 20/10/80, visit of 21-24 March 1980, Holdsworth Reports, 32156, p2.

<sup>276</sup> Inspection Report, J A Blair, J M Callon, 20/10/80, visit of 21-24 March 1980, Holdsworth Reports, 32156, p2.

In the same year the Inspectors commented that the area of casework supervision was improving and that the Principal would like to see further improvement.<sup>277</sup> One of the major difficulties, according to the inspectors, was to make supervision a regular and frequent event when rosters made this difficult.<sup>278</sup>

## Training

There is little mention of staff training in the Holdsworth files.

In 1980 the responsibility for staff training rested with the Assistant Principal, and with no one having been in that position for some time, there had, according to the Inspectors, been little emphasis on training during the year to the time of their visit.<sup>279</sup> The Principal reported that many staff were able to attend various training courses during this year.<sup>280</sup> The Inspectors were pleased to see that a number of staff were undertaking extra-mural study at Massey University.<sup>281</sup>

## Manuals

In 1980 copies of the Residential Social Workers Manual were held by the Principal, Assistant Principal, the two Senior Residential Social Workers, the Residential Social Workers, and with the clerical section.<sup>282</sup> The Assistant Residential Social Workers had ready access to the manuals.<sup>283</sup> There were a limited number of copies of the Holdsworth Staff Manual available, and the Inspectors noted that this was in need of updating.<sup>284</sup> According to the Inspectors, this would be one of the Assistant Principal's earliest priorities.<sup>285</sup>

## Rosters

Between 1973 and 1980 there were some issues surrounding staff rosters. Under the staffing provision that existed in 1973, the Housemaster's roster could only give little consideration to the conditions of work of the staff.<sup>286</sup> Housemasters worked split shifts, and worked especially long days on the weekend.<sup>287</sup>

In 1974, as a result of extra staff, the staff cover, according to the Principal, was much improved and the timetables improved substantially, although some compromises still existed.<sup>288</sup>

<sup>277</sup> Inspection Report, J A Blair, J M Callon, 20/10/80, visit of 21-24 March 1980, Holdsworth Reports, 32156, p2.

<sup>278</sup> Inspection Report, J A Blair, J M Callon, 20/10/80, visit of 21-24 March 1980, Holdsworth Reports, 32156, p2.

<sup>279</sup> Inspection Report, J A Blair, J M Callon, 20/10/80, visit of 21-24 March 1980, Holdsworth Reports, 32156, p3.

<sup>280</sup> Annual Report 1980, Holdsworth School Reports F5000006406793, p3.

<sup>281</sup> Inspection Report, J A Blair, J M Callon, 20/10/80, visit of 21-24 March 1980, Holdsworth Reports, 32156, p3.

<sup>282</sup> Inspection Report, J A Blair, J M Callon, 20/10/80, visit of 21-24 March 1980, Holdsworth Reports, 32156, p4.

<sup>283</sup> Inspection Report, J A Blair, J M Callon, 20/10/80, visit of 21-24 March 1980, Holdsworth Reports, 32156, p4.

<sup>284</sup> Inspection Report, J A Blair, J M Callon, 20/10/80, visit of 21-24 March 1980, Holdsworth Reports, 32156, p4.

<sup>285</sup> Inspection Report, J A Blair, J M Callon, 20/10/80, visit of 21-24 March 1980, Holdsworth Reports, 32156, p4.

<sup>286</sup> Annual Report 1973, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793, p3.

<sup>287</sup> Annual Report 1973, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793, p3.

<sup>288</sup> Annual Report 1974, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793, p3.

In 1979 the Principal was very concerned with the 4 weekly Residential Social Worker roster, and complemented the staff on their patience with the lack of progress made in remedying the matter.<sup>289</sup>

In 1980 the Inspectors reported that there were still problems with the timetables at Holdsworth, particularly in the area of the Resident Social Worker's working on a four weekly cyclic roster.<sup>290</sup>

In 1980 the Principal reported that burning issues such as a non-rostered Assistant Principal and three week rosters for Resident Social Workers were not being pushed due to Holdsworth's "phasing down" in 1982.<sup>291</sup>

## Schooling

Holdsworth's residential school for junior boys opened in February 1971.<sup>292</sup> The school was to be administered as a Child Welfare Division institution under the same policies and procedures that applied to the four other long-stay institutions.<sup>293</sup> Thus, the Education Department's responsibilities were limited to the provision of teaching staff and classroom equipment. At its planned maximum enrolment, Holdsworth was to have five teachers for 60 pupils.<sup>294</sup>

All boys attended full-time school at Holdsworth's school.<sup>295</sup> Special emphasis was placed on reading and the acquisition of social skills.<sup>296</sup>

## Staffing

From the time the school started at the beginning of the second term in 1971, until at least October of the same year, the staffing position was extremely difficult.<sup>297</sup> The roll rose quickly to 30, and, 'despite the best efforts of all concerned, have [sic] been unable, except for a period of three days, to maintain a staff greater than two'.<sup>298</sup>

A firm and rising roll of 36 or more pupils in 1971, in the opinion of the Officer for Special Education, justified the appointment of a fourth teacher to maintain the maximum class size of 12 pupils.<sup>299</sup> According to the Officer, the Wanganui District Senior Inspector of Schools recommended the immediate provision of a fourth teacher in view of the staffing difficulties which the school experienced since it

<sup>289</sup> Annual Report 1979, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793, p2.

<sup>290</sup> Inspection Report, J A Blair, J M Callon, 20/10/80, visit of 21-24 March 1980, Holdsworth Reports, 32156, p6.

<sup>291</sup> Annual Report 1980, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793, p2.

<sup>292</sup> Report on Holdsworth School, by GP Craig, Inspector of Schools, 15-16/07/74, Holdsworth Education, 2006/965, p1.

<sup>293</sup> Memo, DH Ross to Mr W Renwick, S.S.S, 14/08/70, Holdsworth Staffing, 2006/977.

<sup>294</sup> Memo DH Ross, Officer for Special Education to A./S.S.S, 26/10/71, Holdsworth Staffing, 2006/965.

<sup>295</sup> Information about Holdsworth School for Social Workers 1975, Holdsworth Reports F000001599381, p3.

<sup>296</sup> Information about Holdsworth School for Social Workers 1975, Holdsworth Reports F000001599381, p3.

<sup>297</sup> Memo JM Wiseley, District Senior Inspector of Schools, to DH Ross, Officer for Special Education, 01/10/71, Holdsworth Staffing, 2006/965.

<sup>298</sup> Memo JM Wiseley, District Senior Inspector of Schools, to DH Ross, Officer for Special Education, 01/10/71, Holdsworth Staffing, 2006/965.

<sup>299</sup> Memo DH Ross, Officer for Special Education to A./S.S.S, 26/10/71, Holdsworth Staffing, 2006/965.

opened in June, and the need to establish more effective teaching programmes as soon as possible.<sup>300</sup>

In 1971 the school had one teacher and two assistant teachers.<sup>301</sup> The District Senior Inspector of Schools asked the Officer for Special Education to consider the possibility of authorising the appointment of one teacher's aide for each teaching position for 15 hours per week.<sup>302</sup> At one point during this year a teacher was seconded to act in a relieving position temporarily and an assistant teacher went on sick leave, meaning one teacher was responsible for 20 of the boys for a long period without any prospect of relief.<sup>303</sup>

By July 1972 the roll was expected to have reached 55.<sup>304</sup> There was one teacher and three assistant teachers.<sup>305</sup> The District Senior Inspector requested the establishment of a position for a fourth assistant teacher, and the Officer for Special Education believed the teacher should be provided as soon as possible.<sup>306</sup> The appointment of a fifth teacher would, according to the Officer for Special Education, require the provision of an additional classroom. The Department of Social Welfare had included the classroom in its building programme, temporary accommodation was available in the school hall.<sup>307</sup>

In 1972 there was a request made by the Director General of Social Welfare to the Director General of the Department of Education that erection of an additional classroom be erected as soon as possible.<sup>308</sup> This request arose from the fact that the appointment of a fifth teacher was approved with effect from the beginning of the third term.<sup>309</sup> The Director General stated that the school's roll was to increase from approximately 48 to 60 as soon as the alterations were completed.<sup>310</sup>

1973 was the first year that a full allocation of five teachers was scheduled.<sup>311</sup> The Principal in 1973 stated that teachers had the difficult task of coping with classes of boys of very different levels of abilities and attainments, and the constantly changing roll.<sup>312</sup> The intelligence range of boys was similar to that found in most schools, but naturally the performance level was academically low, with a few exceptions.<sup>313</sup> The classes never exceeded 10 pupils per teacher because even when the Institution had its full complement of resident, those attending outside schools and those in

<sup>300</sup> Memo DH Ross, Officer for Special Education to A./S.S.S, 26/10/71, Holdsworth Staffing, 2006/965.

<sup>301</sup> Memo DH Ross, Officer for Special Education to A./S.S.S, 26/10/71, Holdsworth Staffing, 2006/965.

<sup>302</sup> Memo JM Wiseley, District Senior Inspector of Schools, to DH Ross, Officer for Special Education, 01/10/71, Holdsworth Staffing, 2006/965.

<sup>303</sup> Memo JM Wiseley, District Senior Inspector of Schools, to DH Ross, Officer for Special Education, 01/10/71, Holdsworth Staffing, 2006/965.

<sup>304</sup> Memo, DH Ross, Officer for Special Education to Superintendent, Special Services, 29/05/72, Holdsworth Staffing, 2006/965.

<sup>305</sup> Memo, DH Ross, Officer for Special Education to Superintendent, Special Services, 29/05/72, Holdsworth Staffing, 2006/965.

<sup>306</sup> Memo, DH Ross, Officer for Special Education to Superintendent, Special Services, 29/05/72, Holdsworth Staffing, 2006/965.

<sup>307</sup> Memo, DH Ross, Officer for Special Education to Superintendent, Special Services, 29/05/72, Holdsworth Staffing, 2006/965.

<sup>308</sup> IG MacArthur, for Director-General of Department of Social Welfare to The Director-General of Department of Education, 15/06/72, Holdsworth Profile, 2006/978.

<sup>309</sup> IG MacArthur, for Director-General of Department of Social Welfare to The Director-General of Department of Education, 15/06/72, Holdsworth Profile, 2006/978.

<sup>310</sup> IG MacArthur, for Director-General of Department of Social Welfare to The Director-General of Department of Education, 15/06/72, Holdsworth Profile, 2006/978.

<sup>311</sup> Annual Report 1973, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793.

<sup>312</sup> Annual Report 1973, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793, p4.

<sup>313</sup> Annual Report 1973, Holdsworth Reports, Report about the School, F5000006406793.



Hospital kept the roll below 50 boys within the school at any one time.<sup>314</sup> The proportion of disturbed children in classes was high.<sup>315</sup>

In 1973 the practice of sending selected boys to schools in the community as a stepping stone to discharge continued, with pleasing results.<sup>316</sup> Only boys who achieved a certain behavioural standard were considered for outside schooling, with no more than six going at one time.<sup>317</sup> This practice continued in 1974.

In 1973 programmes of work designed to provide social experiences and opportunities to re-adjust to acceptable social behavioural patterns were put into practice.<sup>318</sup> The teaching staff developed a curriculum specific to the needs of Holdsworth boys, with the assistance of the Inspector of Schools.<sup>319</sup> The School programme continued to be supplemented by the work of a number of part-time aides and instructors.<sup>320</sup>

The level of reading competence gave concern and received major attention in 1973.<sup>321</sup> Reading Adviser to the Wanganui District gave assistance in planning remedial practice, much of which was supplemented by voluntary helpers.<sup>322</sup> In 1974 particular emphasis was placed on reading skills, efficiency and enjoyment.<sup>323</sup>

According to the Inspector, in 1974 the school was functioning smoothly and efficiently, the boys were well behaved and industrious in their studies – which he considered to be a significant improvement on previous years, which he credited to the staff.<sup>324</sup>

In 1974 the Principal commented that the stimulation and satisfaction boys were getting from their schooling at Holdsworth was evidenced by their keenness to attend classes and the success they were enjoying there.<sup>325</sup> In July of this year the school underwent its first three-yearly inspection by the Department of Education, and received an encouraging report.<sup>326</sup>

The Inspector commented that by 1974 early problems associated with the recruitment and retention of staff had been largely overcome.<sup>327</sup> A temporary drop in roll numbers permitted a reorganisation of staffing.<sup>328</sup> This enabled the Principal to be freed of a regular class.<sup>329</sup> The Inspector attributed the improved performance of the School to the flexibility gained from this.<sup>330</sup>

<sup>314</sup> Annual Report 1973, Holdsworth Reports, Report about the School, F5000006406793.

<sup>315</sup> Annual Report 1973, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793, p4.

<sup>316</sup> Annual Report 1973, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793, p4.

<sup>317</sup> Annual Report 1973, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793, p4.

<sup>318</sup> Annual Report 1973, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793.

<sup>319</sup> Annual Report 1973, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793, p4.

<sup>320</sup> Annual Report 1973, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793, p4.

<sup>321</sup> Annual Report 1973, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793.

<sup>322</sup> Annual Report 1973, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793.

<sup>323</sup> Annual Report 1974, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793, p1.

<sup>324</sup> Report on Holdsworth School, by GP Craig, Inspector of Schools, 15-16/07/74, Holdsworth Education, 2006/965, p1.

<sup>325</sup> Annual Report 1974, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793, p1.

<sup>326</sup> Annual Report 1974, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793, p1.

<sup>327</sup> Report on Holdsworth School, by GP Craig, Inspector of Schools, 15-16/07/74, Holdsworth Education, 2006/965, p1.

<sup>328</sup> Report on Holdsworth School, by GP Craig, Inspector of Schools, 15-16/07/74, Holdsworth Education, 2006/965, p2.

<sup>329</sup> Report on Holdsworth School, GP Craig, Inspector of Schools, 15-16/07/74, Holdsworth Education, 2006/965, p2. Inspection Report, R J Wilson, visit of 10-12 March 1975, Holdsworth Reports 32156, p6.

<sup>330</sup> Report on Holdsworth School, by GP Craig, Inspector of Schools, 15-16/07/74, Holdsworth Education, 2006/965, p3.

The Senior Teacher was able to timetable himself out of taking a class, and was available for the greater part of the year as a back up to and a resource person for the other teachers.<sup>331</sup> He also undertook remedial work with individual children, and the assessment and classification of new admissions.<sup>332</sup> The changes in the atmosphere and productivity of the school were notable, according to the Principal.<sup>333</sup>

In October 1974 GP Craig, in the name of District Senior Inspector of Schools noted that over the past four months a temporary drop in roll numbers has made it possible to organise staffing so that the Principal was freed of a permanent class. This reportedly enabled him to ensure close back-up support for his staff, arrange and provide individual tuition for children with special needs, and ensure that smooth, controlled early training routines were provided for new entrant boys. The District Senior Inspector requested permission from the Superintendent of the Department of Education to employ an additional staff member when the roll rose above 40, to enable this arrangement to continue.<sup>334</sup>

There was a move afoot to lower the teacher/pupil ration in Social Welfare schools from 1:12 to 1:8 in 1974.<sup>335</sup> While the Principal supported this move fully, the four teachers were prepared to take larger class numbers if it would preserve the Senior Teacher's freedom and availability to them.<sup>336</sup> It seemed to the Principal that the teachers gained as much or more from the availability of a professional superior, than from smaller classes.<sup>337</sup>

Four permanent teachers from the previous year returned in 1974 and were joined by another teacher.<sup>338</sup> One staff member continued to provide information and instruction in Maori studies for five hours per week.<sup>339</sup> According to the Principal, high quality relievers were available to supplement the permanent staff and good professional oversight was operated by the Inspector of School.<sup>340</sup> Ancillary Assistance amounting to 15 hours per week had just been announced by the Education Department and an appointment was soon to be made for Teachers Aide and Clerical Assistance.<sup>341</sup> As evidenced by the first tri-ennial Inspection report from the Department of Education, teachers were working diligently and providing much satisfaction for themselves and their pupils.<sup>342</sup>

In 1974 the Inspector commented that urgent attention be focused on what subjects should constitute the curriculum, the timetable, work planning and the work programme.<sup>343</sup> He suggested that more space be given to cultural subjects and less to spelling and handwriting.<sup>344</sup> The Inspector also suggested that as room

<sup>331</sup> Annual Report 1974, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793, p2.

<sup>332</sup> Annual Report 1974, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793, p2.

<sup>333</sup> Annual Report 1974, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793, p2.

<sup>334</sup> Letter, GP Craig, for District Senior Inspector of Schools to The Regional Superintendent, Department of Education, 07/10/74, Holdsworth Staffing, 2006/965.

<sup>335</sup> Annual Report 1974, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793, p2.

<sup>336</sup> Annual Report 1974, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793, p3.

<sup>337</sup> Annual Report 1974, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793, p3.

<sup>338</sup> Annual Report 1974, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793.

<sup>339</sup> Annual Report 1974, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793.

<sup>340</sup> Annual Report 1974, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793, p3.

<sup>341</sup> Annual Report 1974, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793.

<sup>342</sup> Annual Report 1974, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793.

<sup>343</sup> Report on Holdsworth School, by GP Craig, Inspector of Schools, 15-16/07/74, Holdsworth Education, 2006/965.

<sup>344</sup> Report on Holdsworth School, by GP Craig, Inspector of Schools, 15-16/07/74, Holdsworth Education, 2006/965.

management factors were no longer a problem, thought be given to tailoring individual programmes for children in the same way as it was in the reading field.<sup>345</sup>

The programmes of work were generally satisfactory in the Inspector's opinion.<sup>346</sup> The Inspector considered that a feature of the school programme was the number of educational visits made by all classes.<sup>347</sup> According to the Inspector, since the maintenance of discipline was no longer a problem, experimental programmes had been introduced with some success, including a Maori language and culture study and a manual arts programme.<sup>348</sup> The Inspector noted that the classrooms gave little scope for the mounting of more imaginative therapeutic programmes. He also felt that a manual arts workshop needed to be built.<sup>349</sup>

Progress was made to implement programmes of music, health, science and citizenship.<sup>350</sup> The programmes were carefully designed to meet the needs and maintain the interests of the boys thus making school a place to which the boys willingly moved.<sup>351</sup> There was virtually no temporary absenteeism from classes during the year.<sup>352</sup>

In 1974 a Maoritanga week was held, encompassing aspects of Maori life and Culture.<sup>353</sup> There was a camp in which 18 boys, three teachers and two Social Welfare staff members spent a week in an outdoor education environment in the Tongariro National Park area.<sup>354</sup> The boys were selected from those expected to return to the school in February 1975.<sup>355</sup> The Department of Social Welfare, was at the last minute unable to finance the cost of transport. This was met by charitable donations from a private benefactor and a local Service Club.<sup>356</sup> It was hoped that the camp experiences would be fully utilised in classroom activities next year.<sup>357</sup>

In 1974 the Inspector suggested some matters requiring attention in relation to the physical state of the classroom and its resources.<sup>358</sup>

In 1975 the School's philosophy was educative rather than instructional, and academic competition was eliminated.<sup>359</sup> Activities such as craft work, cooking, Maori language and culture continued to be in the school programme.<sup>360</sup> The Inspector spent some time in the school area and was impressed with what was

<sup>345</sup> Report on Holdsworth School, by GP Craig, Inspector of Schools, 15-16/07/74, Holdsworth Education, 2006/965, p1.

<sup>346</sup> Report on Holdsworth School, by GP Craig, Inspector of Schools, 15-16/07/74, Holdsworth Education, 2006/965, p1.

<sup>347</sup> Report on Holdsworth School, by GP Craig, Inspector of Schools, 15-16/07/74, Holdsworth Education, 2006/965, p2.

<sup>348</sup> Report on Holdsworth School, by GP Craig, Inspector of Schools, 15-16/07/74, Holdsworth Education, 2006/965, p2.

<sup>349</sup> Report on Holdsworth School, by GP Craig, Inspector of Schools, 15-16/07/74, Holdsworth Education, 2006/965, p1.

<sup>350</sup> Annual Report 1974, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793, p 1.

<sup>351</sup> Annual Report 1974, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793, p1.

<sup>352</sup> Annual Report 1974, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793, p1.

<sup>353</sup> Annual Report 1974, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793, p2.

<sup>354</sup> Annual Report 1974, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793, p2..

<sup>355</sup> Annual Report 1974, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793, p2.

<sup>356</sup> Annual Report 1974, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793, p2.

<sup>357</sup> Annual Report 1974, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793, p2..

<sup>358</sup> Report on Holdsworth School, by GP Craig, Inspector of Schools, 15-16/07/74, Holdsworth Education, 2006/965, p2.

<sup>359</sup> Information about Holdsworth School for Social Workers 1975, Holdsworth Reports F000001599381, p3.

<sup>360</sup> Information about Holdsworth School for Social Workers 1975, Holdsworth Reports, F000001599381, p3.

happening.<sup>361</sup> The Senior Teacher commented that the boys' attitudes towards school, to specific programmes of work, and to teaching staff and fellow pupils, had never been better in his three years at the school.<sup>362</sup>

The establishment of an assessment and reception class for all new entrants enabled class teachers to have uninterrupted stability in their class rolls each term.<sup>363</sup> It also enabled the Senior Teacher to become more closely acquainted with the needs and abilities of each new admission.<sup>364</sup> The new concept of creating an 'accelerate' class for boys who showed a better than usual academic interest and promise, proved very valuable.<sup>365</sup> A science programme and an inter-class weekly spelling programme were introduced.<sup>366</sup> The architectural brief for the new classroom block was completed in this year.<sup>367</sup>

The 1976 year began with a staff of one permanent teacher, one part-time teacher, two ancillary helpers, and four relieving teachers.<sup>368</sup> Two permanent teachers were appointed later in the year. Teacher aides were used to provide one-to-one remedial work with many of the pupils who were severely educationally retarded.<sup>369</sup> The Senior Teacher spoke highly of the calibre of the staff.<sup>370</sup>

The Senior Teacher applied to the Principal to have at least one more Scale A teacher appointed as soon as possible.<sup>371</sup> Due to representations by local Education Department Inspectors, an extra full-time teacher was to be appointed in 1977.<sup>372</sup>

In 1976 the Principal felt the responsibility he had for a class denied him opportunities to work with children individually and in small groups, and with staff members.<sup>373</sup> The Inspector Supervising Special Education believed more 'release' time for the Principal was desirable.<sup>374</sup>

In 1976 boys had a positive attitude towards their schooling.<sup>375</sup> They learned that which would be expected in any day school for boys of this age, according to the Principal – for example, maths, science, social studies, music and art.<sup>376</sup> They were also taught to develop social graces, personal realisation, and development.<sup>377</sup> The Principal regretted that the Youth Aid Section of the Police Force had not been invited to participate in the programme this year.<sup>378</sup>

<sup>361</sup> Inspection Report, R J Wilson, visit of 10-12 March 1975, Holdsworth Reports 32156, p5.

<sup>362</sup> Annual Report 1975, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793.

<sup>363</sup> Annual Report 1975, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793.

<sup>364</sup> Annual Report 1975, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793.

<sup>365</sup> Annual Report 1975, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793.

<sup>366</sup> Annual Report 1975, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793.

<sup>367</sup> PJ Morgan, for Director-General of Education, to Director-General, Department of Social Welfare, undated, Holdsworth Reports, 2006/965.

<sup>368</sup> Annual Report 1976, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793.

<sup>369</sup> Memo, RJ Taylor, Senior Teacher in Charge, Holdsworth School to Principal, Holdsworth School 02/08/76, Holdsworth Staffing, p.1.

<sup>370</sup> Annual Report 1976, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793.

<sup>371</sup> Memo, RJ Taylor, Senior Teacher in Charge, Holdsworth School to Principal, Holdsworth School 02/08/76, Holdsworth Staffing, p.1.

<sup>372</sup> Annual Report 1976, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793.

<sup>373</sup> Memo, G W Bowers, Inspector Supervising Special Education to A Bruce, Director of Primary Education, 21/09/76, Holdsworth Staffing, p1,

<sup>374</sup> Memo, G W Bowers, Inspector Supervising Special Education to A Bruce, Director of Primary Education, 21/09/76, Holdsworth Staffing, p1,

<sup>375</sup> Annual Report 1976, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793.

<sup>376</sup> Annual Report 1976, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793.

<sup>377</sup> Annual Report 1976, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793.

<sup>378</sup> Annual Report 1976, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793, p2.

In 1977 the school continued to operate very successfully in what the Principal described as very antiquated and inadequate facilities.<sup>379</sup> There were five classrooms, six teachers and two part time aides in 1977.<sup>380</sup> A retired teacher volunteer gave 5 hours weekly of remedial tuition.<sup>381</sup> This year was the first year since Holdsworth School's establishment of full permanent staffing.<sup>382</sup> The extra full time teacher appointed made it possible for the Head Teacher to be free from full-time class teaching, to assist and guide other staff, and to do considerable remedial work.<sup>383</sup>

Classes were no larger than 12 boys.<sup>384</sup> According to the Head Teacher, skilful planning of programmes and dedication from teachers ensured considerable progress in most boys' educational achievements.<sup>385</sup>

In 1977 regular manual training was undertaken off site - <sup>386</sup> a new innovation.<sup>387</sup> That same year concern was expressed about the physical condition of the classrooms<sup>388</sup> The library was relocated to a more suitable premises, which met the growing demand for books from boys and staff,<sup>389</sup> it was redecorated and new books were donated.<sup>390</sup>

In 1977, Holdsworth Herald was published at the end of each term.<sup>391</sup> It was a school effort to produce it, and reflected classroom, rather than home, events.<sup>392</sup>

In 1978 the official ratio of staff to students was one to twelve, and the roll maximum was 60 boys.<sup>393</sup> There were five teachers, and a discretionary special needs teacher.<sup>394</sup> The level of students in the school ranged from standard two to form four.<sup>395</sup> Most students were in either form two or form three.<sup>396</sup>

In 1978 the buildings were largely the responsibility of the Department of Social Welfare.<sup>397</sup> No specific budget of funds was made available to the school from the Department of Education.<sup>398</sup>

In October 1978 Holdsworth School had 56 pupils with five permanent teachers, and an additional teacher.<sup>399</sup> The additional teacher gave flexibility to the teaching

<sup>379</sup> Annual Report 1977, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793.

<sup>380</sup> Questionnaire to MP Doolan, Principal, Holdsworth School, 10/08/77, Holdsworth Profile, 5000002388341, p2.

<sup>381</sup> Annual Report 1977, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793.

<sup>382</sup> Annual Report 1977, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793.

<sup>383</sup> Annual Report 1977, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793.

<sup>384</sup> Questionnaire to MP Doolan, Principal, Holdsworth School, 10/08/77, Holdsworth Profile, 5000002388341, p2.

<sup>385</sup> Annual Report 1977, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793.

<sup>386</sup> Annual Report 1977, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793.

<sup>387</sup> Annual Report 1977, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793.

<sup>388</sup> Annual Report 1977, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793, p 1.

<sup>389</sup> Annual Report 1977, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793.

<sup>390</sup> Annual Report 1977, Holdsworth F5000006406793.

<sup>391</sup> Questionnaire to MP Doolan, Principal, Holdsworth School, 10/08/77, Holdsworth Profile, 5000002388341, p2.

<sup>392</sup> Questionnaire to MP Doolan, Principal, Holdsworth School, 10/08/77, Holdsworth Profile, 5000002388341.

<sup>393</sup> Notes supplied by Head Teacher for visit of L Silcock 12/04/78, Holdsworth Profile, 2006/982, p1.

<sup>394</sup> Notes supplied by Head Teacher for visit of L Silcock 12/04/78, Holdsworth Profile, 2006/982, p1.

<sup>395</sup> Notes supplied by Head Teacher for visit of L Silcock 12/04/78, Holdsworth Profile, 2006/982, p1.

<sup>396</sup> Notes supplied by Head Teacher for visit of L Silcock 12/04/78, Holdsworth Profile, 2006/982, p1.

<sup>397</sup> Notes supplied by Head Teacher for visit of L Silcock 12/04/78, Holdsworth Profile, 2006/982, p2.

<sup>398</sup> Notes supplied by Head Teacher for visit of L Silcock 12/04/78, Holdsworth Profile, 2006/982, p3.

programmes, enabling the Principal and the Senior Teacher provide more intensive assistance and guidance for the teachers and to work more closely with boys who had remedial and emotional needs.

In 1979 the allocation of six full-time staff plus some ancillary weekly help was maintained.<sup>400</sup> A remedial teacher was employed on a fee for service basis.<sup>401</sup> During this year few classes reached their maximum roll numbers and the experience emphasised the benefits of lower teacher to pupil ratios.<sup>402</sup> The Head Teacher felt efforts should be made to have the nominal ratio of 1 to 8 implemented as soon as possible.

The Head Teacher commented that further progress was made in lifting the individual standards of reading – achieved by his personal attention being provided for boys in need of encouragement and re-assurance.<sup>403</sup> He considered that an important feature of 1979 was the refinement of the exchange programme, whereby, on a roster system, each class visited a different room for the first hour of the afternoon when teachers had specialised in chosen fields of activity.<sup>404</sup> This culminated in a display of work in the library, visited and acclaimed by staff, families, invited guests and local schools.<sup>405</sup>

The Head Teacher commented in 1979 that wherever possible, teachers were released to attend in-service training courses.<sup>406</sup> The Head Teacher expressed his sadness that the bi-ennial course at Kohitere in May was restricted so that only two Holdsworth teachers were eligible to attend.<sup>407</sup>

During 1980, the Education Department made its tri-ennial inspection of the school and presented a favourable report.<sup>408</sup>

In 1980 the Inspectors from the Social Work Inspection commented that with all boys being of school age, the training programme revolved largely around the school day.<sup>409</sup> With fewer boys in residence (around 40 compared with the capacity of 60) the Head Teacher reported to the Inspectors that the class teacher's job was more manageable.<sup>410</sup> The Head Teacher commented that the Department of Education had ensured that all necessary teaching equipment was available.<sup>411</sup>

There were five class teachers, and the Head Teacher's position was a non-teaching one.<sup>412</sup> The 1980 Inspection Report stated that each boy spent the first day or two

---

<sup>399</sup> Letter, LM Robinson, Inspector Supervising Special Education to Director (Special & Advisory), Department of Education, 02/10/78, Holdsworth Staffing, 2006/965.

<sup>400</sup> Annual Report 1979, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793.

<sup>401</sup> Annual Report 1979, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793, p 2

<sup>402</sup> Annual Report 1979, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793.

<sup>403</sup> Annual Report 1979, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793.

<sup>404</sup> Annual Report 1979, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793.

<sup>405</sup> Annual Report 1979, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793.

<sup>406</sup> Annual Report 1979, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793.

<sup>407</sup> Annual Report 1979, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793.

<sup>408</sup> Annual Report 1980, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793.

<sup>409</sup> Inspection Report, J A Blair, J M Callon, 20/10/80, visit of 21-24 March 1980, Holdsworth Reports, 32156, p2.

<sup>410</sup> Inspection Report, J A Blair, J M Callon, 20/10/80, visit of 21-24 March 1980, Holdsworth Reports, 32156, p2. – Note: A visitor to Holdsworth was told in 1980 that the present capacity was actually 56, and for the first time in two or three years that would be reached that day – Handwritten note the same page by B Manchester 19/11/80.

<sup>411</sup> Annual Report 1980, Holdsworth School Reports, F5000006406793.

<sup>412</sup> Inspection Report, J A Blair, J M Callon, 20/10/80, visit of 21-24 March 1980, Holdsworth Reports, 32156, p2.

with the Head Teacher who assessed the boy's ability and selected an appropriate class and teacher.<sup>413</sup> The inspectors observed that the Head Teacher got copies of all admission papers, psychological reports and the like, making this a simpler task.<sup>414</sup>

The boys had a home-room programme each morning with their own teacher and each afternoon went to a different teacher for a variety of special subjects.<sup>415</sup> According to the Inspectors, this organisation of the school day proved beneficial for staff and boys.<sup>416</sup>

In 1980 the system whereby selected boys attended a local school for the last term of their training was re-introduced and was highly successful, according to the Head Teacher<sup>417</sup> and the Principal.<sup>418</sup>

During 1980 the students put on a play.<sup>419</sup> Outdoor education programmes, planned and run jointly by Residential Social Workers and teachers at three different locations enhanced the programme presented to the pupils, in the Head Teacher's opinion.

In 1981 the Department of Social Welfare confirmed to the Department of Education that the school was planned to close at the end of 1982.<sup>420</sup>

In December 1981 the visiting Review Committee from Social Welfare and Education Departments visited with a view to establishing the state of schooling for boys at Holdsworth.<sup>421</sup> No report of its findings were available to the Head Teacher at the time the 1981 Annual Report was written, but he stated that the school welcomed the opportunity to share some of its ideas and practices with that committee.<sup>422</sup>

In 1981 the Principal stated that boys arriving at Holdsworth were most unresponsive to attending school, yet in a short time they learnt to accept and eventually to enjoy school work, and possibly for the first time, to gain success in that setting.<sup>423</sup> According to the Principal, the programme was aimed at equating with a normal school in the community, as the boys would be attending school for some time after discharge from Holdsworth.<sup>424</sup> He recognised that at the same time the teachers had to assist the high percentage of boys who required remedial work and special assistance to cope in the classroom.<sup>425</sup>

<sup>413</sup> Inspection Report, J A Blair, J M Callon, 20/10/80, visit of 21-24 March 1980, Holdsworth Reports, 32156, p3.

<sup>414</sup> Inspection Report, J A Blair, J M Callon, 20/10/80, visit of 21-24 March 1980, Holdsworth Reports, 32156, p3.

<sup>415</sup> Inspection Report, J A Blair, J M Callon, 20/10/80, visit of 21-24 March 1980, Holdsworth Reports, 32156, p2.

<sup>416</sup> Inspection Report, J A Blair, J M Callon, 20/10/80, visit of 21-24 March 1980, Holdsworth Reports, 32156, p2.

<sup>417</sup> Annual Report 1980, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793.

<sup>418</sup> Annual Report 1980, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793, p1.

<sup>419</sup> Annual Report 1980, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793, p1.

<sup>420</sup> Memo, AK McCallum (for Director-General of Education) to W R Mosley (Department Head Office to Wanganui Education Board), 38/6/41, 17/07/81, Holdsworth Profile, 2006/972.

<sup>421</sup> Annual Report 1981, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793.

<sup>422</sup> Annual Report 1981, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793.

<sup>423</sup> Annual Report 1981, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793, p1.

<sup>424</sup> Annual Report 1981, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793, p2.

<sup>425</sup> Annual Report 1981, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793, p2.

The Principal reported that in 1981 staffing remained very stable, but that Holdsworth would only have two permanent teaching staff – the Head Teacher, and one teacher, as the others had sought positions elsewhere.<sup>426</sup>

Even with the loss of the Senior Teacher and other experienced staff during the year, the Head Teacher and his team did a tremendous job in 1981, according to the Principal.<sup>427</sup> The Head Teacher stated that the employment of two relieving teachers was necessitated after staff resigned, transferred or took leave.<sup>428</sup> He spoke highly of the relieving staff.<sup>429</sup> The annual report stated that two homework teachers were employed for four nights a week on a fee for service basis.<sup>430</sup>

According to the Head Teacher, the boys' attitudes towards classroom programmes were enthusiastic and responsive reflecting appropriate planning and presentation of lessons by the teaching staff.<sup>431</sup> The Head Teacher reported that use was sometimes made of the specialist advisory services available through the Education Department and the Wanganui Education Board.<sup>432</sup> He also felt it was necessary to make special mention of the involvement of the 'Education Department's I.S.S.E' and of the visiting psychologist.<sup>433</sup>

The Head Teacher reported that roll numbers did not exceed 46 at any stage in 1981 and that this allowed for concentrated individual and small-group learning.<sup>434</sup> In the same year, selected boys were enrolled at local schools for the final term of their training.<sup>435</sup>

In 1981 contact with local schools was maintained through cultural and sporting exchanges, according to the Head Teacher.<sup>436</sup> He stated that the school was pleased to share some of its experiences with teachers who, from time to time, were directed to Holdsworth by advisers and others for the purpose of observing some of its rehabilitative practices.<sup>437</sup> The Head Teacher also commented that in 1981 most teachers had the opportunity to attend at least one in-service course organised locally or nationally.<sup>438</sup>

In 1981 Head Teacher, R J Taylor wrote to the District Inspector of Schools with a number of concerns felt by the School's staff.<sup>439</sup> One matter of concern was the lack of information being given to them about the scaling down of operations at Holdsworth.<sup>440</sup> The Head teacher was critical of the lack of communication between the Social Welfare and Education Departments.<sup>441</sup>

<sup>426</sup> Annual Report 1981, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793, p1.

<sup>427</sup> Annual Report 1981, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793, p2.

<sup>428</sup> Annual Report 1981, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793.

<sup>429</sup> Annual Report 1981, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793.

<sup>430</sup> Annual Report 1981, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793, p2.

<sup>431</sup> Annual Report 1981, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793.

<sup>432</sup> Annual Report 1981, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793.

<sup>433</sup> Annual Report 1981, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793.

<sup>434</sup> Annual Report 1981, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793.

<sup>435</sup> Annual Report 1981, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793.

<sup>436</sup> Annual Report 1981, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793.

<sup>437</sup> Annual Report 1981, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793.

<sup>438</sup> Annual Report 1981, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793.

<sup>439</sup> Letter, R J Taylor (Head Teacher) to The District Senior Inspector of Schools, 17/07/81, Holdsworth Profile, 2006/965, p1.

<sup>440</sup> Letter, R J Taylor Head Teacher to The District Senior Inspector of Schools, 17/07/81, Holdsworth Profile, 2006/965, p1.

<sup>441</sup> Letter, R J Taylor Head Teacher to The District Senior Inspector of Schools, 17/07/81, Holdsworth Profile, 2006/965, p1.



In 1982 two relieving teachers ceased employment at the end of term two. The roll was at 8 in September of that year, and was not expected to rise significantly as demolition work was under way.<sup>442</sup>

### Concerns Expressed about Individual Staff

In [REDACTED] the District Senior Inspector of Schools wrote to the Officer for Special Education and recommended that the Senior Teacher, Mr [REDACTED]'s transfer application be accepted.<sup>443</sup> The reasons for this were that he showed little understanding of the needs of the delinquent boys in his care, had little sympathy for them, and had little capacity for leadership – resulting in the morale of the school being at a low ebb.<sup>444</sup> This transfer was actioned.<sup>445</sup>

In [REDACTED] the Inspector commented on the behaviour and attitude of [REDACTED] Senior Teacher, and was concerned that an entire institution could be unsettled and the efforts of a dedicated staff virtually nullified by the Department's inability to rid itself of a totally unsuitable staff member.<sup>446</sup> The Inspector stated that 'our involvement in the selection of teachers in the first place is still not sufficient'.<sup>447</sup>

### Section 29(1)(a) Privacy Act 1993- Affairs of Another

In the same year the District Senior Inspector of Schools also expressed concern about the teaching and leadership performance of [REDACTED].<sup>448</sup> He noted that a school inspector had commented that "Mr [REDACTED] be transferred from his B1 Senior Teacher position to a Scale A position at Holdsworth School".<sup>449</sup> The reasons for this were that Mr [REDACTED] had lost the respect of the Principal, had expressed his lack of trust in his senior officers, and had shown disregard for school policies about classroom management, control of pupils, and curriculum content.<sup>450</sup>

The District Senior Inspector believed that [REDACTED] was seriously disturbed, and had been for the past 12 months and that he should not be in a position of responsibility for the education of boys.<sup>451</sup> The Inspector stated that the only way to indicate to [REDACTED] that he did not measure up to his responsibilities, was to demote him, which he recommended should be done.<sup>452</sup> The Inspector requested advice from the Regional Superintendent for the Department of Education about what he should do.<sup>453</sup>

<sup>442</sup> Memo, WR Mosley, for District Senior Inspector of Schools to DF Walsh, SEDO(SE), Department of Education, 15/09/82, Holdsworth Staffing, 2006/965.

<sup>443</sup> Letter, JM Wiseley, District Senior Inspector of Schools to D H Ross, Officer for Special Education, 02/08/72, Holdsworth Staffing, 2006/977.

<sup>444</sup> Letter, JM Wiseley, District Senior Inspector of Schools to D H Ross, Officer for Special Education, 02/08/72, Holdsworth Staffing, 2006/977.

<sup>445</sup> Handwritten note by illegible on letter, JM Wiseley, District Senior Inspector of Schools to D H Ross, Officer for Special Education, 02/08/72, Holdsworth Staffing, 2006/977.

<sup>446</sup> Inspection Report, R J Wilson, visit of 10-12 March [REDACTED] Holdsworth Reports 32156, p5. .

<sup>447</sup> Inspection Report, R J Wilson, visit of 10-12 March [REDACTED] Holdsworth Reports 32156, p5.

<sup>448</sup> Memo, SEA Breach, District Inspector of Schools to the Regional Superintendent, Department of Education, [REDACTED] Holdsworth Staffing, 2006/965, p.1.

<sup>449</sup> Memo, MP Doolan, Principal, Holdsworth School to Director General, quoting Mr George Craig, Inspector of Schools, [REDACTED], Holdsworth Staffing, 2006/965, p.1.

<sup>450</sup> Memo, MP Doolan, Principal, Holdsworth School to Director General, [REDACTED], Holdsworth Staffing, 2006/965, p.1-2.

<sup>451</sup> Memo, MP Doolan, Principal, Holdsworth School to Director General, [REDACTED], Holdsworth Staffing, 2006/965, p.2.

<sup>452</sup> Memo, MP Doolan, Principal, Holdsworth School to Director General, [REDACTED], Holdsworth Staffing, 2006/965, p.2.

<sup>453</sup> Memo, MP Doolan, Principal, Holdsworth School to Director General, [REDACTED], Holdsworth Staffing, 2006/965, p.2.

The Principal also expressed concerns about ██████ and suggested his removal from the school.<sup>454</sup> The Principal expressed his concern that ██████ had allowed boys in his class to masturbate freely in class.<sup>455</sup> He also outlined other incidents that illustrated ██████'s lack of integrity, and stability. Examples given were that ██████ repeatedly refused to adhere to the rules set by the School relating to the grazing of his horses at Holdsworth, that neighbours complained that ██████ 'prowled' at night, and entertained young boys at his home and provided them with alcohol (the Principal was clear these could not have been Holdsworth boys).<sup>456</sup> Another example was that ██████ was convicted of assaulting his neighbour.<sup>457</sup>

In ██████ a Report expressed disappointment with ██████ at the school.<sup>458</sup> The writers were disappointed with his leadership in some curriculum areas and felt that he was in danger of overlooking some of the educational objectives of the school through his great concern to promote the rehabilitative role of the Institution.<sup>459</sup> One of the writers felt ██████ could benefit from opportunities to observe some active and effective principals at work.<sup>460</sup>

A Q Bruce commented that ██████ was very experienced, had considerable mana with other teachers, but was perhaps becoming out of touch with the mainstream of teaching.<sup>461</sup>

In ██████ left Holdsworth after being there for 9 years.<sup>462</sup> The Principal described his contribution as 'magnificent' and complemented the teaching staff on continuing to maintain an effective teaching programme to the end.<sup>463</sup>

### Relations between staff

In 1973 and 1979 the Principal stated that the school was considered to be an integral part of the institution.<sup>464</sup> Between 1975 and 1977 relations between the school, the Principal, and the Institution staff were generally co-operative, supportive and happy.<sup>465</sup> A combined front and unity in purpose and action were considered essential by the Head Teacher to add consistency and security to the boys' attitude to those in authority and responsible for their rehabilitation.<sup>466</sup>

In 1974 the Inspector commented on good working relationship between social work and teaching staff but that points of friction had occasionally arisen.<sup>467</sup> He noted that In order for the situation to be maintained, clear guidelines needed to be drawn up so

<sup>454</sup> Memo, MP Doolan, Principal, Holdsworth School to Director General, 07/08/74, Holdsworth Staffing, 2006/965, p.3.

<sup>455</sup> Memo, MP Doolan, Principal, Holdsworth School to Director General, 07/08/74, Holdsworth Staffing, 2006/965, p.2.

<sup>456</sup> Memo, MP Doolan, Principal, Holdsworth School to Director General, 07/08/74, Holdsworth Staffing, 2006/965, p.2.

<sup>457</sup> Memo, MP Doolan, Principal, Holdsworth School to Director General, 07/08/74, Holdsworth Staffing, 2006/965, p.2.

<sup>458</sup> Minute sheet, George Bowers to Allan, undated, Holdsworth Staffing, 2006/965.

<sup>459</sup> Minute sheet, George Bowers to Allan, undated, Holdsworth Staffing, 2006/965.

<sup>460</sup> Minute sheet, George Bowers to Allan, undated, Holdsworth Staffing, 2006/965.

<sup>461</sup> Letter, AQ Bruce, Ed OSE to L Robinson, 07/06/1977, Holdsworth Staffing, 2006/965.

<sup>462</sup> Annual Report 1982, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793, p1.

<sup>463</sup> Annual Report 1982, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793, p1.

<sup>464</sup> Annual Report 1973, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793, p3.

<sup>465</sup> Annual Reports 1975 to 1977, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793.

<sup>466</sup> Annual Report 1973, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793.

<sup>467</sup> Report on Holdsworth School, by GP Craig, Inspector of Schools, 15-16/07/74, Holdsworth Education, 2006/965, p3.

that the two bodies appreciated their authorities and responsibilities.<sup>468</sup> An Inspection report in 1975 re-iterated this view.<sup>469</sup> The Inspector hoped role clarification would be done at least in part on the recent teachers courses at the RSTS.<sup>470</sup>

In 1978 the Head Teacher reported that the two Departments operated as a condominium, recognising each others roles and autonomy yet working very closely together for the common goal – successful rehabilitation of the boys in care.<sup>471</sup> Teachers were a numerical minority on the staff but, according to the Head Teacher, were made to feel welcome and respected.<sup>472</sup> According to him, teaching staff were regarded as members of the one staff with specific areas of responsibility.<sup>473</sup> The Principal had delegated to the Head teacher the responsibility of planning educational programmes of work to meet the needs of the boys within the overall policy of the total institution.<sup>474</sup>

The Head Teacher reported that the Social Welfare staff were regarded as 'in loco parentis' and, where possible, fulfilled the function of a school committee.<sup>475</sup> Contact with Social Welfare staff was continuous and discussions concerning boys' progress were daily occurrences, according to the Head Teacher.<sup>476</sup>

In 1979 the Head Teacher commented that the increasing involvement of residential social workers in the school and its programmes was evidenced by more frequent visits for observation and participation.<sup>477</sup> According to the Head Teacher, teachers were pleased at the concern Residential Social Workers showed for the school progress of members of their caseloads, realising how important it was in the overall programme of development and training.<sup>478</sup>

An Inspection Report from 1980 stated that there was close co-operation between house and school staff, to the point of sharing in each other's activities.<sup>479</sup>

In 1981 the Head Teacher commented that, despite the fact of imminent scaling-down, the school year was particularly satisfying and productive.<sup>480</sup> He believed that this was brought about by close co-operation between teaching and social work staff at all levels, and noted that at no stage in the past had there been closer understanding and more intensive joint planning and programming than in 1981.<sup>481</sup>

<sup>468</sup> Report on Holdsworth School, by GP Craig, Inspector of Schools, 15-16/07/74, Holdsworth Education, 2006/965, p3.

<sup>469</sup> Inspection Report, R J Wilson, visit of 10-12 March 1975, Holdsworth Reports 32156, p5.

<sup>470</sup> Inspection Report, R J Wilson, visit of 10-12 March 1975, Holdsworth Reports 32156, p5.

<sup>471</sup> Notes supplied by Head Teacher for visit of L Silcock 12/04/78, Holdsworth Profile, 2006/982, p3.

<sup>472</sup> Notes supplied by Head Teacher for visit of L Silcock 12/04/78, Holdsworth Profile, 2006/982, p3.

<sup>473</sup> Notes supplied by Head Teacher for visit of L Silcock 12/04/78, Holdsworth Profile, 2006/982, p1.

<sup>474</sup> Notes supplied by Head Teacher for visit of L Silcock 12/04/78, Holdsworth Profile, 2006/982, p3.

<sup>475</sup> Notes supplied by Head Teacher for visit of L Silcock 12/04/78, Holdsworth Profile, 2006/982, p3.

<sup>476</sup> Notes supplied by Head Teacher for visit of L Silcock 12/04/78, Holdsworth Profile, 2006/982, p3.

<sup>477</sup> Annual Report 1979, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793.

<sup>478</sup> Annual Report 1979, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793.

<sup>479</sup> Inspection Report, J A Blair, J M Callon, 20/10/80, visit of 21-24 March 1980, Holdsworth Reports, 32156, p2.

<sup>480</sup> Annual Report 1981, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793.

<sup>481</sup> Annual Report 1981, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793.

## Absconding

There are no records of absconding statistics in 1973, 1980 and 1981. However, it was noted the 1973 Annual Report that abscondings were few and far between<sup>482</sup>.

Between 1972 and 1979 (excluding 1973), the number of abscondings ranged from none (in 1977) to 18 (in 1972).<sup>483</sup> During this time, the number of abscondings in a year was mostly above 10.<sup>484</sup> The number of boys involved in the incidents of absconding during this time ranged from 15 (in 1974) to 50 (in 1972), the most common number being just over 20.<sup>485</sup>

In 1975 the Principal pointed out that the absconding statistics (14 incidents involving 27 boys) were skewed by one day when 15 boys absconded in the course of the day, all but two of whom were returned by staff within hours.<sup>486</sup>

According to the Principal, absconding in 1980 posed few problems to staff or the community.<sup>487</sup> He did, however note that on one day one-third of the children left the property.<sup>488</sup>

## Secure care

There were no secure facilities at Holdsworth so, according to the Principal, highly disturbed and difficult boys were contained in very open conditions.<sup>489</sup>

In 1980 there was a "time out" room available.<sup>490</sup> The Inspectors suggested that a better name for this room would be a "winding down" room.<sup>491</sup> According to the Inspectors, this room had no lock on the door and was used only very rarely.<sup>492</sup> According to the Inspectors' report, when it was used a staff member was present with the boy and remained with him until he was ready to leave - the length of stay was determined by the boy.<sup>493</sup> No other information was located on file about the "time out room".

<sup>482</sup> Annual Report 1973, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793, p4.

<sup>483</sup> Annual Report 1972, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793, table VII to Annual Report 1972, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793, table VII.

<sup>484</sup> Annual Report 1972, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793, table VII to Annual Report 1972, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793, table VII.

<sup>485</sup> Annual Report 1972, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793, table VII to Annual Report 1972, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793, table VII.

<sup>486</sup> Annual Report 1975, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793, p 1.

<sup>487</sup> Annual Report 1980, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793, p1.

<sup>488</sup> Annual Report 1980, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793, p1.

<sup>489</sup> Annual Report 1975, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793, p1.

<sup>490</sup> Inspection Report, J A Blair, J M Callon, 20/10/80, visit of 21-24 March 1980, Holdsworth Reports, 32156, p5.

<sup>491</sup> Inspection Report, J A Blair, J M Callon, 20/10/80, visit of 21-24 March 1980, Holdsworth Reports, 32156, p5.

<sup>492</sup> Inspection Report, J A Blair, J M Callon, 20/10/80, visit of 21-24 March 1980, Holdsworth Reports, 32156, p5.

<sup>493</sup> Inspection Report, J A Blair, J M Callon, 20/10/80, visit of 21-24 March 1980, Holdsworth Reports, 32156, p5.

## Discipline

There is very little information in the Holdsworth files about the use of discipline. In 1975 two boys who absconded were 'placed off privileges', as well as receiving corporal punishment.<sup>494</sup>

Disciplinary action resulted for breaches of home leave rules, but was thought to be inappropriate on the basis of a report received a long time after a home leave period.<sup>495</sup>

## Physical punishment

In 1975 corporal punishment was given to at least two boys for absconding.<sup>496</sup>

The Inspectors reported that at school in 1980 misbehaviour was dealt with by a note on the weekly comments sheet (which was discussed at case conference), by detention, or, in a few cases, by the administration of a strap on the hand.<sup>497</sup>

In 1980 the Inspectors reported that Holdsworth was one of the few Institutions where corporal punishment was still being administered, but that with the ages of the boys in residence, this could be expected.<sup>498</sup> They commented that it was pleasing to note that this practice was only used very sparingly.<sup>499</sup>

## Drugs, alcohol, and tattoos

No documents relating to these subjects were found in files located for Holdsworth.

## Smoking

Smoking was not allowed at Holdsworth.<sup>500</sup> There was no other information about this subject in the Holdsworth files.

<sup>494</sup> Note for File, by J S Drake, Assistant Principal, 27/02/75, Holdsworth Discipline/Punishment, 5000000633721.

<sup>495</sup> Letter, MP Doolan, Principal, Holdsworth School to Director General, 21/07/76, Holdsworth Staffing, 500000633721.

<sup>496</sup> Note for File, by J S Drake, Assistant Principal, 27/02/75, Holdsworth Discipline/Punishment, 5000000633721.

<sup>497</sup> Inspection Report, J A Blair, J M Callon, 20/10/80, visit of 21-24 March 1980, Holdsworth Reports, 32156, p3.

<sup>498</sup> Inspection Report, J A Blair, J M Callon, 20/10/80, visit of 21-24 March 1980, Holdsworth Reports, 32156, p4.

<sup>499</sup> Inspection Report, J A Blair, J M Callon, 20/10/80, visit of 21-24 March 1980, Holdsworth Reports, 32156, p4.

<sup>500</sup> Questionnaire to MP Doolan, Principal, Holdsworth School, 10/08/77, Holdsworth Profile, 5000002388341, p2.

## Contact with field social workers

In 1975, as well as a synopsis of case history and the recommendations of specialists, social workers were asked to include in their proposal for a child's admission a statement of the needs that they perceived the child to have, an indication of their forward thinking about the case and whether they intended to work with the child's family during the training period. The proposal was also to include a statement about who the child would spend their first home leave period with and a statement of height, weight and assessed social maturity.<sup>501</sup>

In the same year social workers were told that it was preferable that children were escorted to Holdsworth, and that the escort spent some time there before departing to enable the child to maintain links between his past and the new experience.<sup>502</sup>

In 1975 Holdsworth prepared Casework plans, Progress Reports, and Placement Reports.<sup>503</sup> The Progress Reports contained tentative discharge dates to help Social Workers in their forward planning. Early notification of an intention to discharge a boy was given to Social Workers, followed by full Placement and School reports.<sup>504</sup>

Social worker's holiday reports were considered to be of prime importance in 1975, and should have been given to Holdsworth staff as soon as possible after the home leave period. One purpose of the reports was to inform Holdsworth staff of changes in family circumstances.<sup>505</sup> Because home leave periods were part of the training process, it was essential that Holdsworth was informed immediately should a child re-offend while on holiday. Social Workers were encouraged by the Principal to write to their wards each term telling them of family and home town news.<sup>506</sup>

In 1977 one of the major areas of concern was with the lack of response from a significant proportion of Social Workers, and the difficulty of getting information from Districts.<sup>507</sup> Holdsworth had a major difficulty getting Social Workers to report adequately, or at all, on home leave periods.<sup>508</sup> Some boys were not seen while on home leave, or Social Workers report on the basis of a telephone call to parents, or something similar.<sup>509</sup> Often Holdsworth staff had to request information about changes in family circumstances from other Districts after learning about them from other sources.<sup>510</sup> The failure of Districts to respond, or their tardiness in doing so, to Holdsworth's placement proposals, often caused much suffering for the boy concerned, and was frustrating for staff.<sup>511</sup>

<sup>501</sup> Information about Holdsworth School for Social Workers 1975, Holdsworth Reports F000001599381, p2.

<sup>502</sup> Information about Holdsworth School for Social Workers 1975, Holdsworth Reports F000001599381, p2.

<sup>503</sup> Information about Holdsworth School for Social Workers 1975, Holdsworth Reports F000001599381, p4.

<sup>504</sup> Information about Holdsworth School for Social Workers 1975, Holdsworth Reports F000001599381, p4.

<sup>505</sup> Information about Holdsworth School for Social Workers 1975, Holdsworth Reports F000001599381, p4.

<sup>506</sup> Information about Holdsworth School for Social Workers 1975, Holdsworth Reports F000001599381, p4.

<sup>507</sup> Annual Report 1977, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793, p 2.

<sup>508</sup> Annual Report 1977, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793, p 2.

<sup>509</sup> Annual Report 1977, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793, p 2.

<sup>510</sup> Annual Report 1977, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793, p 2.

<sup>511</sup> Annual Report 1977, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793, p2.

The Principal saw that the basis of these shortcomings was the lack of appreciation of the roles of the residence.<sup>512</sup> The Principal believed that each Assistant Director (Social Work) ought to be asked to personally oversee his District's relationship with National Institutions, if for no other reason than to safeguard the Department's considerable financial investment in long-term residential care. He did not believe that any privately funded organisation would neglect resources in the same way as the field services did.<sup>513</sup>

In 1980 the Inspectors reported that 'the inadequate information forwarded by districts in some cases and the continuing difficulty in getting holiday reports from specific districts' was noticeable.<sup>514</sup> According to the Inspectors, both problems were perennial, but the Principal felt improvements were being achieved.<sup>515</sup>

In the same year the Inspectors commented that social worker contact was very limited because of Holdsworth's location, and the fact that it was a National Institution.<sup>516</sup> According to the Inspectors, field social workers did visit on escorting duties and were encouraged to stay overnight.<sup>517</sup>

The Inspectors reported in 1980 that the Principal wondered whether there needed to be a clearer indication given to districts of the different roles of Beck House, Holdsworth and Hokio, as boys recommended for one were often finishing up being approved for another.<sup>518</sup>

## Contact with community

When the Department first took over the Holdsworth site from the Society of Friends, the local community reacted quite unfavourably, according to the Principal, Mr A K McLean.<sup>519</sup> According to McLean, it took time and effort on the part of the first principal (Mr M Powierza) and his staff to gain a grudging acceptance.<sup>520</sup> His successor (Mr M Doolan) was able to build on this, and by the time Mr McLean arrived as Assistant Principal, Holdsworth had a good name and had gained almost full community support and acceptance.

Residents had a variety of involvement with the community - they were able to attend their own church services, there were regular outings from Holdsworth and competitions were held in soccer, rugby, indoor basketball, harriers, swimming and athletics. There was also a lot of involvement with other schools and boys visited staff houses for meals and went on outings with visitors.<sup>521</sup>

<sup>512</sup> Annual Report 1977, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793, p2.

<sup>513</sup> Annual Report 1977, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793, p2.

<sup>514</sup> Inspection Report, J A Blair, J M Callon, 20/10/80, visit of 21-24 March 1980, Holdsworth Reports, 32156, p2.

<sup>515</sup> Inspection Report, J A Blair, J M Callon, 20/10/80, visit of 21-24 March 1980, Holdsworth Reports, 32156, p2.

<sup>516</sup> Inspection Report, J A Blair, J M Callon, 20/10/80, visit of 21-24 March 1980, Holdsworth Reports, 32156, p6.

<sup>517</sup> Inspection Report, J A Blair, J M Callon, 20/10/80, visit of 21-24 March 1980, Holdsworth Reports, 32156, p6.

<sup>518</sup> Inspection Report, J A Blair, J M Callon, 20/10/80, visit of 21-24 March 1980, Holdsworth Reports, 32156, p5.

<sup>519</sup> AK McLean, Principal to Director-General 18/02/81, Holdsworth Profile 32157, p1.

<sup>520</sup> AK McLean, Principal to Director-General 18/02/81, Holdsworth Profile 32157, p1.

<sup>521</sup> Questionnaire MP Doolan, Principal, Holdsworth School, 10/08/77, Holdsworth Profile, 5000002388341, p3.

In 1979 the Principal stated that Holdsworth was making more use of the community, which he found were supportive. The Principal saw the need to alter the Holdsworth programme so that a much greater use was made of community resources.<sup>522</sup> He saw this as very important at Holdsworth, as it was not possible to work with the actual families from which the children came.<sup>523</sup> Therefore, the Principal felt that substitute families were needed to test their new found social skills on.<sup>524</sup> He hoped to send boys out to local schools, in time, and to develop a network of families who would provide for the boys in residence with family experiences.<sup>525</sup> According to the Principal the recreation programme was already making great use of local resources, with a two way exchange between Holdsworth and community groups.<sup>526</sup>

In 1980 the Principal reported that as well as sending some boys to school outside the Institution, Holdsworth widened its involvement in recreation by residents joining local clubs and attending various churches for services and other activities.<sup>527</sup>

In 1981 the Principal reported that community involvement continued at a high level, both in the school and institution generally.<sup>528</sup> One of the Residential Social Workers belonged to the local Maori community and many boys spent time at his Pa – trips from which the Maori boys in particular gained a lot from, according to the Principal.<sup>529</sup>

In 1982 the Principal reported that with numbers decreasing, staff took the opportunity to make greater use of community resources, with mixed results.<sup>530</sup>

In 1983 boys reportedly had a 'good deal of contact with the local community' – for example, they cultural contacts with local schools and clubs.<sup>531</sup>

## Visiting committees

In 1980 the Inspectors commented that since its setting up, the Visiting Committee had not functioned, despite many efforts by the former and present Principal.<sup>532</sup> The Principal commented that the Visiting Committee virtually went out of existence when Mrs Waitere resigned.<sup>533</sup> While the Inspectors were at Holdsworth, an invitation was given through the Principal for members of the Committee to visit with a view to having a discussion with Mr Callon and Mr Blair (whose positions were not recorded), but no interest was shown.<sup>534</sup> A handwritten note on the Inspectors'

<sup>522</sup> Annual Report 1979, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793, p1.

<sup>523</sup> Annual Report 1979, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793, p1.

<sup>524</sup> Annual Report 1979, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793, p1.

<sup>525</sup> Annual Report 1979, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793, p2.

<sup>526</sup> Annual Report 1979, Holdsworth Reports, F5000006406793, p2.

<sup>527</sup> Annual Report 1980, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793, p2.

<sup>528</sup> Annual Report 1981, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793, p2.

<sup>529</sup> Annual Report 1981, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793, p2.

<sup>530</sup> Annual Report 1982, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793, p1.

<sup>531</sup> Holdsworth School, Holdsworth Profile F5000002388341

<sup>532</sup> Inspection Report, J A Blair, J M Callon, 20/10/80, visit of 21-24 March 1980, Holdsworth Reports, 32156, p7.

<sup>533</sup> Annual Report 1980, Holdsworth School Reports F5000006406793, p1.

<sup>534</sup> Inspection Report, J A Blair, J M Callon, 20/10/80, visit of 21-24 March 1980, Holdsworth Reports, 32156, p7.



report of 1980 recorded that 'no member of the Visiting Committee attended the seminar for such committee held April 1980'.<sup>535</sup>

In 1981 the Principal reported that a new Visiting Committee had been set up, which appeared to him would become very active in the institution.<sup>536</sup>

## Contact with families

In 1975 an Inspection Report noted that Holdsworth made particular effort to contact parents particularly shortly after admission.<sup>537</sup> When children were admitted to Holdsworth a standard form letter was mailed to their parents.<sup>538</sup> The letter described Holdsworth and encouraged family to write to their newly admitted relative frequently.<sup>539</sup> Residents were encouraged to write home regularly<sup>540</sup> and mail to and from residents was not censored.<sup>541</sup> The letter also advised family to give prior notice if they intended visiting, to ensure their relative was there when they arrived.<sup>542</sup>

Because of Holdsworth's location, and its role as a National Institution, there was not much visiting by parents in 1975, despite the fact it was encouraged.<sup>543</sup> The inability to have frequent contact with the families of children in residence was a drawback, according to the Principal and was a strong argument against keeping Holdsworth open.<sup>544</sup>

In 1977 Holdsworth staff were not allowed to make contact with former inmates, or visit the homes of current inmates without the consent of the ADSW responsible. Staff would have liked to visit homes of current inmates, but were aware of the potential difficulties, like cutting across the work of the Social Workers, for example.<sup>545</sup> However, in 1979, to offset the problems caused by the inability to have contact with the families of children in residence, the Principal frequently had Residential Social Workers visit the districts on escorts at which time they took the opportunity to visit families and to have discussions with field staff.<sup>546</sup>

Despite this, in 1982 staff commented on the difficulty of working with the child in isolation from the family, and considering 80% of admissions returned to their

<sup>535</sup> Handwritten note by B on 10/11/80 on Inspection Report, J A Blair, J M Callon, 20/10/80, visit of 21-24 March 1980, Holdsworth Reports, 32156, p7.

<sup>536</sup> Annual Report 1981, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793, p3.

<sup>537</sup> Inspection Report, R J Wilson, visit of 10-12 March 1975, Holdsworth Reports 32156, p6.

<sup>538</sup> Questionnaire to MP Doolan, Principal, Holdsworth School, 10/08/77, Holdsworth Profile, 5000002388341, p2.

<sup>539</sup> Letter, MP Doolan, Principal, Holdsworth School to Mr and Mrs PJ Hilltop, 01/10/75, Holdsworth Profile, 5000002388341.

<sup>540</sup> Inspection Report, R J Wilson, visit of 10-12 March 1975, Holdsworth Reports 32156, p6.

<sup>541</sup> Questionnaire to MP Doolan, Principal, Holdsworth School, 10/08/77, Holdsworth Profile, 5000002388341, p2.

<sup>542</sup> Letter, MP Doolan, Principal, Holdsworth School to Mr and Mrs PJ Hilltop, 01/10/75, Holdsworth Profile, 5000002388341.

<sup>543</sup> Inspection Report, R J Wilson, visit of 10-12 March 1975, Holdsworth Reports 32156, p6.

<sup>544</sup> AK McLean, Principal to Director-General 18/02/81, Holdsworth Profile 32157, p2.

<sup>545</sup> Questionnaire MP Doolan, Principal, Holdsworth School, 10/08/77, Holdsworth Profile, 5000002388341, p5.

<sup>546</sup> Annual Report 1979, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793, p4.

families upon discharge, (a representative of) the Acting Director felt it made sense programmes involving family were desirable where possible.<sup>547</sup>

Holdsworth was able to accommodate a parent who wished to stay overnight and could even be met at a train station or airport by a member of Holdsworth staff.<sup>548</sup> In 1979 the recent practice of having parents escort their child on admission, staying overnight at Holdsworth, proved to be most beneficial to all concerned, according to the Principal.<sup>549</sup>

In 1980 the Principal remarked that it was most encouraging to have had many more parents visit Holdsworth, either escorting their son on admission, or visiting during the year and that many of them took the opportunity to stay overnight.<sup>550</sup>

The Principal saw Home Leave as a part of the training process and complained to the Director-General that a boy's progress within the Institution could not be assessed unless Holdsworth staff received an assessment of their performance on Home Leave within two weeks of their return from leave.<sup>551</sup>

Home leave was a testing period to help staff to identify what gains were being made.<sup>552</sup> In 1975 Social Workers were asked to provide a statement about with whom the child would spend his first home period with.<sup>553</sup> The Principal noted that children should spend home leave with those who are likely to have custody of them on discharge.<sup>554</sup> The reason for this was that there had been many recent instances where boys spent all of their home leave periods at home, yet the home placement was considered unsatisfactory for placement on discharge – a situation that school children could not be expected to understand, and which angered staff.<sup>555</sup>

## Preparation for discharge and after care arrangements

In 1973 the practice of sending selected boys to schools in the community, as a stepping stone to discharge continued, with pleasing results.<sup>556</sup>

In 1978 a six week pre-discharge programme for boys was devised at Holdsworth which called for some follow up by districts.<sup>557</sup> The Principal commented in 1979 that unfortunately this was never able to be fully implemented because Holdsworth did not have the staffing resources.<sup>558</sup> He was very aware that Holdsworth needed to do much more to better prepare children for their return to the community.<sup>559</sup>

<sup>547</sup> Report, Illegible, for Acting Director-General to the Minister of Social Welfare, 25/02/82, Holdsworth Profile, 32157, p1.

<sup>548</sup> Questionnaire MP Doolan, Principal, Holdsworth School, 10/08/77, Holdsworth Profile, 5000002388341, p3.

<sup>549</sup> Annual Report 1979, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793, p4.

<sup>550</sup> Annual Report 1980, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793, p1.

<sup>551</sup> Letter, MP Doolan, Principal, Holdsworth School to Director General, 21/07/76, Holdsworth Staffing, 500000633721.

<sup>552</sup> Information about Holdsworth School for Social Workers, 1975, F000001599381, p3.

<sup>553</sup> Information about Holdsworth School for Social Workers, 1975, F000001599381, p2.

<sup>554</sup> Information about Holdsworth School for Social Workers, 1975, F000001599381, p2.

<sup>555</sup> Information about Holdsworth School for Social Workers, 1975, F000001599381, p2.

<sup>556</sup> Annual Report 1973, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793, p4.

<sup>557</sup> Annual Report 1979, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793, p3.

<sup>558</sup> Annual Report 1979, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793, p3.

<sup>559</sup> Annual Report 1979, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793, p3.

A final discharge report was prepared by the School in 1978 for the benefit not only of the Department of Social welfare, but of the Principal of the school in which a boy was about to be enrolled when he left Holdsworth.<sup>560</sup>

According to the Principal, pre-discharge contact was often made by parents staying at the school or Residential Social Workers visiting the child's home in 1979. When this occurred, the results reportedly were encouraging and beneficial to all concerned.<sup>561</sup>

In 1979 the Principal hoped that the network he hoped to develop of local families who would provide children with family experiences on weekends away from Holdsworth, would test the children's ability to cope prior to discharge.<sup>562</sup>

In 1980 the Principal reported that some specialised work prior to discharge with groups of boys was carried out and that some excellent work was done by various staff with particular boys on their caseload.<sup>563</sup> He did however note that this was one area that staff had not fully come to terms with, and that difficulties remained in this area.<sup>564</sup>

In 1981 the Principal reported that there was a greater allocation of time each term in which specific pre-discharge programmes were run.<sup>565</sup> According to him, preparation for discharge was given a very high priority and was supervised by the Assistant Principal.<sup>566</sup> The Principal believed that a greater emphasis on having the boys prepared for discharge would pay dividends in assisting them to cope better with community pressures.<sup>567</sup>

For the last six weeks of the term in 1981, various staff took discussion groups and discussed with the boys difficulties that they could face, and how they might cope with them.<sup>568</sup> A film was used as a resource, and boys selected for discharge spent weekends away from the Institution at Camp Rewa and Kaiwhaiki Pa.<sup>569</sup> Teachers were also involved in pre-discharge preparation and boys visited local schools – which, according to the Principal, was particularly important for those boys entering college as they reportedly held great fears about what might happen to them there.<sup>570</sup> The Principal was very impressed at the way that the staff tackled their pre-discharge assignments and how well they were able to reach the boys.<sup>571</sup>

In 1981, according to the Head Teacher a discharge programme for boys completing their training was implemented to supplement the normal activities within the school, and through close co-operation between teachers and social workers, he was confident that boys were being better prepared for their futures than they ever had been before.<sup>572</sup>

<sup>560</sup> Notes supplied by Head Teacher for visit of L. Silcock 12/04/78, 2006/982, p4.

<sup>561</sup> Annual Report 1979, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793, p3.

<sup>562</sup> Annual Report 1979, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793, p4.

<sup>563</sup> Annual Report 1980, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793, p2.

<sup>564</sup> Annual Report 1980, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793, p2.

<sup>565</sup> Annual Report 1981, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793, p1.

<sup>566</sup> Annual Report 1981, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793, p3.

<sup>567</sup> Annual Report 1981, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793, p1.

<sup>568</sup> Annual Report 1981, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793, p3.

<sup>569</sup> Annual Report 1981, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793, p3.

<sup>570</sup> Annual Report 1981, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793, p3.

<sup>571</sup> Annual Report 1981, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793, p3.

## Physical description

The Boys' Training Centre campus, including a staff training facility, covered about 5 hectares and was situated 3kms southwest of Levin. In addition, there was a surrounding farm of 110 hectares. By 1965 there was another farm extension block 3kms away as well as a forestry block in the foothills behind Levin.<sup>573</sup>

In 1956, accommodation consisted of 36 separate bedrooms within a villa built in 1940, that also contained a 6-bed dormitory with its own sitting room.<sup>574</sup> A further 6 boys slept in a separate building known as the annexe, which also contained a sitting room, bathroom and toilet.<sup>575</sup>

Over time, the facility came to have two large accommodation blocks as well as seven 6-bed cottages. A secure facility (one room) was built at the Levin Boy's Training Centre in 1955.<sup>576</sup>

In 1957, the capacity was 65.<sup>577</sup> An Inspection in 1959 noted the rundown nature of the institution and many recommendations for physical improvements were made, along with a recommendation to extend the activities programme.<sup>578</sup>

A new 25-bed villa was completed at the end of 1963 and nine cubicles at the end of the old villa were converted into a quiet recreation room. Total beds were 105.<sup>579</sup> In 1964, in addition to the 105 beds at the Boys' Training Centre, there was also mention of one single detention room used for very limited periods.<sup>580</sup>

The Boys Training Centre, Levin, was renamed Kohitere from 1 September 1965.<sup>581</sup> Capacity was 105 in 1966.<sup>582</sup> Five fires broke out in 1966, four of which were suspected arson.<sup>583</sup>

<sup>572</sup> Annual Report 1981, Holdsworth Reports F5000006406793.

<sup>573</sup> Annual Report 1965, Kohitere Reports 32922, p 1.

<sup>574</sup> EJ Stanley, Manager, Boys' Training Centre, draft section of Manual, 14/11/56, Kohitere Profile, NZ Archives Product Number 2006/24605.

<sup>575</sup> EJ Stanley, Manager, Boys' Training Centre, draft section of Manual, 14/11/56, Kohitere Profile, NZ Archives Product Number 2006/24605.

<sup>576</sup> Lallu, H (1979) The role of secure units in Social Welfare institutions, Victoria University of Wellington, at 25.

<sup>577</sup> Circular Memorandum, Superintendent to All DCWOs, 24/4/57, Kohitere Profile 32572.

<sup>578</sup> Inspection Report, B Reilly, 25/5/59 visit of 8-18 May 1959, Kohitere Reports, 32572.

<sup>579</sup> Annual Report 1963, Kohitere Reports, 32922.

<sup>580</sup> B Atwool, Manager to Superintendent, 19/8/64, Kohitere Profile, 32575.

<sup>581</sup> Circular Memorandum 1965/73, 1/9/65, Kohitere Profile, F5000002358407.

<sup>582</sup> B Atwool, Principal Kohitere to Superintendent 21/7/66, Kohitere Profile 32575.

<sup>583</sup> Annual Report, 1966, Kohitere Reports 32922 p 3.

A new school building was ready for the start of the first term in 1967 and a new secure block opened in June 1967.<sup>584</sup> Two new cottages were also built in 1967.<sup>585</sup>

The Residential Staff Training School, situated next to Kohitere, was opened on 6 June 1970.<sup>586</sup> In 1970, capacity was 111 boys.<sup>587</sup> This remained the capacity in 1976, when there were 12 secure beds.<sup>588</sup>

In 1978, a complete refurbishment of the Tui Block by the Ministry of Works and Development was begun. Kohitere staff and boys began an extension to the administration block. A complete collapse of the central heating piping also necessitated large-scale work.<sup>589</sup>

The new gymnasium was completed by the end of April 1981 and the pool (covered and heated and nearing completion in 1981) was used by the local community.<sup>590</sup>

In 1981 Kohitere's capacity was 111 plus 12 secure beds.<sup>591</sup> By 1987 the nominal roll was 70, with numbers often falling below this.<sup>592</sup>

A 16 bed short-term admission assessment and remand facility (up to 3-month stay) for boys called Tararua Kohitere started operation in April 1988. A unit for young women, Te Whare Awhina, was opened on 16 January 1989.<sup>593</sup> Te Whare Awhina had 9 beds and provided assessment and long-term training for young women aged 13-16.<sup>594</sup> This gave Kohitere a 4-unit structure – Te Awhina, Tararua, Te Whanau, a third unit for 24 children of stays 3 months and longer, and a special needs unit (secure).

The secure unit was closed for refurbishment in about October 1988 – after this secure was used less frequently.<sup>595</sup>

Kohitere was scheduled for closure in September 1990.<sup>596</sup> In 1990, there were 28 beds still in active use, plus 12 secure beds. The declining use made of Kohitere made over latter years was due to a move away from long-term national institutions to regional short-term remand facilities.

## Resident profile

Boys progressed through accommodation options: Kiwi, (25 beds in individual bedrooms, from January 1964), Tui (44 single bedrooms opening off a long corridor) and Cottages (six 6-bed cottages, each with its own bathroom and lounge). Boys earned more freedom and less supervision as they moved through the accommodation. For example, Kiwi House was locked at night; Tui was open

<sup>584</sup> Annual Report, 1967, Kohitere Reports 32922 p 2.

<sup>585</sup> Annual Report 1967, Kohitere Reports 32922, p 2.

<sup>586</sup> Annual Report 1969, Kohitere Reports 32922, p 11.

<sup>587</sup> TK North Acting Principal to Superintendent, 29/10/70, Kohitere Profile, 32575.

<sup>588</sup> Kohitere, Levin, DSW, 1976, Kohitere Profile F5000001643102.

<sup>589</sup> Annual Review, 1978, Kohitere Reports 13322, p 1.

<sup>590</sup> Kohitere Inspection Report 2-13 March 1981, Kohitere Reports 32922, para 7.3.

<sup>591</sup> Kohitere Inspection 2-13 March 1981, Kohitere Reports 32922.

<sup>592</sup> Audit Report July 1987, Kohitere Reports ADM 21-6-202 Part Two.

<sup>593</sup> Director, Kohitere to Director, Napier DSW, 29/12/88, Kohitere Profile, F500004247349.

<sup>594</sup> Kohitere Resource Centre pamphlet 1989, Kohitere File F5000001643102, and F5000005659327.

<sup>595</sup> Assistant Director to Director at Wairoa, 21/12/88, Kohitere Profile, F5000001643102.

<sup>596</sup> Director, Kohitere to Director Napier, 10/5/90, Kohitere Profile, F5000004247349.

accommodation with a staff member on site at all times, whereas the Cottages had itinerant supervision only.<sup>597</sup> All boys ate in the dining room situated in Tui House.<sup>598</sup>

Problems with accommodating 2 differing groups within Kiwi House - namely new admissions and absconders, were noted in 1964 and 1965.<sup>599</sup> An incident report in 1964 noted that incidents of difficulties controlling boys were "by no means isolated", and that a "hard core of dominant characters" dragged the behaviour of the middle group down, and that another group of boys were very afraid.<sup>600</sup> The Inspector, Mr Reilly, was also concerned at the Manager's attitude that he, and only he, could exert control.<sup>601</sup>

The 1964 Kohitere Annual Report concluded that a minority of boys had undermined standards at Kohitere and that this group were not drawn by the incentives programme offered. The solution of a maximum security unit was proposed, in order "to reduce their contaminatory and fear-producing effects".<sup>602</sup>

In 1967, two trends were noted; the lower age of boys and the increasing proportion of Maori boys, the latter peaking at 55%.<sup>603</sup> Both of these trends continued in 1968, 1969 and 1970 with corresponding effects. The younger age put increasing pressure on the school and was said to reflect the increase in serious delinquency in the younger age group within the community and the inability of Hokio to take these boys.<sup>604</sup> The rise in Maori and Pacific Island admissions led to some anti-Pakeha sentiment among the boys.<sup>605</sup>

In 1968, Kohitere was described as being recognised as the official "end stage" of the Child Welfare system, although unconnected from the penal service.<sup>606</sup> All admissions, bar a very few, were state wards, and most had spent time in short-stay institutions (i.e. Boys' Homes) and/or Foster homes before Kohitere. Some boys who had committed serious offences came straight from home, via the court system.<sup>607</sup>

In 1976, Kohitere was one of 3 national long-term institutions for boys, the other institutions being Holdsworth and Hokio, which were for younger age groups.<sup>608</sup> As in earlier times, all boys in Kohitere were wards of the state and Director-General approval was required prior to admission.<sup>609</sup> The main admission criteria in 1976 were difficult or delinquent behaviour for which residential care seemed indicated.<sup>610</sup>

<sup>597</sup> B Atwool, Manager Kohitere to Superintendent, 19/8/64, Kohitere Profile, 32575.

<sup>598</sup> 'Kohitere' A National Centre for the Long Term Training of Delinquent Boys, 1968, Kohitere Reports 6/90/1, 32573.

<sup>599</sup> Annual Report 1964, Kohitere Reports 32922, p 2; Annual Report 1965, Kohitere Reports 32922, p 3.

<sup>600</sup> B Atwool, Manager to Superintendent, 27/11/64, Kohitere Profile, 32575.

<sup>601</sup> DG Reilly to Anderson, 4/12/64. Kohitere Profile, 32573.

<sup>602</sup> Annual Report 1964, Kohitere Reports 32922, p 10.

<sup>603</sup> Annual Report, 1967, Kohitere file 32922 p2.

<sup>604</sup> Annual Report, 1968 Kohitere Reports 32922 p 2; Annual Report 1969, Kohitere Reports 32922 p12.

<sup>605</sup> Annual Report, 1968, Kohitere Reports 32922 p2.

<sup>606</sup> 'Kohitere' A National Centre for the Long Term Training of Delinquent Boys, 1968, Kohitere Reports 6/90/1, 32573.

<sup>607</sup> 'Kohitere' A National Centre for the Long Term Training of Delinquent Boys, 1968, Kohitere Reports 6/90/1, 32573.

<sup>608</sup> Kohitere, Levin, DSW, 1976, Kohitere Profile F5000001643102.

<sup>609</sup> Kohitere, Levin, DSW, 1976, Kohitere Profile F5000001643102.

<sup>610</sup> Kohitere, Levin, DSW, 1976, Kohitere Profile, F5000001643102.

In 1974, admissions were restricted to Thursdays to minimise disruption to the programme.<sup>611</sup> 1979 admissions were still made on Thursdays. Boys travelled by air or on the overnight train.<sup>612</sup>

The increase in numbers of admissions with gang affiliations was noted in 1979. Apart from some "minor altercations" this trend was not considered to have created any great concern.<sup>613</sup>

## Length of stay

Kohitere was a long-term facility, with the length of stay from 9 – 18 months, with an average stay of 14 months. The average length of stay at Kohitere declined over the period covered by this report. In 1956, the average length of stay was said to be about one year.<sup>614</sup>

Overcrowding was experienced in 1957, with the institution reaching capacity at 65 boys, with even the temporary tent accommodation full. All districts were therefore asked to consider vocational opportunities for boys instead of Kohitere admission to ease the pressure on Kohitere.<sup>615</sup>

The 1958 Manual states that the average length of stay was 14 -18 months and the total capacity was 120. A 1959 Inspection expressed concern that boys were being misled about the time they would spend at the Boys' Training Centre. At that time, the average stay was over 12 months, but there were reports of boys being told they would be home in 8 or 9 months.<sup>616</sup>

The average length of stay in 1962 was 14.8 months<sup>617</sup> rising to 17.3 months in the 1962/63 year and dropping to 15.6 by 1964.<sup>618</sup> In 1963, a declining length of stay was influenced by a drop in the average length of stay at Borstal institutions – boys at Kohitere could not understand why their stay should be longer than their Borstal counterparts, and stays at Kohitere dropped in response to this.<sup>619</sup>

Both admissions and discharges rose during 1965.<sup>620</sup> The opening of the new secure block in 1967 placed the first pressures on accommodation in years.<sup>621</sup> The average length of stay in 1967 was 15.4 months.<sup>622</sup> The institution was not overcrowded in 1968.<sup>623</sup>

In 1969, the average length of stay was 11.3 months and the age of boys in the institution decreased.<sup>624</sup>

<sup>611</sup> Circular Memorandum 1974/81, 7/10/74, Kohitere Admissions, CO/10/1-10.

<sup>612</sup> Circular Memorandum 1979/103, 17/10/79, Kohitere Admissions, CO/10/1-15.

<sup>613</sup> Annual Review, 1979, Kohitere Reports 13322, p 4.

<sup>614</sup> EJ Stanley, Manager, Boys' Training Centre, draft section of Manual, 14/11/56, Kohitere Profile, NZ Archives Product Number 2006/24605.

<sup>615</sup> Circular Memorandum, Superintendent to All DCWOs, 24/4/57, Kohitere Profile 32572.

<sup>616</sup> Inspection Report of Visit 8-18 May 1959, 27/5/59, Kohitere Reports 32572

<sup>617</sup> Annual Report 1962/63, Kohitere Reports 32922, p 1.

<sup>618</sup> Annual Report 1964, Kohitere Reports 32922, Table 5.

<sup>619</sup> Annual Report 1963, Kohitere Reports 32922, p 1.

<sup>620</sup> Annual Report 1965, Kohitere Reports 32922, Table 1.

<sup>621</sup> Annual Report 1967, Kohitere Reports 32922, p 1.

<sup>622</sup> Annual Report 1971, Kohitere Reports 13322, Table V.

<sup>623</sup> Annual Report 1968, Kohitere Reports 32922, p 1.

<sup>624</sup> Annual Report 1969, Kohitere Reports 32922, p 2.

Admissions in 1969 were the highest on record at 135.<sup>625</sup> More admissions were possible due to the declining length of stay.<sup>626</sup>

By 1970 there was pressure on admissions, which had risen by 63% since 1966, leading to a waiting list. This also put pressure on discharges and was thought to factor in the length of stay, which dropped to 10.9 in 1970.<sup>627</sup> The trend of increasing power of the group over the individual continued, with gang influences and a rise in group abscondings noticeable.<sup>628</sup> In 1970 saw a large increase in the use of secure, from 98 to 153 admissions. Absconding continued to be the main reason for admissions to secure and there was a rise in admissions for bullying or fighting.<sup>629</sup> The average length of stay in secure dropped by ½ day to 12.5 days.<sup>630</sup>

In 1972, there was a lengthy waiting list for 11 months of the year that was cleared only in December.<sup>631</sup> The average length of stay at Kohitere in 1973 was 10 months.<sup>632</sup> In 1981 the average length of stay was also 10 months, with boys spending an average of 3 months in school, and 7 months in trade training.<sup>633</sup>

From 1980 to 1984, the average length of stay was 6.5 months.<sup>634</sup> A description from about 1986 notes the length of stay at that time was 6-9 months.<sup>635</sup>

## Programmes and care

In a 1949 letter to a parent, the Boys' Training Centre was described as a very modern institution where boys worked at various trades and farming as well as taking part in sports and going out to the pictures. Each boy had his own room.<sup>636</sup> The philosophy at this time was described as being "to thrash out the past in one all-embracing interview" and then to provide an environment for boys to "sit back and think" and "work out his own salvation".<sup>637</sup>

In the description of Kohitere in the 1958 Field Officers Manual, the philosophy was to encourage positive methods of self-discipline and control.<sup>638</sup> A minimum of rules and regulations were employed. Boys progressed through a House system which was geared to increased privileges and less supervision. A "personal reliability promotion ladder" was also in place. A boy attaining "B" status on the ladder was allowed unsupervised town outings.<sup>639</sup> There was an emphasis on vocational training and schooling.

<sup>625</sup> Annual Report 1969, Kohitere Reports 32922, p 1.

<sup>626</sup> Annual Report 1969, Kohitere Reports 32922, p 1.

<sup>627</sup> Annual Report, 1970, Kohitere Reports 32922 pp 1, 2 and Table 5.

<sup>628</sup> Annual Report, 1970, Kohitere Reports 32922 p 2.

<sup>629</sup> Annual Report, 1970, Kohitere Reports 32922 p 8.

<sup>630</sup> Annual Report, 1970, Kohitere Reports 32922 p 8.

<sup>631</sup> Annual Report 1972, Kohitere Reports, 13322, p 1.

<sup>632</sup> Kohitere, Levin, DSW, 1976, Kohitere Profile F5000001643102.

<sup>633</sup> Kohitere Inspection 2-13 March 1981, Kohitere Reports 32922, para 9.

<sup>634</sup> Statistics, 1979-1983 Appendix G, Kohitere Admissions, F5000002186500, and Institution Statistics 1984, Kohitere Profile, F5000002186501.

<sup>635</sup> Kohitere, circa 1986, Kohitere Reports F5000002179896.

<sup>636</sup> LS Abbott, Resident Housemaster, 1/2/49, Kohitere Profile NZ Archives 2006002367.

<sup>637</sup> EJ Stanley, Manager circa 1949, NZ Archives 2006002367.

<sup>638</sup> See also, EJ Stanley, Manager, Boys' Training Centre, draft section of Manual, 14/11/56, Kohitere Profile, NZ Archives Product Number 2006/24605.

<sup>639</sup> 1958 Field Officers Manual.



In 1956, the manager described how the boys were encouraged to organise their own leisure time, in order to foster initiative, a sense of responsibility and a community spirit.<sup>640</sup> A 1956 Inspection found the training programme during leisure periods lacking in structure and planning, noting that boys were called away on any pretext, and that Masters did not appear to organise sports activities.<sup>641</sup> This aspect came under criticism again in 1959,<sup>642</sup> but had improved by 1963.<sup>643</sup>

Meals were unsupervised in 1957.<sup>644</sup> The Inspector recommended the introduction of group therapy and criticised the practice of regular and audible head counts. The issue of 2 pairs of underpants per boy was thought to be inadequate, with the Inspector commenting that it was not "mere modesty that led to the boys and the laundress handling some of these items at the end of a pot stick".<sup>645</sup>

The Boys Council was a part of Kohitere from at least 1962, and "worked well in patches" during 1963, but Council was disbanded for a time after members absconded on Christmas Eve and returned with liquor which they consumed in the Council Room, with several Council members being involved in the fighting that broke out afterwards.<sup>646</sup> By 1965, the Council was losing effectiveness.<sup>647</sup> In 1967, boys were no longer voted onto Council by their peers but were recommended by other Council members and staff.<sup>648</sup> The Boys' Council appeared to be working again by 1968, having wide recommendatory powers including what to spend the Boys' Fund Account on (examples include a TV set, band gear and library books). The Boys' Fund got its income from boys doing casual labour in the community.<sup>649</sup> In 1976 the Boys Council meet with the Principal weekly.<sup>650</sup>

In 1962/63, the holiday camp was developed and came into operation, with several small groups sent there for one or two nights.<sup>651</sup> During 1963 the holiday camp was badly affected by acts of vandalism.<sup>652</sup>

In 1956, boys were allowed to go to church in Levin without supervision.<sup>653</sup> In 1963, a fortnightly interdenominational Protestant church service was started at Hokio, while Catholic boys attended church in Levin as before. Some difficulties were experienced in boys leaving church to meet with girls.<sup>654</sup> By 1965, this had become such a problem with the lowest reliability group that their church attendance was limited to times when a staff member could attend with them.<sup>655</sup>

<sup>640</sup> EJ Stanley, Manager, Boys' Training Centre, draft section of Manual, 14/11/56, Kohitere Profile, NZ Archives Product Number 2006/24605.

<sup>641</sup> DG Reilly, Inspector to Superintendent, 27/6/57, visit of 8/12/56, Kohitere Reports 32572.

<sup>642</sup> Inspection Report, B Reilly, 25/5/59 visit of 8-18 May 1959, Kohitere Reports, 32572.

<sup>643</sup> Annual Report 1962/63, Kohitere Reports, 32922.

<sup>644</sup> DG Reilly, Inspector to Superintendent, 27/6/57, visit of 8/12/56, Kohitere Reports 32572.

<sup>645</sup> DG Reilly, Inspector to Superintendent, 27/6/57, visit of 8/12/56, Kohitere Reports 32572.

<sup>646</sup> Annual Report 1963, Kohitere Reports 32922, p 3

<sup>647</sup> Annual Report 1965, Kohitere Reports 32922, p 4.

<sup>648</sup> Annual Report 1967, Kohitere Reports 32922, p 3.

<sup>649</sup> 'Kohitere' A National Centre for the Long Term Training of Delinquent Boys, 1968, Kohitere Reports 6/90/1, 32573.

<sup>650</sup> Kohitere, Levin, DSW pamphlet 1976, Kohitere Reports F5000001643102.

<sup>651</sup> Annual Report 1962/63, Kohitere Reports, 32922.

<sup>652</sup> Annual Report 1963, Kohitere Reports, 32922.

<sup>653</sup> EJ Stanley, Manager, Boys' Training Centre, draft section of Manual, 14/11/56, Kohitere Profile, NZ Archives Product Number 2006/24605.

<sup>654</sup> Annual Report 1963, Kohitere Reports 32922.

<sup>655</sup> Annual Report 1965, Kohitere Reports 32922, p 5.

In 1965, a pre-discharge group operated for a series of five meetings, covering topics such as employment, recreation, money and dealing with personal problems.<sup>656</sup> This group was still operating in 1970.<sup>657</sup>

In 1965, there was an emphasis on personal tidiness, but this was hampered by inappropriate and often out-of-date clothing supplies from Head Office.<sup>658</sup>

In 1967, each boy's case was reviewed after 6 months in care and a target date for discharge set. Good progress could see this date brought forward by a month, whereas bad behaviour would delay it by the same amount. Major disruptions would lead to a re-assessment.<sup>659</sup> By 1966, boys wanted advance notice of their discharge date, in line with Borstal practices.<sup>660</sup>

In 1968, the Kohitere training programme operated on 3 levels – individual work, group work and community work.<sup>661</sup>

The promotions system through 'A', 'B' and 'C' status was still in place in 1971 and is set out in detail in the 1971 Annual Report. Boys were allocated points for behaviour, performance and reliability. One point was given for an average performance, 2 points for an above average performance and 3 points for a really outstanding performance. On gaining a total of 40 points, a boy was promoted to 'B' status, becoming eligible for one week's home leave as well as gaining other privileges. Progression to 'A' status normally took 12 weeks, stepping progressively from B1 to B12 status.<sup>662</sup>

In 1973, the points scale was increased from 1-5, allowing greater rewards for those boys doing well. In addition to the home leave incentive 'B' group boys got an extra 25 cents pocket money, while 'A' group boys got an extra 35 cents.<sup>663</sup> It was also noted that the younger age of boys in Kohitere meant that they were less able to respond to a greater measure of self-responsibility.<sup>664</sup> On the other hand, the younger boys were viewed as more pliable. A one-week induction programme was introduced in 1973.<sup>665</sup>

The position of recreation officer was vacant for several months in 1972, and again for the 3 years up to 1981 and this affected the programme offered.<sup>666</sup> Compulsory organised sport was considered by the Principal to allow boys to develop skills they were unaware they possessed.<sup>667</sup>

A new programme was put in place in 1974, separating school from work training, to reduce the disruptive effects of one programme on another (for example, missing school to attend work) and to better accommodate the needs of the younger age group being admitted.<sup>668</sup>

<sup>656</sup> Annual Report 1965, Kohitere Reports 32922, p 4.

<sup>657</sup> Annual Report 1969, Kohitere Reports 32922, p 5.

<sup>658</sup> Annual Report 1965, Kohitere Reports 32922, p 5.

<sup>659</sup> Circular Memorandum 1967/52, 18/9/67, Kohitere Profile F5000001643102.

<sup>660</sup> Annual Report, 1966, Kohitere Reports 32922 p 1.

<sup>661</sup> 'Kohitere' A National Centre for the Long Term Training of Delinquent Boys, 1968, Kohitere Reports 6/90/1, 32573.

<sup>662</sup> Annual Report, 1971, Kohitere Reports, 13322 p 4.

<sup>663</sup> Annual Report 1973, Kohitere Reports, 13322, p 9.

<sup>664</sup> Annual Report 1973, Kohitere Reports, 13322, p 11.

<sup>665</sup> Annual Report 1973, Kohitere Reports, 13322, p 15.

<sup>666</sup> Annual Report, 1972, Kohitere Reports, 13322, p 11. Kohitere Inspection 2-13 March 1981, Kohitere Reports 32922, para 10.1.

<sup>667</sup> Annual Report, 1972, Kohitere Reports, 13322, p 11.

<sup>668</sup> Annual Report 1973, Kohitere Reports, 13322, p 2.

In 1976, the programme was structured around 3 stages; schooling, work training on-site and then work training in the community.<sup>669</sup> The involvement of boys in planning their programme meant that boys realised they could influence their length of stay and this led to an increasing number of requests by boys to stay at Kohitere longer.<sup>670</sup>

During the late 1970s, an intensive and highly formalised form of casework recording developed, known as the Kohitere diary, where plans made and goals set.<sup>671</sup>

Small group work was also carried out in the late 1970s, with groups of 6-8 new admissions formed approximately every three weeks, focussing on issues experienced at Kohitere and how to deal with them.<sup>672</sup>

The Camp Peek facility was developed in the early- to mid-1970s, providing outdoor experiences such as bushcraft, tramping, canoeing and rockclimbing. Camp Peek also had a confidence course.<sup>673</sup> Several groups of 10 boys spent weekends at Camp Peek in 1971.<sup>674</sup> In 1976, long-term stays of six weeks were offered as well as shorter, week-long camps – both could accommodate up to 16 boys.<sup>675</sup>

The programmes available in about the early 1980s are set out in the publication "Kohitere".<sup>676</sup> Programmes included the school programme, social education (hygiene, social skills, drugs, smoking and alcohol modules, peer and family relationships, sexuality, coping skills), recreation (e.g., a range of sports, Māori culture, pottery, wood sculpting, army training, cooking, art, guitar, welding )and job training.<sup>677</sup>

A 1981 Inspection report found case work to be superficial, with little in-depth personal work done.<sup>678</sup> A follow up report later in 1981 stated the view of the Principal that the programme was adequate for the majority of boys admitted and that issues arose because of the unfavourable staff/resident ratio at Kohitere.<sup>679</sup> Subsequent inspections did not comment on case-work. While these reports noted the positive effects of a stable and experienced group of local staff, further staff training was recommended, along with formal supervision and more emphasis on planned programmes and care.<sup>680</sup>

<sup>669</sup> Kohitere, Levin, DSW, 1976, Kohitere Profile F5000001643102.

<sup>670</sup> Annual Review, 1976, Kohitere Reports, 13322.

<sup>671</sup> Kohitere Inspection 2-13 March 1981, Kohitere Reports 32922, para 5.3.

<sup>672</sup> DJ Dunlop, Senior Housemaster, 11/1/78, Kohitere, xx, 13322.

<sup>673</sup> P Swain, Director Camp Peek to Director, Otahuhu, 16/5/78, Kohitere Profile, F5000002388341.

<sup>674</sup> Annual Report 1971, Kohitere Reports, 13322, p 9.

<sup>675</sup> P Swain, Director Camp Peek to Director, Otahuhu, 16/5/78, Kohitere Profile, F5000002388341.

<sup>676</sup> Kohitere, circa 1981, Kohitere Profile, F5000002358407.

<sup>677</sup> Kohitere, circa 1981, Kohitere Profile, F5000002358407.

<sup>678</sup> Kohitere Inspection 2-13 March 1981, Kohitere Reports 32922, para 5.4.

<sup>679</sup> B Manchester, Assistant Director-General (Social Work) to Principal Kohitere, "Follow up Visit to Kohitere" 18/12/81, Kohitere Reports, ADM 21-6-202 Part Two.

<sup>680</sup> See, for example, Audit Report, July 1987, Kohitere Reports, ADM 21-6-202 Part Two. Audit Report, May-June 1988, Kohitere Reports, ADM 21-6-202 Part Two.

## Work and training

In 1962/63 a number of boys were working in Levin. The previous system of placing these boys in one Kohitere cottage was changed to one where they were dispersed across cottages, so as to better integrate them into the institution.<sup>681</sup>

In 1962/63, the trade training section ran a workshop, buildings and maintenance team, motor workshop, painting and laundry work. A farm section also operated, employing 12 boys in farm work and another 12 on the grounds and in the vegetable garden.<sup>682</sup> In 1963 an adjoining 63-acre dairy farm was purchased.<sup>683</sup>

In 1965, 14 boys were employed in seven different jobs for an average of 9 ½ weeks. Groups of boys also undertook short-term community projects.<sup>684</sup> Numbers employed in town were 11 in 1967 and 25 in 1968.<sup>685</sup> Forty-three boys were employed off-site in 1969<sup>686</sup> and 44 in 1970.<sup>687</sup>

In 1968 it was noted that although not many boys would go on to take up apprenticeships, trade training at Kohitere provided useful and meaningful employment while in the institution and gave the boys some handy skills.<sup>688</sup>

In 1971, 64 boys were involved in work and training outside the institution.<sup>689</sup> The 1972 figure was 65.<sup>690</sup> A younger group of boys attended work as well as school, and this proved to suit boys who were not able to settle into school work.<sup>691</sup> However, by 1974, this was proving a disruptive arrangement and a phased approach was implemented instead – with boys progressing from school to vocational training to day service in the community.<sup>692</sup> The younger age of residents also affected vocational training, with younger boys being less physically developed and said to have a poorer attitude towards work.<sup>693</sup>

Work and training programmes were also affected by general economic labour force trends, for example, less work was available for Kohitere boys when unemployment was high.<sup>694</sup>

Nominal wages were paid by employers. Boys paid board out of their earnings and were also expected to buy their own clothes. In 1976, \$5308 was received in board payments, and it was not uncommon for boys to leave Kohitere with \$300-\$600 in savings. That year, 25 boys were involved in full time outside employment.<sup>695</sup>

<sup>681</sup> Annual Report 1962/63, Kohitere Reports, 32922.

<sup>682</sup> Annual Report 1962/63, Kohitere Reports, 32922.

<sup>683</sup> Annual Report 1963, Kohitere Reports, 32922.

<sup>684</sup> Annual Report 1965, Kohitere Reports 32922, p 12.

<sup>685</sup> Annual Report, 1968, Kohitere Reports 32922, p 9.

<sup>686</sup> Annual Report 1969, Kohitere Reports 32922, p 3.

<sup>687</sup> Annual Report 1969, Kohitere Reports 32922, p 3.

<sup>688</sup> Annual Report, 1968, Kohitere Reports 32922 p 67.

<sup>689</sup> Annual Report, 1971, Kohitere Reports 13322 p 3.

<sup>690</sup> Annual Report, 1972, Kohitere Reports 13322 p 2.

<sup>691</sup> Annual Report, 1971, Kohitere Reports 13322 p 3.

<sup>692</sup> Annual Report, 1973, Kohitere Education, 13322.

<sup>693</sup> Annual Report 1973, Kohitere Reports, 13322, p 7.

<sup>694</sup> See, for example, Kohitere Inspection Report 2-13 March 1981, Kohitere Reports 32922, para 10.12.

<sup>695</sup> Annual Report, 1976, Kohitere Reports, 13322, p 2.

In 1977, the day service scheme involved fewer boys.<sup>696</sup> That year, the shearing courses were very successful, with a number of boys gaining certification, including an Intermediate NZ Wool Board Certificate at Massey University.<sup>697</sup> The painting gang also had a successful year.

In 1981, it was not known how many boys from trade training went on to do apprenticeships or related work.<sup>698</sup>

Questions were also raised about the suitability of the work programme in terms of the needs of urban boys. As one researcher put it in 1984 "why does Kohitere persist in taking boys from the cities, training them for rural work and then returning them to the cities?"<sup>699</sup>

In 1986, boys over 15 who were offered schooling at Kohitere made favourable comments about their experience.<sup>700</sup> In the same report, downscaling of the forestry and farm training programme was suggested, especially as many boys returned to an urban environment unable to practice these skills. In addition, some boys were unable to cope with the physical demands of these occupations. This fact had also been mentioned in an Inspection Report of 1981.<sup>701</sup>

## Resident-to-resident issues

The changing nature of inmates during the early 1960s, especially the growth of a "hard core" of those boys bullying, stealing from and extorting others, affected the institution. This behaviour also made some of the previously successful behaviour management techniques less effective.<sup>702</sup> An incident of one boy pounding another with heavy blows to the face and head was reported in 1973.<sup>703</sup>

Incidents of bullying were punished with time in secure in Kohitere in 1968.<sup>704</sup>

A 1984 study noted that new boys and those lower in the pecking order at Kohitere were called "spankers", and performed tasks such as cleaning other boys' boots.<sup>705</sup> This study also reported that boys were "stomped" or beaten up by other boys when first admitted.<sup>706</sup>

## Health and medication

In 1956, visits by the psychologist were twice monthly but expected to double.<sup>707</sup> Dental care in 1956 was considered regular and adequate.<sup>708</sup>

<sup>696</sup> Annual Report, 1977, Kohitere Reports 13322 p 2.

<sup>697</sup> Annual Review, 1977, Kohitere Reports, 13322, p 2.

<sup>698</sup> Annual Report 1981, Kohitere Reports 32922.

<sup>699</sup> Drew, John, (1984) *Kohitere Follow-up Study*, Massey University at 18.

<sup>700</sup> Annual Report 1986, Kohitere Reports, ADM 21-6-202.

<sup>701</sup> Kohitere Inspection 2-13 March 1981, Kohitere Reports 32922, para 9.16.

<sup>702</sup> Annual Report 1964, Kohitere Reports 32922, pp 4, 10.

<sup>703</sup> MP Doolan, Acting Principal to Assistant Director, 23/10/73, Kohitere Incidents F5000005769782.

<sup>704</sup> Annual Report 1968, Kohitere Reports 32922 p 4.

<sup>705</sup> Drew, John, (1984) *Kohitere Follow-up Study*, Massey University at 23.

<sup>706</sup> Drew, John, (1984) *Kohitere Follow-up Study*, Massey University at 24.

<sup>707</sup> DG Reilly, Inspector to Superintendent, 27/6/57, visit of 8/12/56, Kohitere Reports 32572.

Psychological services in 1958 consisted of twice monthly visits from a psychologist and one afternoon a month from a psychiatrist. Visits were made weekly in 1963.<sup>709</sup> In 1963, there were 5 cases of hepatitis.<sup>710</sup>

Problems associated with a growing number of inmates with psychiatric problems were noted in 1965, when 5 boys were transferred to psychiatric hospital.<sup>711</sup> During 1965, a shortage of psychologists reduced the visiting psychologist's visits to one per month.<sup>712</sup> In 1965, a Circular Memorandum requested that psychiatric examinations be conducted in districts prior to admission to Kohitere, due to the scarcity of local resources.<sup>713</sup> Twice monthly visits were re-instated in 1966, but this was still short of meeting existing needs.<sup>714</sup> During 1966 there was one attempted suicide.<sup>715</sup>

In 1967 there were 21 hospital admissions – two for injuries after fights.<sup>716</sup> Fifty-eight boys were affected by an outbreak of influenza in the institution in 1969.<sup>717</sup>

In 1971, eight trainees were psychologically examined, and discussions held in regard to a further five boys on matters such as medication.<sup>718</sup> Hospital admissions that year (20 admissions) mainly related to accidents in forestry work. All trainees were inoculated against tetanus and given Xrays as well as HEAF and SCHICK tests.<sup>719</sup>

In 1972, visits by the psychologist were halved while one psychologist was on leave, and visits by the psychiatrist were also severely reduced.<sup>720</sup> That year, there was also a severe outbreak of influenza, resulting in the hospitalisation of five boys with pneumonia.<sup>721</sup>

In 1973, three boys were admitted to Lake Alice psychiatric hospital, with one boy discharged home and the other two discharged from hospital back to Kohitere.<sup>722</sup>

In 1976, Psychological Services visited,<sup>723</sup> as did a consulting physician. The School Medical Service provided medical tests.<sup>723</sup>

The Senior Counsellor and Principal of Kohitere approached the Superintendent in writing in 1972 about the need for a policy for EEG testing and for medication. Once boys in Kohitere were placed on medication for emotional or behavioural disorders, this was seldom reviewed. The lack of observations made about the effects of medication and any progress meant that many boys stayed on medication without any plan.<sup>724</sup>

<sup>708</sup> DG Reilly, Inspector to Superintendent, 27/6/57, visit of 8/12/56, Kohitere Reports 32572.

<sup>709</sup> Annual Report 1962/63, Kohitere Reports, 32922.

<sup>710</sup> Annual Report 1963, Kohitere Reports, 32922.

<sup>711</sup> Annual Report 1965, Kohitere Reports 32922, p1.

<sup>712</sup> Annual Report 1965, Kohitere Reports 32922, p 4.

<sup>713</sup> Circular Memorandum 1965/98, 23/11/65, Kohitere Health, 32573.

<sup>714</sup> Annual Report 1966, Kohitere Reports 32922, p 3.

<sup>715</sup> Annual Report 1966, Kohitere Reports 32922, p 4.

<sup>716</sup> Annual Report 1967, Kohitere Reports 32922, p 4.

<sup>717</sup> Annual Report 1969, Kohitere Reports 32922, p 12.

<sup>718</sup> Annual Report, 1971, Kohitere Reports, 13322, p 3.

<sup>719</sup> Annual Report, 1971, Kohitere Reports, 13322, p 9.

<sup>720</sup> Annual Report, 1972, Kohitere Reports, 13322, p4.

<sup>721</sup> Annual Report, 1972, Kohitere Reports, 13322, p 11.

<sup>722</sup> Annual Report 1973, Kohitere Reports, 13322, p 5.

<sup>723</sup> Kohitere, Levin, DSW, 1976, Kohitere Profile F5000001643102.

<sup>724</sup> GL Hermansson, Senior Counsellor to Principal Kohitere, 9/3/72, Kohitere Health 32580.

Although the Social Workers' Manual required each boy to have a medical certificate on admission, this policy was not applied, resulting in a raft of admissions to Kohitere during 1975 where boys had head lice, scabies and impetigo. The Principal instituted a policy of not admitting boys who did not have a medical certificate from their district. This was because the alternative of requiring "close scrutiny of scalp, pubis, and torso by non-medical personnel is a dehumanizing introduction to an institution which purports to respect individual dignity".<sup>725</sup>

## Psychiatric hospital placement

In 1965 it was noted that Magistrates sometimes remanded boys to a psychiatric hospital.<sup>726</sup> In 1965, five boys were transferred from Kohitere to a psychiatric hospital.<sup>727</sup> In 1967, three boys were transferred, two as a result of suicide attempts.<sup>728</sup> The number of transfers in 1968 was seven.<sup>729</sup>

Five boys were placed on medication in 1970 and three of these five were subsequently sent to Porirua Hospital.<sup>730</sup>

## Staffing

The Manager of Kohitere also had overall responsibility for Hokio, with Hokio gaining more independence during the 1960s and 70s.<sup>731</sup>

In 1957, the Inspector, Mr Reilly, noted that the Manager failed to delegate responsibility to staff and that it was difficult to discuss ideas with him.<sup>732</sup>

In 1964, Mr Reilly was also concerned at the Manager's attitude that he, and only he, could exert control over residents.<sup>733</sup> There was also a high turnover of Housemasters in 1964.<sup>734</sup>

Another year of staff shortages and vacancies was experienced in 1966.<sup>735</sup> The position of recreation officer was vacant for 14 months in 1967-68.<sup>736</sup>

A staff training committee was set up in 1967.<sup>737</sup> There were shortages in senior staff in 1968.<sup>738</sup>

A comprehensive in-service training programme was set up in 1972. Groups of staff meet weekly, for example, housemasters, instructors. That year there was also

<sup>725</sup> PT Woulfe, Principal to Director-General, 30/6/75, Kohitere Health 32580.

<sup>726</sup> Circular Memorandum 1965/98, 23/11/65, Kohitere Health, 32573.

<sup>727</sup> Annual Report 1965, Kohitere Reports 32922, p 1.

<sup>728</sup> Annual Report 1967, Kohitere Reports 32922, p 1.

<sup>729</sup> Annual Report 1968, Kohitere Reports 32922, p 1.

<sup>730</sup> Annual Report 1969, Kohitere Reports 32922, p 4.

<sup>731</sup> See for example, Circular Memorandum 1967/41, 7/7/67, Kohitere Profile, F500002843733.

<sup>732</sup> DG Reilly, Inspector to Superintendent, 27/6/57, visit of 8/12/56, Kohitere Reports 32572.

<sup>733</sup> DG Reilly to Anderson, 4/12/64. Kohitere Profile, 32573.

<sup>734</sup> Annual Report 1964, Kohitere Reports 32922, p 7.

<sup>735</sup> Annual Report, 1966, Kohitere Reports 32922 p 6.

<sup>736</sup> Annual Report, 1968, Kohitere Reports 32922 p 4.

<sup>737</sup> Annual Report 1967, Kohitere Reports 32922, p 6.

<sup>738</sup> Annual Report, 1968, Kohitere Reports 32922 p 6.

considerable interaction between Kohitere and the Residential Staff Training School on the property, but it was also a year of constant staff shortages at Kohitere created by long delays in appointing new staff.<sup>739</sup>

In 1976, boys were admitted to either Tui or Kiwi House, and each boy was assigned to the caseload of a housemaster who looked after his general welfare throughout the whole stay.<sup>740</sup> At this time, there were 82 staff members.<sup>741</sup> The 1976 Annual Review asserts that ratios of staff to boys were less favourable at Kohitere than at Kingslea and Weymouth, noting, for example, that sometimes two staff were responsible for 50 boys in the evening. Staff training opportunities were also limited that year due to staff shortages. The same report noted that staff shortages had become "about normal" at Kohitere.<sup>742</sup>

The 1977 Annual Review stated that relations between staff and boys were very healthy and that good relationships were necessary if the institution was to achieve its purpose.<sup>743</sup> That report also noted that a very healthy aspect of the attitude of new young staff was "their incessant demands for some form of ongoing training".<sup>744</sup>

In 1978, 27 staff began the Residential Care Association Certificate, and 19 successfully completed it. The course took place over 27 two-hourly sessions.<sup>745</sup> Monthly casework notes for file were also extended in 1978.<sup>746</sup>

The Kohitere diary system was introduced in 1979. The intent of the diary was to involve boys in planning for their future.<sup>747</sup> A training brochure was introduced for new staff, with exercises to complete. This lessened the need for Controlling Officers to hold regular training sessions and allowed the new staff member the flexibility of completing work in their own time.<sup>748</sup>

In the 1979 Annual Report, the Principal noted that he was not satisfied with the internal staff training programme.<sup>749</sup>

A student unit was set up at Kohitere by the Department in 1980. The unit provided practical experience to social work students from Victoria and Massey Universities.<sup>750</sup>

The position of recreation officer was vacant for the 3 years up to 1981.<sup>751</sup>

One resident made a written complaint against two Kohitere staff in [REDACTED]. In relation to the first staff member [REDACTED], the boy alleged that he had been punched on the chest twice, each time with enough force to make him fall down and then slapped with the back of the staff member's hand across the face, leading to a split lip. He alleged that [REDACTED] did this when he and the boy were alone together in a secure room. In respect of the second staff member (Mr [REDACTED]), it was alleged that the

<sup>739</sup> Annual Report, 1972, Kohitere Reports, 13322, p 4 and p 12.

<sup>740</sup> Kohitere, Levin, DSW, 1976, Kohitere Profile F5000001643102.

<sup>741</sup> Kohitere, Levin, DSW, 1976, Kohitere Profile F5000001643102. This publication contains a simplified chart showing the staffing structure.

<sup>742</sup> Annual Review, 1976, Kohitere Staffing 13322.

<sup>743</sup> Annual Review, 1977, Kohitere Reports, 13322, p 1.

<sup>744</sup> Annual Review, 1977, Kohitere Reports, 13322, p 1.

<sup>745</sup> Annual Report, 1979, Kohitere Reports, 13322.

<sup>746</sup> "Casework" 1978, Kohitere Staffing, 13322.

<sup>747</sup> Annual Review, 1979, Kohitere Reports, 13322.

<sup>748</sup> Annual Review, 1979, Kohitere Reports, 13322.

<sup>749</sup> Annual Review, 1979, Kohitere Reports, 13322.

<sup>750</sup> Residential Social Workers Newsletter, No 22, circa 1981, Kohitere Staffing, F5000005133778.

<sup>751</sup> Kohitere Inspection 2-13 March 1981, Kohitere Reports 32922, para 10.1.



boy was made to lick his spit off the floor when frothing at the mouth while doing push ups. The boy said he had attempted suicide by strangling himself with a towel but he stopped when his nose began to bleed. The resident also alleged that scabs on his knuckles were from being made to do press-ups. The outcome of the complaint is not evident from the material on file.<sup>752</sup>

A 1988 Audit found staff needed a clear direction to work towards and more staff training. Kohitere needed better internal control and monitoring systems.<sup>753</sup>

A Management Plan and Mission Statement were produced in 1990.<sup>754</sup>

## Schooling

Boys under 15 attended school, along with those 15 and over who wished to continue school either full-time or part-time. Individual programmes were created. Those studying for School Certificate or apprenticeships were enrolled with the Correspondence School. Trade training was available in carpentry, painting and motor mechanics. Senior boys nearing discharge worked nearby for 2 – 3 months at a time.

There were staffing difficulties during 1962 due to relief cover for a teacher on long-term sick leave. The school roll during 1962 varied from 17 to 25 boys. In March 1963, a conference came up with a plan to form 3 groups– Group A, working of full-time correspondence pupils capable of attaining School Certificate; Group B, those on independent programmes capable of 2 years post-primary education, and; Group C, those undertaking part-time schooling for regular periods. Group C was considered the most important section of the school, and aimed to let each boy make educational progress during their time at Kohitere. The inability to recruit a second teacher was noted – the position being vacant for over 12 months. In fact, the inability to recruit staff meant that the regrouping could not take place.<sup>755</sup>

During 1963 the school unit was officially named Kohitere School.<sup>756</sup>

A number of school appointments did not last in the environment - for example a teacher recruited to Kohitere in 1963 left after less than a term.<sup>757</sup> Certain types of teachers tended to apply. For example, the preponderance of mature, experienced teachers at Kohitere who were waiting for retirement was called "a situation that does not lend itself to innovative and stimulating programmes".<sup>758</sup>

The Senior Teacher ran the school on his own in 1963 and 1964, and staff shortages meant that little work could be done with boys assessed as "backward readers" or otherwise having educational problems.<sup>759</sup> During this time the school library resources were also built up.<sup>760</sup>

<sup>752</sup> Statement, [redacted] Kohitere Incidents, F5000002843732.

<sup>753</sup> Audit Report, 6/9/88, Kohitere Reports, ADM 21-6-202, Part Two.

<sup>754</sup> Management Plan, Kohitere Resource Centre, 1990, Kohitere Reports F5000001643102.

<sup>755</sup> Annual Report 1962/63, Kohitere Reports, 32922.

<sup>756</sup> Annual Report 1963, Kohitere Reports, 32922.

<sup>757</sup> Annual Report, 1963, Kohitere Reports, 32922.

<sup>758</sup> Kohitere Inspection 2-13 March 1981, Kohitere Reports 32922, para 11.2.

<sup>759</sup> Annual Report 1964, Kohitere Reports 32922, p 7.

<sup>760</sup> Annual Report 1964, Kohitere Reports 32922, p 7.

In 1965, the school was upgraded to a full secondary unit with a staff of 2 full-time and 4 part-time teachers.<sup>761</sup> The additional positions were not immediately filled.<sup>762</sup> In 1967, the full-time roll was steady at around 30 boys, with an increasing number of younger (i.e. 14 year-old) boys.<sup>763</sup> The library was used as an extra classroom in 1968.<sup>764</sup> A further teacher was appointed in 1969.<sup>765</sup>

In 1969 there were 6 school staff – a senior teacher, 3 classroom teachers, a manual instructor and an art specialist. Enrolments were 67 for the year.<sup>766</sup> In 1970, a group of more able students sat School Certificate, with at least one resident gaining admission into the Sixth Form. Two teachers were engaged full time on remedial work.<sup>767</sup> By 1972, all pupils were engaged in a tutorial system, therefore receiving individual attention.<sup>768</sup>

Two classrooms were added in 1973.<sup>769</sup>

In 1976, boys progressed from the school, with most spending a term here, to work training on site, to community work placements. Some boys spent their whole time in Kohitere at school, while others stayed at school only briefly – most spent up to one term in the school.<sup>770</sup>

By 1981, the training and work experience section had a low turnover of instructors.<sup>771</sup> However, this group of staff during 1981 were described as being “only a group in terms of being united by their mixed feelings of inferiority and contempt for many of the residential social work staff”, suggesting staffing tensions between residential social workers and teachers at Kohitere.<sup>772</sup>

## Absconding

In 1962/63 a total of 64 boys absconded in 31 incidents. There were also 31 Court appearances concerning offences committed while boys were absconding from Kohitere during that period.<sup>773</sup> A rise in absconding in 1963 was thought to be due to the weakening influence of more stable boys, while an “unstable and subversive” element rose in influence.<sup>774</sup> The absconding rate dropped again in 1965.<sup>775</sup>

On two occasions in 1964, night staff were hit on the head in order to obtain their keys as part of absconding plans.<sup>776</sup> That year, the sentencing of two Kohitere absconders to a period in the Detention Centre was a new form of penalty.<sup>777</sup>

<sup>761</sup> Annual Report 1965, Kohitere 32922, p 7.

<sup>762</sup> Annual Report 1965, Kohitere Reports 32922, p 6.

<sup>763</sup> Annual Report 1967, Kohitere Reports 32922, p 6.

<sup>764</sup> Annual Report, 1968, Kohitere Reports 32922 p 7.

<sup>765</sup> Annual Report, 1969, Kohitere Reports 32922 p 12.

<sup>766</sup> Annual Report 1969, Kohitere Reports 32922, p 5.

<sup>767</sup> Annual Report, 1971, Kohitere Reports, 13322 p 4.

<sup>768</sup> Annual Report, 1972, Kohitere Reports 13322 p 2

<sup>769</sup> Annual Report 1973, Kohitere Reports, 13322, p 15.

<sup>770</sup> Kohitere, Levin, DSW, 1976, Kohitere Profile F5000001643102.

<sup>771</sup> Kohitere Annual Report 1981, 32922.

<sup>772</sup> Kohitere Annual Report 1981, 32922, p12.

<sup>773</sup> Annual Report 1962/63, Kohitere Reports, 32922.

<sup>774</sup> Annual Report 1963, Kohitere Reports, 32922.

<sup>775</sup> Annual Report 1965, Kohitere Reports 32922, p 2.

<sup>776</sup> Annual Report 1964, Kohitere Reports 32922, p4.

<sup>777</sup> Annual Report 1964, Kohitere Reports 32922, p1.

Of 28 cases relating to Kohitere inmates heard in the Levin Children's Court in 1964, 24 concerned offences committed by Kohitere inmates while absconding from the institution.<sup>778</sup> Around the same number of offences were committed while absconding in 1965, with an additional 8 cases also being heard in the Palmerston North District Court.<sup>779</sup>

A consolidation of the privileges system and changes in supervision of the teams was thought responsible for the drop of two thirds in absconding during 1965 compared to 1964.<sup>780</sup>

In 1966 there were 25 incidents of absconding.<sup>781</sup> Absconding dropped in 1968 as did offending rates while absent from the institution, with no one appearing before the local court in the second half of the year.<sup>782</sup>

There were 17 incidents of absconding involving 36 boys in 1971, an improvement on 1970 figures. Seventeen Court appearances that year related to offences committed by absconders.<sup>783</sup> In 1972 there were 18 incidents of absconding involving 37 boys.<sup>784</sup>

Absconding reached record proportions in 1973, with 27 incidents involving 58 different boys.<sup>785</sup> The Principal felt this was due to the unsettled nature of many boys on admission and to staff shortages.<sup>786</sup>

In 1981, absconders were 61% of total secure admissions and physical training in secure was considered part of the punishment for absconding.<sup>787</sup>

In 1982 and 1983, just over 100 boys absconded per year, which was an increase on previous years (for example, 74 in 1979, 37 in 1980, 85 in 1981).<sup>788</sup>

## Secure care

The increase in secure facilities and especially in maximum secure beds through the 1960s reflects a growing concern with the nature of boys in Kohitere, and the effect of the group influence. For example, in January 1964, there were 2 large group abscondings involving 14 boys.<sup>789</sup>

Those individuals on the run from the group also formed a core part of absconders – this was noticeable for new boys, and often occurred after they had been bullied by other residents.<sup>790</sup> Throughout the early 1960s, more abscondings took place during

<sup>778</sup> Annual Report 1963, Kohitere Reports 32922, p2.

<sup>779</sup> Annual Report 1965, Kohitere Reports 32922, p 2.

<sup>780</sup> Annual Report 1965, Kohitere Reports 32922, p2.

<sup>781</sup> Annual Report 1966, Kohitere Reports 32922, Table 6.

<sup>782</sup> Annual Report, 1968, Kohitere Reports 32922 p2.

<sup>783</sup> Annual Report, 1971, Kohitere Reports, 13322 p 2.

<sup>784</sup> Annual Report 1972, Kohitere Reports, 13322, p 1.

<sup>785</sup> Annual Report 1973, Kohitere Reports, 13322.

<sup>786</sup> Annual Report 1973, Kohitere Reports, 13322, p 8.

<sup>787</sup> Kohitere Inspection 2-13 March 1981, Kohitere Reports 32922, para 8.

<sup>788</sup> Department of Social Welfare Institutions, Analysis of Abscondings 1979-1983, Appendix II, Kohitere Incidents, F5000002186500.

<sup>789</sup> Annual Report 1963, Kohitere Reports 32922, p 2.

<sup>790</sup> Annual Report 1963, Kohitere Reports 32922, p 2.

the week as opposed to at weekends. In 1964, over half of all absconding boys were picked up within 12 hours.<sup>791</sup>

In 1963, the building of a medium secure block with windows, so that its function was apparent, had a very unsettling effect on the boys. The Manager noted a change in basic approach was called for, given the previously open nature of the institution.<sup>792</sup> This change occurred alongside a change in the nature of boys at Kohitere, with a group of stable, settled boys leaving and being replaced by a stronger, more antisocial group ethic and an increase in boys with emotional problems. The Manager responded by placing a greater emphasis on organised activity and concrete short-term goals.<sup>793</sup>

The combining of new admissions with returned absconders and those committing serious offences within the institution as the two main groups using secure care was not without problems. The 1964 Kohitere Annual Report states "The result has been that some new boys have been contaminated by the "old lags", and I am convinced that these two groups must be accommodated separately".<sup>794</sup>

The 1964 Annual Report also called for the building of a maximum security unit, which was completed in June 1967. This unit also affected residents, "becoming a focal point for their hostility towards authority".<sup>795</sup>

The new secure block was closed throughout December 1967 and for 3 periods during 1968 due to a lack of admissions.<sup>796</sup> The new unit had 47 admissions in its first six months. Boys in secure during 1967 spent days working on the farm as well as doing activities in the unit.<sup>797</sup> The average length of stay was 19 days.<sup>798</sup> In October 1967 the Assistant Principal assumed full responsibility for the secure unit. Boys were sent to secure for a pre-determined "sentence", but reduced from 21 days at the Inspector's request, with the Inspector noting that "even prisons do not inflict this penalty".<sup>799</sup> It was also noted that confinement to secure was punishment in itself and that therefore other privileges should remain and only be removed for good reason.<sup>800</sup>

The average length of stay in secure dropped from 19 days to 12 days during 1968. This was a deliberate policy on the part of the Principal because boys experiencing longer stays in the unit "had obviously adjusted to the conditions there and thus it held no fears for them".<sup>801</sup>

The average length of stay in secure in 1969 was 12.5 days.<sup>802</sup> In the late 1960s, approximately 100 admissions were made to secure each year; in 1970 this rose to 155. The rise was attributed in part to the increase in gang-related activity within the institution.<sup>803</sup>

<sup>791</sup> Annual Report 1963, Kohitere Reports 32922, p 2.

<sup>792</sup> Annual Report 1963, Kohitere Reports, 32922.

<sup>793</sup> Annual Report 1963, Kohitere Reports 32922, p 9.

<sup>794</sup> Annual Report 1964, Kohitere Reports 32922.

<sup>795</sup> Annual Report 1966, Kohitere Reports 32922.

<sup>796</sup> Annual Report 1967, Kohitere Reports 32922; Annual Report 1968, Kohitere Reports 32922.

<sup>797</sup> Annual Report 1967, Kohitere Reports 32922.

<sup>798</sup> Annual Report 1967, Kohitere Reports 32922, p 3.

<sup>799</sup> Note for file, DG Reilly, Secure Unit, Kohitere, 27/10/67, Kohitere Secure 13321.

<sup>800</sup> Note for file, DG Reilly, Secure Unit, Kohitere, 27/10/67, Kohitere Secure 13321.

<sup>801</sup> Annual Report 1968, Kohitere Reports 32922 p 4.

<sup>802</sup> Annual Report, 1969, Kohitere Reports 32922 p 3.

<sup>803</sup> Annual Report 1970 Kohitere Reports 32922 p 9.

Understaffing of the secure unit at Kohitere was raised by the Inspector on a visit in 1970, and the rule that two male staff members were to be on duty at all times in secure was re-iterated.<sup>804</sup>

Admissions to secure dropped by 25% in 1971, with one serious incident where a staff member was attacked gaining widespread publicity. That year, boys in secure were given a work project of assembling cartons for a local package manufacturing firm.<sup>805</sup>

In 1972, 58 out of 159 admissions were boys not residing at Kohitere – that is, from Epuni, Hokio and on behalf of other districts in emergencies.<sup>806</sup> An effort was made in 1972 to keep periods of confinement to secure cubicles to an absolute minimum.<sup>807</sup> Attempts to introduce a more positive programme in 1973 were hampered by a lack of staff and unsuitable facilities.<sup>808</sup>

There were concerns about the physical limitations of Kohitere secure facilities in 1973. The Principal stated: "Not only is this building archaic and depressing physically, but it allows little room for the development of a positive programme. We are at the moment more often than not simply putting boys out of circulation by admission to this unit".<sup>809</sup> In addition, these limitations meant that there was no way to use the potential for intense one-on-one work with residents.<sup>810</sup>

This memorandum also mentioned that in 1973 one of the teachers spent an hour a day in the secure unit. In addition, the austerity and cell-like nature the secure unit was said to condition residents for life in Borstal or gaol.<sup>811</sup>

Boys progressed through secure gaining further freedoms as they did so.<sup>812</sup> Eating with staff was a privilege for those in Kohitere secure. Other privileges were watching TV and playing recreational games.<sup>813</sup> Boys had to stand to attention whenever a staff member entered their "cube" unless they were in bed. Boys also had to run at all times except when carrying a plate of food.<sup>814</sup>

In July 1974 all institutions were issued with a departmental policy on the use of secure.<sup>815</sup> These notes were subsequently incorporated into the Residential Workers Manual.<sup>816</sup>

A set of rules for Kohitere secure were drawn up based on the departmental policy. It was noted that while it was not intended to run Kohitere on overly punitive lines, conditions should be sufficiently unattractive to make boys want to earn their release in the shortest time possible.<sup>817</sup> Cases of "short-term emotional upset" went to the Tui detention room. Boys were required to strip to their underwear on admission and change outer clothing. PT sessions were for ½ an hour in the morning. Boys not

<sup>804</sup> Letter of DG Reilly to Principal, 5/6/70, Kohitere Reports 32573.

<sup>805</sup> Annual Report 1971, Kohitere Secure, 13322.

<sup>806</sup> Annual Report 1972, Kohitere Secure, 13322.

<sup>807</sup> Annual Report 1972, Kohitere Secure, 13322.

<sup>808</sup> Annual Report 1973, Kohitere Secure, 13322.

<sup>809</sup> PT Woulfe, Principal to Director-General 23/11/73, Kohitere Secure 32573.

<sup>810</sup> PT Woulfe, Principal to Director-General 23/11/73, Kohitere Secure 32573.

<sup>811</sup> PT Woulfe, Principal to Director-General 23/11/73, Kohitere Secure 32573.

<sup>812</sup> Secure Block Training Programme Appendix J, letter of DG Reilly on behalf of Director-General 16/7/74, Kohitere Secure 32922.

<sup>813</sup> Secure Block Rules, circa 1974-1980, Appendix J, Kohitere Secure 32922.

<sup>814</sup> Secure Block Rules, circa 1974-1980, Appendix J, Kohitere Secure 32922.

<sup>815</sup> DG Reilly for Director General to All Principals and Directors, 16/7/74, Kohitere Secure 32922.

<sup>816</sup> Annual Report 1981, Kohitere Secure 32922, p 8.

<sup>817</sup> Rules for the Operation of Kohitere Secure Block, 10/9/74, Kohitere Secure, F5000004604289.

working outside secure also had another ½ hour PT session in the evening. Bedtime was 8pm and lights out 8.30pm. Daytime supervision was every 20 minutes and hourly at night. The general rule was that no boy was to remain in his cubicle for more than two consecutive hours. Boys on maximum security status were, however, confined to their rooms. Meals were eaten together in the courtyard when fine or in the workroom. Smoking was not permitted in secure.<sup>818</sup>

In 1976, the separate secure unit had 12 beds, and was used for returned absconders, those involved in serious domestic incidents and boys on remand awaiting Court appearance.<sup>819</sup> The Annual Review noted that conditions in secure were inadequate and served to condition boys for Borstal and prison; noting "the comment is often made that the most callous murderer in Paremoremo would have more privileges and facilities available to him than boys admitted to secure at Kohitere".<sup>820</sup>

Two boys charged with murder in separate incidents stayed in the secure unit during 1976 and 1977. The secure unit was described as being "worse than Paremoremo".<sup>821</sup> Special facilities were installed and staffing and schooling provided for their longer term secure care at Kohitere.<sup>822</sup>

The Principal instructed staff to ensure all boys admitted to secure were made aware of their right to have their stay in secure reviewed and be assisted to request a review if necessary. A separate document setting out review rights was given to residents in secure.<sup>823</sup>

During the period 1979-1983, total admissions to secure rose from 148 to 350. Over the same period, the length of stay in secure dropped from 11.7 days to 7.1 days.<sup>824</sup>

In 1981 absconders were the largest group in secure at 61%.<sup>825</sup>

An Inspection in 1981 was critical of aspects of secure care; for example, the inadequate recording of reason for admission (for example, "making life hell"); the use of untrained staff; the emphasis on punishment over rehabilitation, the lack of activities and the average stay for returned absconders of 21 days.<sup>826</sup> The report concluded "the secure unit left us with the feeling that an urgent review of its usage needs to be undertaken".<sup>827</sup>

By 1981, Kohitere reported it used secure as a punishment "occasionally", and that close control of such admissions was kept.<sup>828</sup> A meeting was held to discuss the need for additional secure facilities.<sup>829</sup> The 1981 Annual Report noted "it is generally accepted that the present facilities impose serious limitations on what can be achieved within the secure unit".<sup>830</sup>

<sup>818</sup> Rules for the Operation of Kohitere Secure Block, 10/9/74, Kohitere Secure, F5000004604289.

<sup>819</sup> Kohitere, Levin, DSW, 1976, F5000001643102.

<sup>820</sup> Annual Review, 1976, Kohitere Reports, 13322, p 3.

<sup>821</sup> "Boy living in conditions 'worse than Paremoremo', *The Chronicle*, 2/12/77, Kohitere Secure 32574.

<sup>822</sup> "Solitary life for teen killer", *NZ Truth* 7/12/77, Kohitere Secure 32574.

<sup>823</sup> PT Wouffe, Principal to Secure Staff, 6/10/80, Appendix H and I, Kohitere Secure 32922.

<sup>824</sup> Statistics, District and National Institutions, Kohitere Secure, F5000002186500.

<sup>825</sup> Kohitere Inspection 2-13 March 1981, Kohitere Reports 32922, para 8.

<sup>826</sup> Kohitere Inspection 2-13 March 1981, Kohitere Reports 32922, para 8.

<sup>827</sup> Kohitere Inspection 2-13 March 1981, Kohitere Reports 32922, para 8.

<sup>828</sup> Minutes of meeting to discuss the need for additional secure facilities 13/11/81, Kohitere Secure F5000001643102.

<sup>829</sup> Minutes of meeting to discuss the need for additional secure facilities 13/11/81, Kohitere Secure F5000001643102.

<sup>830</sup> Annual Report 1981, Kohitere Reports ADM 21-6-02 Part Two, p 2.

An information brochure stated that secure was used for short periods only.<sup>831</sup> A 1984 study that focused on the post-Kohitere experience, found that secure was the most hated aspect of the boys' time in care.<sup>832</sup>

Descriptive material published in about 1986 noted that secure serves a variety of purposes; remand, time-out, intensive care and shelter.<sup>833</sup>

Head Office policy in 1987 was to admit boys needing secure care due to the nature of their offences to Kohitere, while other remand cases were to go to Hamilton Boys' Home or Epuni.<sup>834</sup>

An audit in 1987 found compliance with the 1986 regulations relating to secure care, admission procedures and grievance procedures.<sup>835</sup>

In December 1988, the Assistant Director of Kohitere wrote to Districts noting that the secure unit's use would be far more limited once refurbishments were complete.<sup>836</sup>

## Discipline

In 1956, pocket money was described as the major disciplinary measure.<sup>837</sup> Other privileges that could be lost through misbehaviour were smoking (for those over 15), trips to the pictures and other outings.<sup>838</sup>

Deprivation of privileges was seen as appropriate in the 1960s, in situations where the punishment fit the crime, for example, no smoking for a week for supplying a resident under 15 with tobacco.<sup>839</sup>

The practice of lockable time out involved locking young people in a room for a short "cooling off" period. The short nature distinguishes this disciplinary practice from the use of secure and separate facilities were used for each type of action. Periods of time-out could last up to 3 hours.<sup>840</sup> In 1968, four rooms in Kiwi House had locks on the doors and these were used to lock in boys who were bringing pressure to bear on other boys at night.<sup>841</sup> Lockable time out was subsequently prohibited by the 1986 regulations.

The most common disciplinary measure employed in the 1960s was the loss of pocket money (which was seen as a privilege). Other privileges that could be lost

<sup>831</sup> "Kohitere" circa 1983, Kohitere Profile F5000002388341.

<sup>832</sup> Drew, John, (1984) *Kohitere Follow-up Study*, Massey University at 24 and 39.

<sup>833</sup> Untitled, circa 1986, Kohitere Secure F5000002179896.

<sup>834</sup> J Worfolk, Regional Executive Officer (Residential Services) to Central Region Directors, Principals of Kohitere, Epuni, and REO, Central South, 9/6/87, Kohitere Admissions F5000004247349.

<sup>835</sup> Audit Report July 1987, Kohitere Reports ADM 21-6-202 Part Two.

<sup>836</sup> P Kennedy-Good, Assistant Director to Director, Wairoa, 21/12/88, Kohitere Secure 32922.

<sup>837</sup> EJ Stanley, Manager, Boys' Training Centre, draft section of Manual, 14/11/56, Kohitere Profile, NZ Archives Product Number 2006/24605.

<sup>838</sup> EJ Stanley, Manager, Boys' Training Centre, draft section of Manual, 14/11/56, Kohitere Profile, NZ Archives Product Number 2006/24605.

<sup>839</sup> 'Kohitere' A National Centre for the Long Term Training of Delinquent Boys, 1968, Kohitere Reports 6/90/1, 32573, p 6.

<sup>840</sup> BC Atwool, Principal to Superintendent 12/2/68, Kohitere Secure, 32573.

<sup>841</sup> BC Atwool, Principal to Superintendent 12/2/68, Kohitere Secure, 32573.

through disciplinary measures were smoking, trips to the movies and TV time. Demotion on the reliability promotion ladder was also possible.<sup>842</sup> In 1963, a new incentives system was trialled, where boys could move between a villa and cottage according to behaviour. The intended team spirit that the new system sought to achieve did not occur, and many boys appeared to miss the more specific and concrete goals of the progressive system.<sup>843</sup> The House system was reinstated in 1964.<sup>844</sup>

Pocket money was used as an incentive to improve behaviour. In 1964 at Kohitere, pocket money was split into separate amounts for work, behaviour, reliability grouping and team effort. Charts were used to display progress.<sup>845</sup> While this created a lot of work for staff, the interest taken in the system by the boys made it worthwhile.<sup>846</sup> Payment of pocket money in cash was suspended but re-introduced on a trial basis in December 1966.<sup>847</sup> In 1967, one-third of pocket money was compulsorily banked because boys were short of money for leave and on discharge. This led to problems for smokers, who could not afford to buy cigarettes with the remaining allowance. A request was made to Head Office to see if this could be solved by the cheap supply of tobacco from the Ministry of Justice.<sup>848</sup> Pocket money was increased to \$1 from 75 cents in 1969, enabling more use of pocket money as an incentive scheme.<sup>849</sup> However, due to inflation, the purchasing power of pocket money declined in 1970.<sup>850</sup> At this time, deductions from pocket money remained the main disciplinary measure.<sup>851</sup> The 1973 Annual Report notes a shift to use pocket money in a more positive way, as a reward for effort and performance, with deductions kept to a minimum, especially where other penalties were available. The number of boys drawing near maximum pocket money increased during 1973 as a result.<sup>852</sup>

Group punishments were used. For example, bad behaviour while in the community affected the privileges of the whole group.<sup>853</sup> If a boy drew on a book while in secure in 1974, all books were removed from the secure unit.<sup>854</sup> Group punishments were subsequently prohibited by the 1986 Regulations.

## Physical punishment

In 1956, corporal punishment was described as being used only rarely and for serious offences.<sup>855</sup>

<sup>842</sup> 1958 Field Officers Manual.

<sup>843</sup> Annual Report 1963, Kohitere Reports 32922, p 3.

<sup>844</sup> Annual Report 1964, Kohitere Reports 32922, p 3.

<sup>845</sup> 'Kohitere' A National Centre for the Long Term Training of Delinquent Boys, 1968, Kohitere Reports 6/90/1, 32573, p 6.

<sup>846</sup> Annual Report 1964, Kohitere Reports 32922, p 4.

<sup>847</sup> Annual Report 1966, Kohitere Reports 32922, p 3.

<sup>848</sup> Annual Report 1967, Kohitere Reports 32922, p 3.

<sup>849</sup> Annual Report 1969, Kohitere Reports 32922, p 3.

<sup>850</sup> Annual Report 1969, Kohitere Reports 32922, p 2.

<sup>851</sup> Annual Report, 1971, Kohitere Reports, 13322 p 3.

<sup>852</sup> Annual Report 1973, Kohitere Reports, 13322, p 7.

<sup>853</sup> 'Kohitere' A National Centre for the Long Term Training of Delinquent Boys, 1968, Kohitere Reports 6/90/1, 32573, p 8.

<sup>854</sup> Secure Block Rules, Kohitere file 32922.

<sup>855</sup> EJ Stanley, Manager, Boys' Training Centre, draft section of Manual, 14/11/56, Kohitere Profile, NZ Archives Product Number 2006/24605.



A punishment return in 1966 showed that nine boys received corporal punishment in the month of October 1966. Offences included absconding and car conversion as well as the use of foul language and persistent lying. Most boys received 6 straps on the buttocks. Punishment was administered by the Principal.<sup>856</sup>

Corporal punishment was described as being phased out and used very occasionally in 1968.<sup>857</sup>

A group of returned absconders were put on a "crash get-fit programme" in secure in 1973, with the Principal hoping that the rigorous physical exercise would "make them think twice before repeating the performance."<sup>858</sup>

Physical training was considered a punishment in secure care regime in Kohitere in 1981.<sup>859</sup>

## Drugs, alcohol and tattoos

The increasing incidence of glue sniffing, and of addiction to glue, was noted in 1979. The number of boys with experience of cannabis was also noted.<sup>860</sup>

The presence of cannabis in Kohitere was noted as part of an incident report in 1986.<sup>861</sup>

## Smoking

In 1949, a parent was advised not to send tobacco as boys were able to buy all they needed out of their pocket money at the institution.<sup>862</sup>

In the 1958 Field Officers Manual, smoking was described as a privilege that could be lost as a means of discipline in the residence.<sup>863</sup> This is backed up by a 1955 memo to the Superintendent from the Acting Manger of the Boys Training Centre in Levin requesting an increase in the tobacco allowance, viz "you will be aware this in this Institution the availability of tobacco ranks very high in the minds of the boys and thus with other privileges becomes one of our major disciplinary aids. As I have indicated in another memorandum consideration is being given to many ways and means of raising the present tone and standard of the Centre and I feel that if permission is granted to increase the tobacco allowance I shall have a very powerful instrument in my hand".<sup>864</sup>

<sup>856</sup> Punishment Return, 28/11/66, Kohitere Discipline, Archives File 2006000235.

<sup>857</sup> 'Kohitere' A National Centre for the Long Term Training of Delinquent Boys, 1968, Kohitere Reports 6/90/1, 32573.

<sup>858</sup> TK North, Principal to Superintendent, 29/6/73, Kohitere Discipline F5000005769782.

<sup>859</sup> Kohitere Inspection 2-13 March 1981, Kohitere Reports 32922, para 8.

<sup>860</sup> Annual Report, 1979, Kohitere Reports, 13322.

<sup>861</sup> Statement, 12/2/86, Kohitere Incidents F5000002843732.

<sup>862</sup> LS Abbott, Resident Housemaster, 1/2/49, Kohitere Profile NZ Archives 2006002367.

<sup>863</sup> See, for example, Q54 Field Officers Manual 1958 in respect of Kohitere.

<sup>864</sup> LS Abbott Acting Manager Kohitere to Superintendent 28/2/55, Kohitere Smoking/drugs, 32571.

A letter to a parent in 1966 noted that while all boys over 15 were allowed to smoke, tobacco was rationed and boys were encouraged not to smoke.<sup>865</sup>

### Contact with field social workers

Boys were supposed to visit their field social worker during home leave. In 1965, a lack of reports of home leave from field social workers was noted as a problem.<sup>866</sup> In 1968, problems were experienced in delays getting replies from districts for home leave proposals.<sup>867</sup>

Discharged trainees remained wards of the state until the department decided they were sufficiently independent to no longer require care and oversight.<sup>868</sup>

The 1987 Annual Review noted that Kohitere had endeavoured to maintain close relationships with Field Social Workers, but that increasing numbers of field staff were largely unfamiliar with the purpose of the institution. However, having field and residential staff work together on a boy's treatment plan was proving to be successful.<sup>869</sup>

### Contact with community

Throughout its existence, Kohitere had a lot of contact with the local community. For example, during 1962/63, contact between the institution and Rotary, Lions, and St Johns' Ambulance occurred.<sup>870</sup> The 1964 Annual Report stated that: "the Centre has again been well accepted by and played a full part in the life of the local community".<sup>871</sup> In 1968, the comment was made that "in general, the relations between the Institution and the surrounding community are very good".<sup>872</sup>

An Inspector in 1957 thought that community links were very beneficial, but that the loaning out of the institution's loud speaker system was taking too much time.<sup>873</sup>

During the 1960s, girls from Palmerston North Teachers' College attended social dances at Kohitere.<sup>874</sup> In 1968, boys were allowed to go into Levin unaccompanied once they had reached a certain level of behaviour and reliability.<sup>875</sup>

Community work was also a way of attempting to teach inmates the value of doing things for other people.<sup>876</sup> During 1969, boys undertook community work cleaning

<sup>865</sup> BC Atwool 21/9/66, Kohitere Drugs/Smoking, F5000002825998185.

<sup>866</sup> Annual Report 1965, Kohitere Reports 32922, p 2.

<sup>867</sup> Annual Report 1968, Kohitere Reports 32922, p 1.

<sup>868</sup> Kohitere, Levin, DSW, 1976, Kohitere Profile F5000001643102.

<sup>869</sup> Annual Review, 1978, Kohitere Reports 13322, p 3 and 4.

<sup>870</sup> Annual Report 1962/63, Kohitere Reports 32922, p 5.

<sup>871</sup> Annual Report 1964, Kohitere Reports 32922, p 5.

<sup>872</sup> 'Kohitere' A National Centre for the Long Term Training of Delinquent Boys, 1968, Kohitere file 6/90/1, 32573, p 8.

<sup>873</sup> DG Reilly, Inspector to Superintendent, 27/6/57, visit of 8/12/56, Kohitere Reports 32572.

<sup>874</sup> See, for example, Annual Report 1965, Kohitere Reports 32922, p 4.

<sup>875</sup> 'Kohitere' A National Centre for the Long Term Training of Delinquent Boys, 1968, Kohitere Reports 6/90/1, 32573.

<sup>876</sup> 'Kohitere' A National Centre for the Long Term Training of Delinquent Boys, 1968, Kohitere Reports 6/90/1, 32573.

local playgrounds, sorting clothing at CORSO, re-constructing a footbridge on a tramping trail, painting murals at Levin School and at Kimberley Hospital.<sup>877</sup> The Kohitere work programme also fostered community links. For example in 1969 there was a steady rate of enquires from local employers for Kohitere trainees.<sup>878</sup>

By the mid-1970s, contact with the local community occurred through the work experience scheme, Church and club attendance, sports, and through a history of boys assisting on community projects. These ranged from small projects, such as providing firewood to the aged, to larger projects for local non-profit organisations.<sup>879</sup>

The community also came to Kohitere. Lions and other clubs ran programmes on site and sports events were held at the "first-class" facilities at Kohitere.<sup>880</sup> The community also used the gymnasium and swimming pool.<sup>881</sup>

A gala day held in 1976 proved to be a very successful public relations exercise although it did not make much money.<sup>882</sup> A disco held in 1977 also proved popular, and the Kohitere Maori culture group also had a lot of contact with the local community.<sup>883</sup> The 1977 report noted a pleasing improvement in the sportsmanship displayed by boys in sports teams.<sup>884</sup>

Although generally positive, at times the beneficial nature of community contact was questioned. In 1977, allegations were made about sexual assault by local filmmakers working with the boys. The allegations were investigated by police and held to be unfounded.<sup>885</sup>

## Visiting committees

Little was found on file in respect of the Visiting Committee at Kohitere. The 1979 Annual Review noted that both the Principal and the committee members were unsure of their function. The committee visited several times in 1979.<sup>886</sup>

An Inspection report of 1981 found the visiting committee functioning well but visiting infrequently, apart from the member who was also the institution's GP.<sup>887</sup>

The committee visited twice in 1986 in response to complaints. That year the committee was also concerned about the scruffy dress of the boys.<sup>888</sup> The Visiting Committee did not visit at all in 1987 and failed to furnish a report to Head Office on time.<sup>889</sup>

<sup>877</sup> Annual Report, 1969, Kohitere Reports 32922 p 5.

<sup>878</sup> Annual Report, 1969, Kohitere Reports 32922 p 3.

<sup>879</sup> Kohitere, Levin, DSW, 1976, Kohitere Profile F5000001643102.

<sup>880</sup> See, for example, Annual Report, 1968, Kohitere Reports 32922 p 5.

<sup>881</sup> Kohitere Inspection Report 2-13 March 1981, Kohitere Reports 32922, 7.3.

<sup>882</sup> Annual Review, 1976, Kohitere Reports, 13322, p 4.

<sup>883</sup> Annual Review, 1977, Kohitere Reports, 13322, p 2.

<sup>884</sup> Annual Review, 1977, Kohitere Reports, 13322, p 2.

<sup>885</sup> KB Bumside, Commissioner, NZ Police to Director-General, 11/8/77, Kohitere Complaints, 32574.

<sup>886</sup> Annual Review, 1979, Kohitere Reports 13322, p 3.

<sup>887</sup> Kohitere Inspection 2-13 March 1981, Kohitere Reports 32922, para 10.11.

<sup>888</sup> Visiting Committee Annual Reports 1986, Kohitere Reports F5000006661405.

<sup>889</sup> Visiting Committee Annual Reports 1987, Kohitere Reports F5000006661404.

## Contact with families

In 1956, parents were encouraged to visit Kohitere, and meals were provided along with a room where families could visit in private.<sup>890</sup>

A 1956 Inspection recommended that a system of home leave be instigated for Kohitere boys.<sup>891</sup> In 1962/63, 35 boys from Kohitere had been on home leave.<sup>892</sup>

Given the numbers of boys accessing home leave, there were relatively few incidents of trouble while on leave. In 1964, for example, four boys were involved in serious trouble during their home leave.<sup>893</sup>

Home leave operated as a privilege within the institution. The beneficial effect of home leave, both as an incentive for good behaviour within the institution, and as a way of keeping children connected with their families, was noted in several Kohitere Annual Reports in the early 1960s.<sup>894</sup>

In 1965, the time that boys needed to have spent at Kohitere to qualify for home leave was reduced to 4 months in residence and a second holiday in May was introduced.<sup>895</sup>

The 1971 Annual Report noted that 25% of boys did not receive any acknowledgment of Christmas from their families.<sup>896</sup> During that year, over 63% of trainees returned to their homes, reflecting a lack of work or boarding opportunities.<sup>897</sup> In 1972, the number of boys receiving no family contact at Christmas rose to 47%.<sup>898</sup>

In 1972, home leave was extended on a trial basis from one week to two weeks per year.<sup>899</sup>

In 1976, parents could visit at any time, although local families were asked to visit on Sundays. Boys were allowed out for the day with visitors.<sup>900</sup>

Subject to good behaviour, most boys got 2 periods of home leave during their stay in 1976, usually during school holidays.<sup>901</sup> The standard letter to parents encouraged contact – visits, letters and parcels, but noted that as visits tended to unsettle boys, they should not occur too often.<sup>902</sup> Incoming and outgoing mail was also censored.<sup>903</sup>

<sup>890</sup> EJ Stanley, Manager, Boys' Training Centre, draft section of Manual, 14/11/56, Kohitere Profile, NZ Archives Product Number 2006/24605.

<sup>891</sup> DG Reilly, Inspector to Superintendent, 27/6/57, visit of 8/12/56, Kohitere Reports 32572.

<sup>892</sup> Annual Report 1962/63, Kohitere Reports, 32922.

<sup>893</sup> Annual Report 1965, Kohitere Reports 32922, p 2.

<sup>894</sup> Annual Report 1963, Kohitere Reports 32922; Annual Report 1964, Kohitere Reports 32922.

<sup>895</sup> Annual Report 1965, Kohitere Reports 32922, p 2.

<sup>896</sup> Annual Report 1971, Kohitere Reports 13322, p 1.

<sup>897</sup> Annual Report 1971, Kohitere Reports 13322, p 1.

<sup>898</sup> Annual Report 1972, Kohitere Reports, 13322, p 1.

<sup>899</sup> Circular Memorandum 1972/74, 17/10/72, Kohitere Admissions, C0/10/1-15.

<sup>900</sup> Kohitere, Levin, DSW, 1976, Kohitere Profile F5000001643102.

<sup>901</sup> Kohitere, Levin, DSW, 1976, Kohitere Profile F5000001643102.

<sup>902</sup> Standard letter to parents, sent in response to Head Office questionnaire, circa 1983, Kohitere Profile, F5000002388341.

<sup>903</sup> Response to Head Office questionnaire, circa 1983, Kohitere Profile, F5000002388341.

In 1978, some parents escorted their children to Kohitere for admission. The Principal supported this practice because it gave staff a chance to meet a boy's parents.<sup>904</sup>

### Preparation for discharge and after care arrangements

The 1956 Inspection Report, noted the need for constructive after care, especially as many former inmates went on to re-offend, although there was a period of grace for 3 months after release when few offences occurred.<sup>905</sup>

Tighter discharge procedures were instigated in 1967, after boys were waiting long periods for placements back in their district. At Kohitere, each case was reviewed after 6 months, and a target date set for discharge. This date could be brought forward a month for good progress, or delayed for a month if progress was not made. Major trouble resulted in a reassessment. The new requirements were for Kohitere to advise the district of likely discharge date 2 months in advance, and for the district to give 3 weeks notice if placement was not possible.<sup>906</sup>

In 1973, the Principal suggested the appointment of specialist after care officers, especially in the greater Auckland area.<sup>907</sup>

<sup>904</sup> Annual Review, 1978, Kohitere Reports 13322, p 3 and 4.

<sup>905</sup> DG Reilly, Inspector to Superintendent, 27/6/57, visit of 8/12/56, Kohitere Reports 32572.

<sup>906</sup> Circular Memorandum 1967/72, 18/9/67, Kohitere Profile, F5000002358407.

<sup>907</sup> Annual Report 1973, Kohitere Reports, 13322, p 19.

## Chapter 3

# Hokio

### Physical description

The Hokio Beach Section of the Levin Boys' Training Centre began as a beach retreat for staff at the Weraroa Training Farm in the 1920s. Staff used Hokio for holidays, taking boys with them on occasion. Over time, the boys' stays grew longer and facilities were added in an ad-hoc fashion until the institution became permanent.<sup>908</sup>

Open from 1945 to 1990, Hokio was situated on the coast 5 ½ miles from Kohitere and catered for long-stay younger boys, many of whom were considered unsuitable for Boys' Homes. Most admissions came from Boys' Homes, for example, Homes in Auckland, Hamilton or Epuni, with a few boys each year also being admitted directly from their district.

In 1956, there was accommodation for 36 boys in a large dormitory, with four foot high partitions, so that each boy had a cubicle.<sup>909</sup>

In August 1961, Hokio had accommodation for 34 boys, but frequently slept up to 40 by putting out extra beds each night in the dining/recreation area.<sup>910</sup> Approval for extensions was sought in 1961.<sup>911</sup>

In March 1964, upon the completion of new accommodation, there were 45 beds in open accommodation, 14 further beds in a lockable wing, and 2 secure beds (detention rooms), giving a total of 59 beds.<sup>912</sup> At the time, the qualitative as well as the quantitative effect of the increase in size of the institution was noted.<sup>913</sup> A 1966 memorandum noted that 61 boys could be housed if the secure rooms were used as "luxury flats".<sup>914</sup> The total capacity remained at 59 until the 1980s. In the late 1980s, capacity was gradually downsized in preparation for closure at the end of 1989. By September 1988, for example, capacity was 45.<sup>915</sup>

All accommodation was in single rooms from 1964 (previously dormitory accommodation). A manual training block and gymnasium were added in 1966.<sup>916</sup> Staff housing for nine people was added in 1969 (male staff quarters plus a four

<sup>908</sup> Hokio Beach School, undated, Hokio Profile 13341.

<sup>909</sup> EJ Stanley, Manager, Boys' Training Centre, draft section of Manual, 14/11/56, Hokio Profile, NZ Archives Product Number 2006/24605.

<sup>910</sup> Superintendent to Minister in Charge of the Child Welfare Division, 16/8/61, Hokio Profile 32572.

<sup>911</sup> CE Peek, Superintendent to Minister in Charge of Child Welfare Division, 16/8/61, Hokio Profile 32572.

<sup>912</sup> BC Atwool, Manager BTC to Superintendent, 19/8/64, Hokio Profile 32575.

<sup>913</sup> Annual Report 1964, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 32922, p 2.

<sup>914</sup> BC Atwool, Manager BTC to Superintendent, 21/7/66, Hokio Profile 32575.

<sup>915</sup> Audit Report, Hokio Beach School, 12/9/88, Hokio Reports, ADM 21-6-201 Part One, p 1.

<sup>916</sup> Annual Report 1966, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 32922, p 1.

bedroom house).<sup>917</sup> Tennis courts were added in 1968<sup>918</sup> and a swimming pool in 1971.<sup>919</sup>

An inspection in May 1959 raised numerous concerns about the state of the facilities.<sup>920</sup> Concern about dilapidated buildings and the rapid deterioration experienced in the coastal environment was a constant feature of Annual Reports, which included statements such as "The exterior of most of our buildings are in shocking condition and must really offend the eye of visitors".<sup>921</sup> Finally, in what appeared to be an act of desperation, 4 boys were taken out of school for "quite a long period" in 1971 to help with repainting buildings.<sup>922</sup>

In 1970, the surroundings were described as "rugged" – set "seven miles from the road and a stone's throw from the beach, the buildings are set amid rolling sandhills and rough scrub".<sup>923</sup> The natural location was said to provide an ideal playing area.<sup>924</sup>

Buildings were extensively renovated in 1978 and a new library built in 1979.<sup>925</sup>

Other ongoing concerns were the sewage and central heating systems.<sup>926</sup> The 1971 Annual Report noted that "depending on the direction of the wind Hokio often becomes close to uninhabitable because of the smell".<sup>927</sup> Progress on installing a sewage treatment pond in 1971 was described as "painfully slow"<sup>928</sup> a comment that transpired to have a strong predictive element, with alterations still not completed by the end of 1973.<sup>929</sup> In 1981, even after major upgrades of the sewage and drainage system, there were still problems with smells coming from the toilet blocks.<sup>930</sup>

Following the Residential Services Plan Review, bed numbers at Hokio were gradually reduced over 1987 and 1988.<sup>931</sup> Hokio closed at the end of 1989.<sup>932</sup>

## Resident profile

The official age range of boys at Hokio was 10 -14, however during 1967, a broad range of ages were admitted; from 8 ½ to 15 ½ years, and this created problems in meeting diverse needs and in providing a suitable family environment for the younger boys.<sup>933</sup> This changed somewhat after 1971 with the opening of Holdsworth, which took the younger boys, leaving the older grouping at Hokio.

<sup>917</sup> Annual Report 1969, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 13468, p 3.

<sup>918</sup> Annual Report 1968, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 13468, p 2.

<sup>919</sup> Annual Report 1971, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 13468, p 6.

<sup>920</sup> DG Reilly, Visit to Boys' Training Centre, Levin 8-18 May 1959, Hokio Profile 32572.

<sup>921</sup> Annual Report 1970, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 13468, p 3.

<sup>922</sup> Annual Report 1971, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 13468, p 5.

<sup>923</sup> "Training School for State Wards" *The Wanganui Herald*, 11/7/70, Hokio Profile 13343.

<sup>924</sup> Residential Workers Manual, circa 1975/76, DSW, D 9.00.

<sup>925</sup> Annual Report 1978, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 13468, p 3 and Annual Report 1979, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 13468, p 1.

<sup>926</sup> See, for example, Annual Report 1970, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 13468, p 6.

<sup>927</sup> Annual Report 1971, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 13468, p 6.

<sup>928</sup> Annual Report 1972, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 13468, p 3.

<sup>929</sup> Annual Report 1973, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 13468, p 3.

<sup>930</sup> Inspection Visit to Hokio Beach School on 21-26 September 1981, Hokio Reports 32154, p 12.

<sup>931</sup> Audit Report, 28/10/87, Hokio Reports, ADM 21-6-201 Part One.

<sup>932</sup> Audit Report, 12/9/88, Hokio Reports, ADM 21-6-201 Part One.

<sup>933</sup> Annual Report 1967, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 13468, p 3; Annual Report 1969, Hokio Reports 13345.

However, it did not relieve any pressure on the rolls, which quickly filled at both institutions.<sup>934</sup>

By 1972, over 90% of boys at Hokio were aged 13 years or over on admission<sup>935</sup> and this remained the case throughout the 1970s. For example, in 1979 the age range was 12-14 years.<sup>936</sup> Some problems were encountered by the few very young boys.<sup>937</sup> For example, concern was raised in 1975 about a 10 year old boy admitted for his own bullying behaviour, but likely to be bullied himself at Hokio.<sup>938</sup> Discussions sometimes took place about whether Hokio or Holdsworth was the most appropriate institution.<sup>939</sup>

A population of older boys, overwhelmingly consisting of 13 year olds by the mid-1970s, made management easier in some respects, but also meant many boys came to Hokio with a history of offending and obvious and entrenched anti-authoritarian attitudes.<sup>940</sup>

As well as catering for older boys throughout the 1960s and 1970s, boys at Hokio became more likely to be of Māori or Pacific Island descent. For example, in 1974 Māori and Pacific Island boys made up almost 71% of residents in the institution.<sup>941</sup> In 1977 they comprised 80%<sup>942</sup> and by 1978, 89%.<sup>943</sup> This sometimes created problems for the minority of Pākeha residents, especially those small in stature.<sup>944</sup> The 1965 Annual Report expressed dissatisfaction with progress made in respect of Māori boys at Hokio.<sup>945</sup> Hokio responded to the growing numbers of Māori residents by providing cultural programmes. A 1970 newspaper article stated that the philosophy of Hokio was not to force the Māori residents into the Pakeha mould, but to work to "identify them as true Māoris". This article also quoted the Principal as saying that the success rate of Hokio, in terms of re-offending, was about 50%.<sup>946</sup>

Hokio was sometimes referred to as "Junior Kohitere". Initially a sub-section of Kohitere, Hokio was given increasing autonomy over the years.<sup>947</sup> From 1964, Hokio was covered in a separate section of the Boys' Training Centre Annual Reports and from 1966, the two institutions submitted separate reports, although some functions remained interlinked and the Assistant Principal at Hokio was subordinate to the Kohitere Principal. For example, in the mid-1960s, when increased autonomy for Hokio was being discussed, the Principal of Kohitere visited the Hokio site about once a week.<sup>948</sup> In the early 1970s, the Principal of Kohitere still had control over policy matters at Hokio.<sup>949</sup> There were calls for further autonomy in

<sup>934</sup> Annual Report 1971, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 13468, p 2.

<sup>935</sup> Annual Report 1972, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 13468, p 1.

<sup>936</sup> Department of Social Welfare (1979) Directory of Residential facilities for disturbed children in New Zealand, DSW, Wellington.

<sup>937</sup> See, for example, Annual Report 1975, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 13468, p 1.

<sup>938</sup> Annual Report 1975, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 13468, p 1.

<sup>939</sup> See, for example, file note, 3/2/76, Hokio Admissions, 13343.

<sup>940</sup> Annual Report 1977, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 13468, p 1.

<sup>941</sup> Annual Report 1974, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 13468, Table IV.

<sup>942</sup> Annual Report 1978, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 13468, Table IV.

<sup>943</sup> Annual Report 1978 Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 13468, Table IV.

<sup>944</sup> Annual Report 1973, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 13468, p 1.

<sup>945</sup> Annual Report, Boys Training Centre 1965, Hokio Reports 32922, p 17.

<sup>946</sup> "Training School for State Wards" *The Wanganui Herald* 11/7/70, Hokio Profile 13343.

<sup>947</sup> See, for example Circular Memorandum 1967/41, 7/7/67, F5000002843733; Hokio Beach School: Establishment as a Separate Institution, letter from RL Lynex AEO, circa 1964-66, 2/6/33, Hokio Education 13343.

<sup>948</sup> RL Lynex, Hokio Beach School: Establishment as a Separate Institution, circa 1964-66, Hokio Profile 13343.

<sup>949</sup> Annual Report 1973, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 13468, p 4.



1973, especially in regard to lines of authority.<sup>950</sup> In the 1975 Annual Report, the Principal noted that Hokio was the only national institution not to have full independence, and wondered "if the umbilical cord with Kohitere will ever be severed".<sup>951</sup>

There was also a sense of superiority among Hokio staff. A 1981 Inspection Report noted that staff from Hokio did not like being required to work at Kohitere when Hokio emptied for the holidays, because of what they considered "inferior standards of behaviour at Kohitere".<sup>952</sup>

## Length of stay

The average length of stay in 1957 was two and a half years.<sup>953</sup>

There were pressures on beds in the early 1960s while new facilities were built.<sup>954</sup> Numbers of boys in Hokio rose throughout 1964 in response to the extra beds provided by the new accommodation, and this impacted on the nature of the institution, which often operated at, or just above, capacity.<sup>955</sup> For example, during 1969, Hokio operated at 2 or 3 boys over maximum capacity.<sup>956</sup> However, as admissions and discharges tended to occur at the end of term, the population was stable for periods of time. Although there were waiting lists, these were usually cleared at the start of term.<sup>957</sup>

In 1960/61, the average length of stay at Hokio had dropped to just under 2 years (23 months).<sup>958</sup> The average length of stay dropped to 18.9 months by 1964<sup>959</sup> and to 14.7 months by 1968.<sup>960</sup> By 1971, the average length of stay had stabilised to between 13 and 15 months, which was thought by the Principal at the time to be not long enough in some cases.<sup>961</sup> The average length of stay dipped again in 1973, to 11.3 months, when the pressure of urgent admissions led to a pattern of early discharges.<sup>962</sup> From 1975 to 1977 the average length of stay was 13 or 14 months.<sup>963</sup>

The shorter length of stay also reflected the rising age on admission – once boys turned 15, they no longer had to attend school and were eligible for work placement, which usually meant leaving Hokio.<sup>964</sup> Conversely, stay lengthened in 1976 and

<sup>950</sup> Annual Report 1973, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 13468, p 4.

<sup>951</sup> Annual Report 1975, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 13468, p 3.

<sup>952</sup> Inspection Visit to Hokio Beach School on 21-26 September 1981, Hokio Reports, 32154, p 2.

<sup>953</sup> Inspection Visit to the Boys' Training Centre, 27/6/57, Hokio Profile, 32572.

<sup>954</sup> See, for example, Circular Memorandum 1961/63, 4/10/61, more boys in institution than it is equipped for and will be the position until December. Hokio Profile F5000002843733.

<sup>955</sup> See, for example, Annual Report 1967, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 13468, p 3; Annual Report 1968, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 13468, p 5; Annual Report 1969, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 13468, p 7.

<sup>956</sup> Annual Report 1969, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 13468, p 7. See also, Hokio Admissions, data on occupied beds 1965-1971 taken from file 13345.

<sup>957</sup> See, for example, Annual Report 1970, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 13468, p 2; Inspection Visit to Hokio Beach School on 21-26 September 1981, Hokio Reports, 32154, p 2.

<sup>958</sup> Annual Report, Boys Training Centre 1964, Table 5, Hokio Reports 32922.

<sup>959</sup> Annual Report, Boys Training Centre 1964, Table 5, Hokio Reports 32922.

<sup>960</sup> Annual Report, Boys Training Centre 1968, Table 1, Hokio Reports 13468.

<sup>961</sup> Annual Report 1971, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 13468, p 9.

<sup>962</sup> Annual Report 1973, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 13468, p 1.

<sup>963</sup> Annual Report 1977, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 13468, Table V.

<sup>964</sup> Annual Report 1973, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 13468, p 1.

1977, when tighter economic conditions meant that 15 year olds could not get work. The increased length of stay had the effect of blocking new admissions.<sup>965</sup> These patterns continued in 1978 and 1979.<sup>966</sup> Due to the difficulty in obtaining school exemptions, a number of boys in the late 1970s were held until their 15<sup>th</sup> birthday.<sup>967</sup> Some of the older boys were a positive influence, while others were not.

In the mid-60s, most boys left Hokio to return home (for example, 82.7% in 1966) but by the end of the decade only 55% did so. There was a corresponding rise in the number of boys who left Hokio for another institution, often Kohitere.<sup>968</sup> Smaller numbers spent time in the Levin Boys' Home as a transition back to the community from 1970.

In October 1974, admitting boys only on Thursdays was trialled at both Kohitere and Hokio, in order to allow for better planning and programming.<sup>969</sup>

Occupancy in 1979 averaged 54 boys and in 1980 averaged 56 boys.<sup>970</sup> At the end of 1979 it was noted that "Hokio is always full", with a constant waiting list.<sup>971</sup> In response to pressure on Hokio, the principals of Hokio and Kohitere had agreed to send 15 year old boys with one term remaining before discharge to Kohitere for work experience.<sup>972</sup>

The average length of stay in 1982 was 59 days, dropping slightly to 47 days in 1983.<sup>973</sup>

Hokio was full in October 1983, with districts advised that there would be no places available in the school until at least the first term of 1984.<sup>974</sup> In 1985 it was noted that the greater throughput at Hokio reflected a change in management policy towards shorter stays and a greater use of the Kohitere work training option.<sup>975</sup> An Audit report in 1988 noted that Hokio had always operated close to its maximum roll.<sup>976</sup>

<sup>965</sup> Annual Report 1976, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 13468, p 3; Annual Report 1977, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 13468, p 2.

<sup>966</sup> Annual Report 1978, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 13468, p1-2; Annual Report 1979, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 13468, p 2.

<sup>967</sup> Annual Report 1978, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 13468.

<sup>968</sup> Annual Report 1970, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 13468, Table I.

<sup>969</sup> Circular Memorandum, 1974/81, 7/10/74, Hokio Admissions, CO/10/1-10.

<sup>970</sup> Nominal roll, daily average, statistics, circa 1981, Hokio Admissions, F5000002388341.

<sup>971</sup> "Possible effects of Admitting Beck House Children to Holdsworth", 21/12/79, Hokio Admissions, MSD 3142A.

<sup>972</sup> "Possible effects of Admitting Beck House Children to Holdsworth", 21/12/79, Hokio Admissions, MSD 3142A.

<sup>973</sup> National Office statistics, Appendix G, Average length of stay, Hokio Admissions, F5000002186500.

<sup>974</sup> Circular Memorandum 1983/139, 7/10/83, Hokio Admissions CO/10/1-22. See also, Institution Statistics 1984, 4/11/85, Hokio Admissions, F5000002186501.

<sup>975</sup> Institution Statistics 1984, 4/11/85, MP Doolan to Director-General, Hokio Admissions, F5000002186501.

<sup>976</sup> Audit Report, 12/9/88, Hokio Reports, ADM 21-6-201 Part One.

## Programmes and care

The institution aimed for a boarding school environment and made use of the surrounding terrain including the adjoining creek, beach and sand hills for outdoor activities. Visitors often remarked on the relaxed atmosphere of Hokio.<sup>977</sup>

In 1956, the manager remarked that the Hokio programmes were similar to those at neighbouring Kohitere, but that there was more organisation of leisure activities at Hokio, due to the younger age of the boys.<sup>978</sup> The same films were shown at both institutions.<sup>979</sup> The aim of the programme was to provide as much normality as possible, and in return to receive a greater measure of normal conduct from the boys.<sup>980</sup>

Whole group activities were more common at Hokio than they were at the neighbouring Kohitere institution. The philosophy of group work endured throughout the life of the institution.<sup>981</sup> However, some of this appeared to be attributable to under-staffing rather than to any clear philosophy. In 1958, in a request for a nightwatchman, the Manager said that a recent staffing review had led to the view that there was insufficient provision for individual casework, small group and hobby activities.<sup>982</sup> By 1981, the Inspectors thought there was merit in individual programmes for boys in their final school term, in order to better prepare them for life after Hokio.<sup>983</sup>

In 1964 when the institution grew from 34 to 59 beds, inter-house competitions between accommodation wings were instituted. These were mixed-ability groups that competed at sports and recreation activities as well as in the tidiness of rooms. The system was said to produce a greater team spirit among the boys.<sup>984</sup>

An inspection in 1966 found the institution running well, with boys of smart appearance, discipline firm but fair, diverse activities offered and a positive approach to training provided.<sup>985</sup>

A privilege grading system was used in the mid-1960s, with boys being assigned to one of 4 groups at the weekly staff meeting. Privileges were allocated according to group.<sup>986</sup> From 1966, progress at school was also considered<sup>987</sup> and from 1968, 2 boys from the Boys' Council attended grading meetings.<sup>988</sup> This system proved to

<sup>977</sup> See, for example, Inspection Visit to Hokio Beach School on 21-26 September 1981, Hokio Reports, 32154, p 14.

<sup>978</sup> EJ Stanley, Manager, Boys' Training Centre, draft section of Manual, 14/11/56, Hokio Profile, NZ Archives Product Number 2006/24605.

<sup>979</sup> EJ Stanley, Manager, Boys' Training Centre, draft section of Manual, 14/11/56, Hokio Profile, NZ Archives Product Number 2006/24605.

<sup>980</sup> EJ Stanley, Manager, Boys' Training Centre, draft section of Manual, 14/11/56, Hokio Profile, NZ Archives Product Number 2006/24605.

<sup>981</sup> See for example, Inspection Visit to Hokio Beach School on 21-26 September 1981, Hokio Reports, 32154, p2.

<sup>982</sup> Memo, EJ Stanley (Manager) to Acting Superintendent 2/7/58, Hokio Staffing 13341.

<sup>983</sup> Inspection Visit to Hokio Beach School on 21-26 September 1981, Hokio Reports, 32154, p6.

<sup>984</sup> Annual Report, Boys Training Centre 1964, Hokio Reports 32922, p 12.

<sup>985</sup> Extract from Inspection of Mr Hayes, undated 1966, Hokio Profile 13343.

<sup>986</sup> Annual Report, Boys Training Centre 1965, Hokio Reports 32922, p 13.

<sup>987</sup> Annual Report 1967, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 13468, p 5.

<sup>988</sup> Annual Report 1968, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 13468, p 3.

incentivise behaviour over the following years.<sup>989</sup> Rewards systems continued, but the programme existing in 1981 was described as “low key”.<sup>990</sup>

Pocket money allocations were raised in 1969. Allocations were made on the basis of age, job performance and general progress. In 1970, pocket money was allocated according to the amount of work done and jobs included cleaning corridors, preparing vegetables, and other domestic duties carried out after breakfast.<sup>991</sup> Some pocket money had to be banked each week. Boys were allowed to go to the Hokio Beach Store to spend their pocket money in small groups without a staff member for the first time in 1969.<sup>992</sup>

In 1976, the Principal summed up his philosophy as:

“Institutions do not themselves bring about change, they merely provide an appropriate environment for change to take place. All we do is to introduce the children to the standards, values, habits and attitudes that are required to lead a satisfying life in the community and leave the rest to the natural process of maturation”.<sup>993</sup>

## Recreation

Sports and recreation were important activities at Hokio, with some boys’ getting into representative sides.<sup>994</sup> Participation, while encouraged, was not compulsory.<sup>995</sup>

Five boys attained their bronze Duke of Edinburgh award in 1968.<sup>996</sup>

Recreational activities included radio, cooking, basket-making, judo and singing. The boys also ran the library and Hokio had its own Scout group.<sup>997</sup> By 1971, mechanics, art, carving, photography, canework, Māori culture, slot cars, gym work, table tennis, billiards and aero modelling were available.<sup>998</sup> Boys went eeling in the local stream, reportedly able to catch a small truckload of eels in a night.<sup>999</sup>

By 1973, the recreational programme was not run to a regular pattern but activities were organised as required, to suit the mood of the boys. The Principal preferred not to run too rigid a programme and focussed on firm but fair treatment within a relaxing atmosphere.<sup>1000</sup> The general policy in 1977 was to allow as much freedom as possible during leisure periods.<sup>1001</sup> Informal, rather than structured counselling was found to be more effective, with a focus on getting boys to accept responsibility for their own behaviour.<sup>1002</sup>

Camps were run at Paraparaumu in the 1960s, but the facilities were basic. Around this time use was also made of what was to become Camp Peek by the end of the decade (Camp Peek opened in 1970), when regular camps were a feature of the

<sup>989</sup> See, for example, Annual Report 1970, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 13468, p 8 and 11.

<sup>990</sup> Inspection Visit to Hokio Beach School on 21-26 September 1981, Hokio Reports, 32154, p2.

<sup>991</sup> “Training School for State Wards” *The Wanganui Herald* 11/7/70, Hokio Profile 13343.

<sup>992</sup> Annual Report 1969, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 13468, p 3.

<sup>993</sup> Report by Principal, circa 1976, Hokio Profile 13345.

<sup>994</sup> Annual Report, Boys Training Centre 1964, Hokio Reports 32922, p 12.

<sup>995</sup> Annual Report 1977, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Report 13468, p 2.

<sup>996</sup> Annual Report 1968, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 13468, p 4.

<sup>997</sup> Annual Report, Boys Training Centre 1965, Hokio Reports 32922, p 14.

<sup>998</sup> Annual Report 1971, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 13468, p 7.

<sup>999</sup> Annual Report 1970, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 13468, p 6.

<sup>1000</sup> Annual Report 1973, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 13468, p 2.

<sup>1001</sup> Annual Report 1977, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 13468, p 1.

<sup>1002</sup> Report by Principal, circa 1976, Hokio Profile 13345.

school programme.<sup>1003</sup> Camp Peek offered outdoor experiences such as camping, bushcraft, open fire cooking, rock climbing and canoeing. In 1970 it was common for boys to walk the 15 miles from Camp Peek back to Hokio, with one group setting off at 8pm and arriving at Hokio at 3am.<sup>1004</sup> In addition, and from an earlier time, boys camped in the land around Hokio on weekends.<sup>1005</sup>

## Boys Council

A Boys' Council was also introduced in 1964, initially giving the boys' a modest amount of input into the running of the institution.<sup>1006</sup> Boys were selected by staff and the Boys' Council administered the Boys' Fund, which got income from pine cone sales, pig sales and contributions made by the many people whose cars the boys pulled out of the sand at Hokio beach.<sup>1007</sup> From 1966, the Boys' Council ran the institution for two days each year, and this was a successful initiative.<sup>1008</sup>

In general, the Boys' Council promoted the official Hokio policy of giving residents appropriate and increasing levels of responsibility. In 1971 this was extended in the case of one boy who was, for nearly 3 months, used as an acting Housemaster, with others put in acting Housemaster positions for short periods.<sup>1009</sup>

However, a new Principal in 1972 placed the Boys' Council in recess after it was discovered that boys used their positions on the Council to "further their own ends".<sup>1010</sup>

A 1981 Inspection found that Hokio did not operate a prefect system and that the reward system was kept low key. The highest reward at that time was a day in Levin. The group approach to programming was mostly used.<sup>1011</sup> All boys wore school uniforms until the end of the school day, and their neat and tidy appearance was commented on.<sup>1012</sup>

Programmes and care were considered by Auditors to be of a high standard, even as the institution was gearing down for closure at the end of 1989.<sup>1013</sup>

## Work and training

Due to the younger age of boys at Hokio, education rather than work and training was the main focus. However, as well as attending school, during 1966, boys at Hokio took part in regular work programmes. Major projects included the development of the playing field and major concreting work. Other ground development work also took place.<sup>1014</sup>

<sup>1003</sup> Annual Report 1971, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 13468, p 4.

<sup>1004</sup> "Training School for State Wards" *The Wanganui Herald* 11/7/70, Hokio Profile 13343.

<sup>1005</sup> Annual Report, Boys Training Centre 1965, Hokio Reports 32922, p 14.

<sup>1006</sup> Annual Report, Boys Training Centre 1964, Hokio Reports 32922, p 12.

<sup>1007</sup> Annual Report, Boys Training Centre 1965, Hokio Reports 32922, p 14.

<sup>1008</sup> Annual Report 1966, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 32922, p 4; Annual Report 1967, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 13468, p 2.

<sup>1009</sup> Annual Report 1971, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 13468, p 8.

<sup>1010</sup> Annual Report 1972, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 13468, p 2.

<sup>1011</sup> Inspection Visit to Hokio Beach School on 21-26 September 1981, Hokio Reports, 32154, p 2.

<sup>1012</sup> Inspection Visit to Hokio Beach School on 21-26 September 1981, Hokio Reports, 32154, p 13.

<sup>1013</sup> Audit Report, 12/9/88, Hokio Reports, ADM 21-6-201 Part One.

<sup>1014</sup> Annual Report 1966, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 32922, p 6.

The work programme included tree planting in 1967, with boys being allocated a work task each morning, and their afternoon allocation being based on the morning's performance. Pocket money was awarded for some work tasks.<sup>1015</sup> In 1968, two or three boys were on work training programmes throughout the year, for example, taking cooking instruction or assisting with minor maintenance work.<sup>1016</sup>

Three or four boys worked with the Hokio Maintenance Officer in 1969, getting the work training they needed after finishing school and therefore avoiding the need to transfer to Kohitere for work experience.<sup>1017</sup> Similarly, in 1971, boys on work training fell mainly into the pre-discharge category.<sup>1018</sup>

A 1987 Audit noted many favourable comments on the pre-discharge work experience programme.<sup>1019</sup>

## Resident-to-resident issues

Little was found on file in relation to issues and incidents between residents. A memorandum in 1958 noted that there had been several instances of sexual misbehaviour in the dormitory.<sup>1020</sup>

One boy did not wish to return to Hokio in 1972, alleging that nocturnal "kangaroo courts" were held that were violent and homosexual in nature. Two other boys who were also at Lake Alice Hospital also alleged that such incidents took place.<sup>1021</sup>

An incident was reported where a resident was visited by his older brother and his brother's friends, that "almost ended in an all-out confrontation between "them" and our 59 boys", with staff having to "verbally and physically intervene to disperse this potentially ugly scene".<sup>1022</sup>

## Health and medication

In 1956, a psychologist made an overnight visit once a month and psychiatric examination was also available in particular instances.<sup>1023</sup>

In 1964, the doctor examined all new admissions weekly at Hokio; previously boys had had to go over to Kohitere.<sup>1024</sup>

Boys received individual counselling at Hokio as well as being able to take part in group work.<sup>1025</sup> Hokio had a visiting psychologist and could refer boys to the nearby

<sup>1015</sup> Annual Report 1967, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 32922, p 5.

<sup>1016</sup> Annual Report 1968, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 13468, p 2.

<sup>1017</sup> Annual Report 1969, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 13468, p 7.

<sup>1018</sup> Annual Report 1971, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 13468, p 10.

<sup>1019</sup> Audit Report, 28/10/87, Hokio Reports, ADM 21-6-201 Part One.

<sup>1020</sup> EJ Stanley, Manager to Acting Superintendent 27/58, Hokio Staffing 13341.

<sup>1021</sup> S Leeks, Child Psychiatrist, PN Hospital to Head Teacher Hokio Beach School, 7/9/72, Hokio Incidents, F5000003725103.

<sup>1022</sup> PH Paurini for Principal Hokio to Director-General 20/10/80, Hokio Incidents, F5000005659657.

<sup>1023</sup> EJ Stanley, Manager, Boys' Training Centre, draft section of Manual, 14/11/56, Hokio Profile, NZ Archives Product Number 2006/24605.

<sup>1024</sup> Annual Report 1964, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 32922, p 12.

Kimberley Hospital for psychiatric assessment.<sup>1026</sup> However, the amount of specialist advice of this nature was felt to be inadequate.<sup>1027</sup>

In 1966, a psychologist attended from Palmerston North one night per fortnight. More time could have been put to good use.<sup>1028</sup> A letter in 1972 raised concerns about a small number of boys at Hokio with mental health issues, and the potential danger created by the lack of psychiatric and psychological care at Hokio. A situation with tragic consequences, such as grievous bodily harm, murder or suicide, was feared.<sup>1029</sup>

In 1971, the growing proportion of boys with previous admissions to psychiatric hospitals presented problems. The Principal also expressed concern that Hokio fell short in its care of these residents.<sup>1030</sup>

A memorandum in December 1975 noted that Hokio had been without any psychiatric service for over 2 years.<sup>1031</sup> Many boys were however seen by psychiatrists prior to admission and placed on medication. Concern was expressed that their medication was not reviewed while at Hokio.<sup>1032</sup>

## Psychiatric hospital placement

The 1964 Annual Report notes that one boy absconded 7 times before being admitted to Lake Alice Hospital.<sup>1033</sup>

One boy's personal file discusses his readiness to leave Lake Alice Hospital, noting that he had been admitted from Hokio, and indicating that two or three other boys were admitted to Lake Alice Hospital during 1972.<sup>1034</sup>

In 1971, there were a significant number of admissions to Hokio that had previously been admitted to psychiatric hospitals. These boys formed a sub-group and the Principal questioned the practice of sending boys unable to be controlled within the psychiatric hospital environment to boys' institutions.<sup>1035</sup>

## Staffing

Hokio had long periods of staff stability, especially in the residential area. For example, a 1981 Inspection found the most recent appointment was 3 ½ years

<sup>1025</sup> Annual Report 1966, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 32922, p 6.

<sup>1026</sup> Annual Report 1970, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 13468, p 10.

<sup>1027</sup> Annual Report 1971, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 13468, p 9 and Annual Report 1972, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 13468, p 2.

<sup>1028</sup> Annual Report 1966, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 32922, p 6.

<sup>1029</sup> Letter to Secretary Department of Education, 8/5/72, Hokio Admissions, 13347.

<sup>1030</sup> Annual Report 1971, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 13468, p 5.

<sup>1031</sup> Memorandum to Director-General, 16/12/75, Hokio Health 13347.

<sup>1032</sup> Memorandum to Director-General, 16/12/75, Hokio Health 13347.

<sup>1033</sup> Annual Report 1964, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 32922, p 2.

<sup>1034</sup> S Leeks, Child Psychiatrist, PN Hospital to Head Teacher Hokio Beach School, 7/9/72, Hokio Incidents, F5000003725103.

<sup>1035</sup> Annual Report 1971, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 13468, p 5.

prior.<sup>1036</sup> However, as occurred in many institutions, there were long periods when vacancies were unable to be filled. For example, the position of Matron was vacant for 18 months in 1975/6 and other staff shortages were experienced during this time.<sup>1037</sup>

In 1958, residents of the Hokio community complained to their Member of Parliament about damage done to their property and requested the appointment of a night watchman.<sup>1038</sup> At that time, no staff member was officially on duty between 9pm and 6am, although one staff member always slept in the main building and the resident housemaster carried out irregular night checks. A permanent night watchman was requested, as well as a second housemaster to meet the shortfall in individual casework and small group activities.<sup>1039</sup>

A 1966 Inspection found Hokio running well, but identified the domestic staff and the tendency of some staff to regard the school as a separate entity from the institution as the main weaknesses at that time.<sup>1040</sup>

From 1966, an effort was made to have more women on staff, so that the needs of young boys at Hokio could be better met.<sup>1041</sup> However, although this proved to be a positive development, it took some years to achieve.<sup>1042</sup> School staffing was less stable.<sup>1043</sup>

In 1972, Mr Woulfe left as Principal, transferring to Kingslea.<sup>1044</sup> Hokio had 4 controlling officers during 1972, with Mr North taking over as Principal by the end of that year.<sup>1045</sup> By 1976 the Principal expressed his philosophy as allowing staff freedom to operate as they wished, within an established framework. Staff were, for example, allowed to set recreation activities according to the mood of the boys rather than to a set timetable.<sup>1046</sup>

A 1981 Inspection visit commented on the low numbers of Hokio staff attending departmental training sessions and encouraged greater attendance.<sup>1047</sup> That Inspection also noted that double night cover had been in place at Hokio for over three years.<sup>1048</sup>

In [REDACTED] events were reported by a field social worker who was contacted by a boy who had absconded from Hokio after being there for 2 days. The boy, described by a Hokio staff member as "a nutter" and "effeminate" appeared scared of returning to Hokio and wanted to go to a family home. The field social worker and [REDACTED] Hokio Principal disagreed on the course of action. [REDACTED] proposed that the boy be taken to a family home and then uplifted by Hokio staff in the middle of the night. The field social worker was not prepared to be part of such an arrangement, especially as it involved lying to the absconder.<sup>1049</sup>

<sup>1036</sup> Inspection Visit to Hokio Beach School on 21-26 September 1981, Hokio Reports, 32154, p 2.

<sup>1037</sup> Annual Report 1976, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 13468, p 1.

<sup>1038</sup> EJ Stanley, Manager to Acting Superintendent 2/7/58, Hokio Staffing 13341.

<sup>1039</sup> EJ Stanley, Manager to Acting Superintendent 2/7/58, Hokio Staffing 13341.

<sup>1040</sup> Extract from Inspection of Mr Hayes, undated 1966, Hokio Profile 13343.

<sup>1041</sup> Annual Report 1966, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 32922, p 6.

<sup>1042</sup> See, for example, Annual Report 1970, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 13468, p 1.

<sup>1043</sup> See section of this paper on Schooling, below.

<sup>1044</sup> Annual Report 1972, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 13468, p 1.

<sup>1045</sup> Annual Report 1972, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 13468, p 1.

<sup>1046</sup> Report by Principal, circa 1976, Hokio Profile 13345.

<sup>1047</sup> Inspection Visit to Hokio Beach School on 21-26 September 1981, Hokio Reports, 32154, p 3.

<sup>1048</sup> Inspection Visit to Hokio Beach School on 21-26 September 1981, Hokio Reports, 32154, p 10.

<sup>1049</sup> File note, Mr [REDACTED], Hokio Incidents [REDACTED]



A 1987 Audit noted the generally low-key approach by Hokio management and the experienced and keen staff, who were dedicated, but largely untrained.<sup>1050</sup> This audit also found evidence that some staff had not adapted to modern social work standards.<sup>1051</sup> However, a good management style and staff satisfied of two-way communications processes indicated positive elements.<sup>1052</sup>

A small number of staff were found in 1987 to be too custodial in their outlook, relying on a dominant physical approach.<sup>1053</sup>

## Schooling

School was an important feature of Hokio given the age of its residents. Practically all residents attended school full-time.<sup>1054</sup> A fluctuating relationship was experienced between the school and the residential side of the institution. This was tense at times,<sup>1055</sup> and particularly good at other times.<sup>1056</sup>

In 1956, most boys attended the Primary school on site, with a few boys progressing to secondary school level with Correspondence courses, under the supervision of the sole teacher.<sup>1057</sup>

An Inspection in 1963 noted a proposed roll increase from 40 to 60 boys, with at least 30 boys at post-primary level.<sup>1058</sup> The existing staff of a Head Teacher and 2 assistants would need to be increased. The Inspection also noted that although the links with the Correspondence School had been useful for post-primary work, completing the assignments was beyond the ability of most boys at the school.<sup>1059</sup> However, learning by correspondence continued to be used for subjects that could not be adequately catered for within the school.<sup>1060</sup>

A third teacher was employed during 1964 in response to a growing roll.<sup>1061</sup> A fourth teacher was employed in 1965, creating a staff of 2 primary and 2 post-primary staff.<sup>1062</sup> A manual room was added in 1966 along with a manual teacher. Teachers training college students from Wellington and Palmerston North attended the school for periods of up to a month.<sup>1063</sup>

There was an emphasis on remedial work and individual work where possible and it was felt that the small class size suited the boys making progress.<sup>1064</sup> The degree of

<sup>1050</sup> Audit Report, 28/10/87, Hokio Reports, ADM 21-6-201 Part One.

<sup>1051</sup> Audit Report, 28/10/87, Hokio Reports, ADM 21-6-201 Part One.

<sup>1052</sup> Audit Report, 28/10/87, Hokio Reports, ADM 21-6-201 Part One.

<sup>1053</sup> Audit Report, 28/10/87, Hokio Reports, ADM 21-6-201 Part One.

<sup>1054</sup> Memorandum "Establishment of a District High School at Hokio Section of the Boys' Training Centre", Levin, circa 1964, Hokio Education 13341.

<sup>1055</sup> See for example Report of Mr Hayes, 1966, Hokio Reports 13343.

<sup>1056</sup> See, for example, Annual Report 1971, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 13468, p 1.

<sup>1057</sup> EJ Stanley, Manager, Boys' Training Centre, draft section of Manual, 14/11/56, Hokio Profile, NZ Archives Product Number 2006/24605.

<sup>1058</sup> SSP Hamilton, Officer of Special Education, Department of Education, Hokio Beach and Kohitere Schools, 24/7/63, Hokio Education 13320.

<sup>1059</sup> SSP Hamilton, Officer of Special Education, Department of Education, Hokio Beach and Kohitere Schools, 24/7/63, Hokio Education 13320.

<sup>1060</sup> See, for example, 3 boys, Annual Report 1967, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 13468.

<sup>1061</sup> Annual Report, Boys Training Centre 1964, Hokio Reports 32922, p 11.

<sup>1062</sup> Annual Report, Boys Training Centre 1965, Hokio Reports 32922, p 12 and 1958 Manual Q 67.

<sup>1063</sup> Annual Report, Boys Training Centre 1964, Hokio Reports 32922, p 11.

<sup>1064</sup> Annual Report, Boys Training Centre 1965, Hokio Reports 32922, p 13.

remedial work is indicated by the 1966 experience where 6 out of 50 boys had a reading age above that of their chronological age<sup>1065</sup> and concern about the degree of retardation within the Hokio population in 1967.<sup>1066</sup> On the other hand, one boy resident at Hokio in 1970 was found to have an IQ of 130 and most boys were described at that time of being of "normal mental potential".<sup>1067</sup>

In 1968 new social education and outdoor education programmes were successfully introduced. A week's camp was held in the Marlborough Sounds. The recreation programme ran on two mornings a week and the art programme for one day a week. The roll in 1968 fluctuated between 60 and 65 boys and a sixth teacher was requested to solely undertake remedial work with individual boys.<sup>1068</sup> In 1969, the integration of the outdoor education programme as part of the school programme was considered to be very promising.<sup>1069</sup>

A 1970 newspaper article noted the special emphasis on manual training, in the belief that many boys would take up trades as adults.<sup>1070</sup>

In 1970, there was a focus on curriculum development in the area of Māori culture to foster pride and knowledge among the many Māori students of the school. The Principal noted "we were not concerned with stick games or action songs but more with history, language and tribal structure, etc".<sup>1071</sup> Relations between the school and the institution were particularly good in 1970. A new system was introduced of dividing boys into classes by academic ability, allowing the more able boys to undertake a more formal education programme.<sup>1072</sup>

In 1970, concern was expressed that the school was too conservative and formal to meet the needs of the boys.<sup>1073</sup> This was despite a policy to provide a non-competitive environment that attempted to allow boys (who had often been failed by their previous schooling) to attain a sense of achievement.

Staff shortages at the school in 1971 led to a "holding pattern" with the necessarily larger classes meaning schooling was "caretaking rather than education" although this situation was remedied after 2 terms.<sup>1074</sup> Streaming by ability and maturity continued.<sup>1075</sup>

In 1971, the Principal expressed the view that the school often missed out on specialist services and advisors within the Education Department and that this situation would worsen after the department split from Education.<sup>1076</sup> In 1972, class size was about 15 boys, which made individual remedial work difficult to achieve.<sup>1077</sup> The on-going problems in obtaining relievers and the time it took to appoint permanent teaching staff remained issues in 1972.<sup>1078</sup> The increasing average age

<sup>1065</sup> Annual Report 1966, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 32922, p 2.

<sup>1066</sup> Annual Report 1967, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 13468, p 1.

<sup>1067</sup> "Training School for State Wards" *The Wanganui Herald* 11/7/70, Hokio Profile 13343.

<sup>1068</sup> Annual Report 1968, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 13468, p 2.

<sup>1069</sup> Annual Report 1969, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 13468, p 2.

<sup>1070</sup> "Training School for State Wards" *The Wanganui Herald* 11/7/70, Hokio Profile 13343.

<sup>1071</sup> Annual Report 1971, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 13468, p 2.

<sup>1072</sup> Annual Report 1971, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 13468, p 2.

<sup>1073</sup> Annual Report 1970, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 13468, p 2.

<sup>1074</sup> Annual Report 1971, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Report 13468, p 2.

<sup>1075</sup> Annual Report 1971, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Report 13468, p 2.

<sup>1076</sup> Annual Report 1971, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 13468, p 3.

<sup>1077</sup> Annual Report 1972, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 13468, p 6.

<sup>1078</sup> Annual Report 1972, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 13468, p 4.

of boys at Hokio over this time also meant that most boys were of secondary school age.<sup>1079</sup>

The 1973 Annual Report notes that Hokio pupils made a surprising amount of progress on their school work, especially given that many arrived with anti-school attitudes. The major emphasis of the school was described as being on "social re-education in a relaxed atmosphere without the pressure of competitive achievement, where a considerable amount of trust is placed on the boys and a good staff-pupil relationship exists".<sup>1080</sup> The report also noted the Head Teacher's hope that the teaching of Māoritanga and a Māori culture group would be up and running in 1974 with the appointment of a Māori teacher.<sup>1081</sup>

A new system was introduced in 1976, with the classroom divided into work areas and boys allowed to choose the subject they wished to work on. Individual testing resulted in a clearer idea of what boys needed to improve at.<sup>1082</sup> The level of work was set so that it was not too difficult, in order for boys to experience some degree of success.<sup>1083</sup> There were staff shortages that year, and during term 3 of 1976, 11 boys could not be accommodated and had to be occupied elsewhere, because staff refused to accept more than 12 boys in each class.<sup>1084</sup> This resulted in tensions with neighbouring Kohitere, when the Kohitere Principal suggested that the Hokio Principal should insist on larger classes, saying that the Hokio teachers "got it pretty easy".<sup>1085</sup>

Problems developed at the school during the late 1970s, after a shortage of staff and lack of permanent Head Teacher in 1976/77. The Principal contacted Head Office about the need to action staffing replacements in April 1977.<sup>1086</sup> The PSA and PPTA were contacted, resulting in an agreement to limit classes to 12 boys and to temporarily employ a fifth teacher; a position that was later made permanent.<sup>1087</sup> The Head Teacher reported in 1978 that a career structure and better remuneration might help with staff retention, along with recognition of the uniqueness of Hokio and the special mix of skills needed.<sup>1088</sup>

A visit was made by senior Education officials in March 1978 in response to representations made by the PPTA and NZEI regarding staffing. The visiting Education officials found the teaching to be "conscientious but dull" and in need of curriculum planning, and recommended the appointment of a Standing Committee of Education and Social Welfare officials and teachers from both Hokio and Kohitere.<sup>1089</sup>

Staffing shortages continued in the school throughout 1978 and 1979, with relievers being called in, who, the Principal noted "were mainly people who were unable to obtain employment at other schools, and consequently were more of an embarrassment than a help to us".<sup>1090</sup>

<sup>1079</sup> Annual Report 1972, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 13468, p 4.

<sup>1080</sup> Annual Report 1973, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 13468, p 2.

<sup>1081</sup> Annual Report 1973, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 13468, p 2.

<sup>1082</sup> Annual Report 1976, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 13468, p 2.

<sup>1083</sup> Report by Principal, circa 1976, Hokio Profile 13345.

<sup>1084</sup> Annual Report 1976, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 13468, p 2; TK North, Principal to Director General, 3/10/78, Hokio Education, 13343.

<sup>1085</sup> TK North, Principal to Director General 3/10/78, Hokio Education, 13343.

<sup>1086</sup> TK North, Principal to Director General 26/4/77, Hokio Education 13343.

<sup>1087</sup> TK North, Principal, to Director-General 3/10/78, Hokio Education 13343.

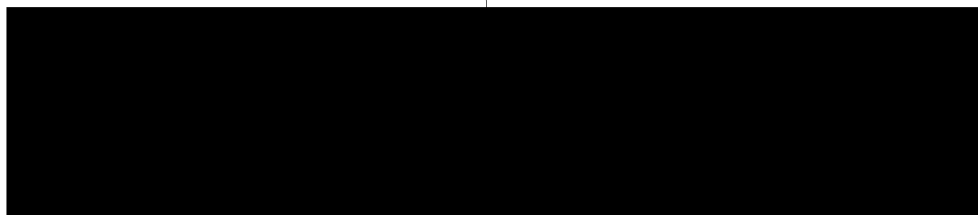
<sup>1088</sup> Report of Head Teacher February 1978, Hokio Reports 13343.

<sup>1089</sup> Report on Hokio Beach School, 6/3/78 Hokio Reports 13343.

<sup>1090</sup> Annual Report 1978, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 13468, p 1.

## Section 9(2)(a) Official Information Act 1982- Privacy of Natural Persons

By 1981, relations between institution staff and the school were good, with weekly meetings held and Education Department Inspectors reportedly satisfied with the programme offered.<sup>1091</sup>



## Absconding

Rates of absconding were generally low at Hokio, despite the open nature of the institution. From mid-1957 to mid-1958 there were 10 abscondings. Offences by absconders while absent from Hokio included car conversions, breaking and entering and theft.<sup>1094</sup>

The number of absconders rose to 24 in 1964, the rise being attributed to the recent growth in size of the institution.<sup>1095</sup> In 1964, there were also 24 Court appearances relating to offences committed while absconding.<sup>1096</sup> However, in 1965, only 5 abscondings were recorded<sup>1097</sup> and in 1966, the number was 8.<sup>1098</sup> In 1968 there were 3 abscondings – the lowest on record until a nil return the following year.<sup>1099</sup> A newspaper article in July 1970 stated that there had been only one attempt at escape in the past year.<sup>1100</sup> A rise in group absconding was noted in 1973, and were thought to often be “impulsive affairs”.<sup>1101</sup>

In 1977 there were “two rather spectacular abscondings which involved the Armed Offenders Squad” - in one case because the boys involved stole a truck containing a rifle.<sup>1102</sup> The Hokio philosophy was expressed in the media at that time as being against “locking our children up all the time” because “all you do is create a challenge for them, which they will accept”.<sup>1103</sup>

The pattern in the 1970s was for more mass or group abscondings, thought to reflect the gang and group-based associations of the older age group.<sup>1104</sup> In 1979 there were 18 abscondings and in 1980 there were 10.<sup>1105</sup> For 1981 and 1982 there were

<sup>1091</sup> Inspection Visit to Hokio Beach School on 21-26 September 1981, Hokio Reports, 32154, p 3 and 9.

<sup>1092</sup> W Gibbons, Advisory Officer PPTA to Assistant Secretary (Administration) Department of Education, 12/11/86, Hokio Staffing, ADM 21-6-201 Part One.

<sup>1093</sup> Audit Report, Hokio Beach School, 28/10/87, Hokio Reports, ADM 21-6-201 Part One, p 2.

<sup>1094</sup> Memo, EJ Stanley, Manager, to Acting Superintendent 2/7/58, Hokio Incidents 13341.

<sup>1095</sup> Annual Report, Boys Training Centre 1964, Hokio Reports 32922, p 14.

<sup>1096</sup> Annual Report 1964, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 32922, p 2.

<sup>1097</sup> Annual Report, Boys Training Centre 1965, Hokio Reports 32922, Table 5.

<sup>1098</sup> Annual Report 1966, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 32922, Table VI.

<sup>1099</sup> Annual Report 1968, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 13468, Table V and Annual Report 1969, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 13468, Table IV.

<sup>1100</sup> “Training School for State Wards” *The Wanganui Herald* 11/7/70, Hokio Profile 13343.

<sup>1101</sup> Annual Report 1973, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 13468, p 2.

<sup>1102</sup> Annual Report 1977, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 13468, p 1 and ‘Security survives second escape’ *Dominion* 5/7/77, Hokio Secure p 3.

<sup>1103</sup> ‘Security survives second escape’ *Dominion* 5/7/77, Hokio Secure p 3.

<sup>1104</sup> Annual Report 1978, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 13468, p 5.

<sup>1105</sup> Absconders, statistics, circa 1981, Hokio Admissions, F5000002388341.

5 each year, rising markedly in 1983 to 38 abscondings.<sup>1106</sup> In 1984, there were 24 abscondings.<sup>1107</sup>

## Secure care

Secure care was used very rarely during the 1960s, and where indicated, Kohitere facilities were used. In 1964, the Principal said that in order to control some of the boys, a maximum security unit was the only practical option and that therefore one should be built at Hokio.<sup>1108</sup>

In 1969, the Annual Report stated "over the years these facilities [i.e. secure care] at Hokio have seen little use. In fact, now, our secure wing is used exclusively to give some measure of privacy to our younger boys".<sup>1109</sup> There were 2 secure beds in the 1970s, used for short periods, with release for work and physical training for boys during the day.<sup>1110</sup> At this time, secure was reported as never being used on admission and nor was any time-out facility used.

The 1975 Annual Report refers to Hokio boys being transferred to Kohitere for disciplinary reasons – 1975 recording the lowest number of transfers for many years.<sup>1111</sup>

Secure facilities were described as spartan in 1981, being unheated with a bare concrete floor and mattresses on the floor instead of beds.<sup>1112</sup> The programme in secure was described as "generally positive even if rather rigorous".<sup>1113</sup> At this time, secure rooms were also used for periods of time-out of up to 2 hours. A department inspection found that record-keeping was inadequate.<sup>1114</sup> A follow-up report 9 months later noted that built-in beds had been added but that record-keeping had not been addressed.<sup>1115</sup>

There were 19 admissions to secure in the first 9 months of 1981.<sup>1116</sup> The 1986 Regulations reduced the use and duration of secure care stays.<sup>1117</sup>

An Audit in 1988 found the use of the tennis court for time-out to be in breach of the regulations.<sup>1118</sup> A letter from the Principal explained that this practice was often initiated by boys themselves, they having been trained to take responsibility for their behaviour including removing themselves from situations where they had been disruptive.<sup>1119</sup>

<sup>1106</sup> Analysis of abscondings 1979-1983 inclusive, Appendix II, Hokio Incidents, F5000002186500.

<sup>1107</sup> Institution Statistics 1984, 4/11/85, Appendix E, Hokio Admissions, F5000002186501.

<sup>1108</sup> Annual Report 1964, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 32922, p 10.

<sup>1109</sup> Annual Report 1969, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 13468, p 8.

<sup>1110</sup> Questionnaire, Head Office, 1981, Hokio Reports 32154.

<sup>1111</sup> Annual Report 1975, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 13468, p 4.

<sup>1112</sup> Inspection Visit to Hokio Beach School on 21-26 September 1981, Hokio Reports, 32154, p 4.

<sup>1113</sup> Inspection Visit to Hokio Beach School on 21-26 September 1981, Hokio Reports, 32154, p 2.

<sup>1114</sup> Inspection Visit to Hokio Beach School on 21-26 September 1981, Hokio Reports, 32154, p 5.

<sup>1115</sup> Visit to Hokio Beach School on 14-15 June 1982, Hokio Reports, 32154, p 4.

<sup>1116</sup> Inspection Visit to Hokio Beach School on 21-26 September 1981, Hokio Reports, 32154, p 4.

<sup>1117</sup> Audit Report, Hokio Beach School, 28/10/87, Hokio Reports, ADM 21-6-201 Part One, p 2.

<sup>1118</sup> Audit Report, Hokio Beach School, 28/10/87, Hokio Reports, ADM 21-6-201 Part One, p 2.

<sup>1119</sup> Paurini to Assistant Director-General, 3/11/88, Hokio Reports, ADM 21-6-201 Part One.

## Discipline

Little was found on file in relation to specific methods of discipline, apart from comments about the general philosophy and approach, rewards systems and so on, and that methods were firm but fair. For example, in 1970, the Principal was quoted as saying "this is not a place of punishment...this is a place of education".<sup>1120</sup> Other comments are found in the section on physical punishment, below.

## Physical punishment

In 1971, corporal punishment had not been abolished at Hokio but its use was kept to a minimum, with 6 boys receiving corporal punishment that year.<sup>1121</sup>

In an incident involving returned absconders in 1979, a boy was given intensive physical exercise as a punishment. The boy claimed he had lost the movement in his left leg and any attempt by staff to stand him on his feet resulted in the boy collapsing. However, when given a set of exercises that did not involve the leg, but which caused some discomfort, the boy made a "miraculous recovery".<sup>1122</sup>

Corporal punishment was not used in 1981 and had not been administered there for the previous 5 years.<sup>1123</sup> No strap was kept at Hokio and no punishment return entered.

## Drugs, alcohol and tattoos

No specific references to drugs, alcohol and tattoos were found.

## Smoking

Smoking was highlighted as an issue in 1979; as being responsible for thefts and bullying of those with tobacco which in turn lead to those being bullied to abscond. Staff indulgence in smoking was noted as not helping the situation.<sup>1124</sup>

In response to a questionnaire in about 1981, it was stated that as all residents were under the age of 15 "there is no smoking officially".<sup>1125</sup>

<sup>1120</sup> "Training School for State Wards" *The Wanganui Herald* 11/7/70, Hokio Profile 13343.

<sup>1121</sup> Annual Report 1971, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 13468, p 8.

<sup>1122</sup> TK North, Principal to Director-General, 6/6/79, Hokio Punishment, F5000002843733.

<sup>1123</sup> Inspection Visit to Hokio Beach School on 21-26 September 1981, Hokio Reports, 32154, p 6, 11.

<sup>1124</sup> Annual Report 1979, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 13468, p 3.

<sup>1125</sup> Head Office questionnaire, circa 1981, Hokio Reports, 13345.

## Contact with field social workers

In 1956, a full progress report was sent to field officers at six-monthly intervals. At that time, the aim of Hokio was said to be explaining the full function of field officers to boys so that they understood that the field officer was "willing to help them, rather than merely check up on them".<sup>1126</sup>

Better links with field Social Workers was suggested after a number of placements broke down after Hokio in 1969.<sup>1127</sup> Other than these two references, there is very little on file about links with field social workers or districts, whether in relation to admission or discharge.

## Contact with community

Good relations and a lot of contact with the local community featured throughout the life of Hokio. Community relations were described as being good in 1964. Boys assisted the local community in many ways including helping with local fire-fighting when called upon.<sup>1128</sup>

Sports also allowed inter-school contact from 1965, with many Hokio boys excelling in a range of sports.<sup>1129</sup> A very successful Open Day was held in 1966.<sup>1130</sup> Saturday morning cricket and rugby from 1968 allowed boys to play for club sides and meet other boys from the community.<sup>1131</sup> Sports matches with local schools were often played at Hokio and the public sometimes used the grounds. Members of the public were allowed to use the swimming pool from 5-6pm throughout the Christmas holidays, and this proved popular.<sup>1132</sup>

Community and other groups visited Hokio several times a year. One successful visit was by the Army in 1970. This visit was memorable because the boys were allowed to shoot 1,000 rounds of blank ammunition under Army supervision.<sup>1133</sup>

The Levin Jaycees provided much of the Camp Peek equipment in the 1960s and 1970s as well as providing certificates of attainment to boys who completed the course.<sup>1134</sup>

## Visiting committees

No mention is made in regard to Visiting Committees at Hokio until 1986. A compilation of Visiting Committee information by Head Office noted that the

<sup>1126</sup> EJ Stanley, Manager, Boys' Training Centre, draft section of Manual, 14/11/56, Hokio Profile, NZ Archives Product Number 2006/24605, p5.

<sup>1127</sup> Annual Report 1969, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 13468, p 7.

<sup>1128</sup> Annual Report, Boys Training Centre 1964, Hokio Reports 32922, p 12; Annual Report 1970, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 13468, p 8.

<sup>1129</sup> Annual Report, Boys Training Centre 1965, Hokio Reports 32922, p 14.

<sup>1130</sup> Annual Report 1966, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 32922, p 4.

<sup>1131</sup> Annual Report 1968, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 13468, p 2.

<sup>1132</sup> Annual Report 1977, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 13468, p 2-3.

<sup>1133</sup> Annual Report 1970, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 13468, p 6.

<sup>1134</sup> "Training School for State Wards" *The Wanganui Herald* 11/7/70, Hokio Profile 13343.

committee visited at regular intervals. Annual Reports were received from the committee in 1986 and 1987, with the 1987 correspondence noting the concern of the committee at the decision to close Hokio in 1990.<sup>1135</sup>

## Contact with families

There is conflicting information about mail censorship. The Manual of 1975/76 says that there was "practically no restriction on inward and outward correspondence and certainly no restraint on family communications."<sup>1136</sup> Yet in response to a 1977 questionnaire it was noted that Incoming and outgoing mail was censored.<sup>1137</sup>

Contact with families was maintained by annual home leave, extended to twice a year (Christmas and May school holidays) in 1965<sup>1138</sup> and extended again in 1969 to include an August holiday.<sup>1139</sup> Very few home leaves resulted in incidents. Parents also visited their sons at Hokio.<sup>1140</sup>

A standard letter to parents in 1977 introduced the institution and encouraged frequent contact with boys by letter and visits also.<sup>1141</sup>

## Preparation for discharge and aftercare arrangements

A pre-discharge group began within Hokio in 1975.<sup>1142</sup> A pre-release work experience programme was successfully introduced in 1976 with several employers involved<sup>1143</sup> and extended in 1979 to include talks by visiting speakers on work and health issues.<sup>1144</sup>

<sup>1135</sup> Visiting Committee of Hokio Beach School, 30/6/87, Hokio Visiting Committee, F5000006661405; Visiting Committee Annual Reports 1986, Hokio Visiting Committee F5000006661405; Visiting Committee Annual Reports 1987, Hokio Visiting Committee F5000006661404.

<sup>1136</sup> Residential Workers Manual, circa 1975/76, DSW, D 9.00(vi).

<sup>1137</sup> Questionnaire response, circa 1977, p 2, Hokio Reports, 13345.

<sup>1138</sup> Annual Report 1965, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 32922.

<sup>1139</sup> Annual Report 1969, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 13468, p 5.

<sup>1140</sup> Annual Report 1968, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 13468, p 6.

<sup>1141</sup> Hokio Beach School, 1977, Hokio Profile F5000002388341.

<sup>1142</sup> Annual Report 1975, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 13468, p 3.

<sup>1143</sup> Annual Report 1976, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 13468, p 2.

<sup>1144</sup> Annual Report 1979, Hokio Beach School, Hokio Reports 13468, p 2.



# Campbell Park

Unlike the other residences profiled in this report, Campbell Park was not a Child Welfare Residence, but was under the control of the Department of Education. For more in-depth information, see the staffing administration section of this profile.

## Physical description

Campbell Park School was established in 1908. It was set "beautifully but remotely"<sup>1145</sup> on a 350 acre farm<sup>1146</sup> at Otekaieke in the Waitaki Valley, 60 kilometres north-west of Oamaru and 16 kilometres from Kurow.<sup>1147</sup>

Campbell Park consisted of, "... a main building, a senior boys' villa and recreation room, kitchen block and dining rooms, main recreational hall, workshops, laundry, classrooms, two junior boys' accommodation villas and recreation rooms, and staff flats and houses."<sup>1148</sup>

In 1970 a decision was made to reopen the closed cottage and alter it extensively to provide a self contained unit for residents aged 8 to 11 years.<sup>1149</sup> Funding had become an issue in 1971 and it was not certain whether this facility would be provisioned.<sup>1150</sup> The Annual Report for 1971 does not make it clear whether this occurred, but it is noted in 1972 that Social Welfare thought the extension to the Junior Section was needed.<sup>1151</sup>

In 1971 Campbell Park was notified that the main building was an earthquake risk and replac accommodation was considered necessary.<sup>1152</sup>

Work to the institution in 1971 included opening of the new kitchen and dining area, the beginning of construction of a toilet block for the new Cottage 'C', amongst other maintenance. The new gymnasium and sports area was to begin construction and additional staff housing was considered necessary. Preliminary drawings for a manual training block were completed and a tender for the first of three new classrooms was accepted.<sup>1153</sup>

<sup>1145</sup> Inspection Report 10-14/10/82, Campbell Park Reports 19900.

<sup>1146</sup> Notes on organisation and policy of Otekaieke, D O'Connor, 06/11/56, Campbell Park Profile 24605.

<sup>1147</sup> Campbell Park School Prospectus, Campbell Park Profile F5000002791151.

<sup>1148</sup> Child Welfare Department Manual 1958, Campbell Park Profile.

<sup>1149</sup> Memo, DG Reilly, for Superintendent to All DCWO's 30/04/71, Campbell Park Profile F5000001599348.

<sup>1150</sup> Memo, DG Reilly, for Superintendent to All DCWO's 30/04/71, Campbell Park Profile F5000001599348.

<sup>1151</sup> Memo, L Pycroft, for Director to Director-General 11/07/72, Campbell Park Profile F5000003611823.

<sup>1152</sup> Annual Report 1971, Campbell Park Reports F5000002919978. For more information on this, see the report.

<sup>1153</sup> Annual Report 1971, Campbell Park Reports F5000002919978.

A new playground was installed behind the Day School in 1971.<sup>1154</sup>

The new administration block in 1974 served, "... a complex of residential quarters, classrooms, workshops and a staff village of over 35 houses."<sup>1155</sup>

By 1972 there were three separate units for the residents which were divided into the junior, intermediate and senior residents.<sup>1156</sup>

In 1975 Campbell Park had a large playing field, an outdoor trampoline, a swimming pool and a well-equipped gymnasium.<sup>1157</sup>

An inspection report in 1978 noted that Campbell Park had upgraded facilities, an aesthetic environment both inside and outside.<sup>1158</sup>

Some of the physical changes to the Institution in 1982 were the building of an art suite, the library extension and the upgrading of cubicle accommodation.<sup>1159</sup>

The junior cottage had closed by 1986 with the reduction in the overall roll at Campbell Park.<sup>1160</sup> The Inspection Report recommended it be used for a group of the younger residents in the intermediate cottage.<sup>1161</sup>

It was recommended in a Review of Residential Special Schools that Campbell Park School be closed and residential services for backward children be consolidated at Salisbury and Hogben Schools.<sup>1162</sup> This was because of all the schools for these types of children, Campbell Park had the most severe location difficulties and required a major capital expenditure to keep running.<sup>1163</sup>

Campbell Park closed on 27 August 1987.<sup>1164</sup>

## Resident profile

Campbell Park School was a national residential school for boys of limited ability with personal and social problems.<sup>1165</sup> In 1956 the aims of the school were primarily educational.<sup>1166</sup> It catered for boys aged 9 to 17 years and had a maximum role of 108.<sup>1167</sup>

A brief history of Campbell Park and Salisbury was given in 1976 and succinctly outlines the four stages that Campbell Park had been through since it opened in 1908 and its fifth stage during that year:

<sup>1154</sup> Annual Report 1971, Campbell Park Reports F5000002919978.

<sup>1155</sup> Campbell Park Report 28/09/74, Campbell Park Reports F5000002919978.

<sup>1156</sup> Campbell Park Report 28/09/74, Campbell Park Reports F5000002919978.

<sup>1157</sup> Campbell Park School Magazine 1975, Campbell Park Profile, F5000001599348.

<sup>1158</sup> Inspection Report 7-18/10/78, Campbell Park Reports 11121.

<sup>1159</sup> Inspection Report 10-14/10/82, Campbell Park Reports 19900.

<sup>1160</sup> Inspection Report 24-27/02/86, Campbell Park Reports 19902.

<sup>1161</sup> Inspection Report 24-27/02/86, Campbell Park Reports 19902.

<sup>1162</sup> Ministerial Review: Evaluation of Departmental Residential Special Schools Draft Report, 00/09/86, Campbell Park Reports F5000004673586.

<sup>1163</sup> Ministerial Review: Evaluation of Departmental Residential Special Schools Draft Report, 00/09/86, Campbell Park Reports F5000004673586.

<sup>1164</sup> Memo, PG Aspden, Principal to Director, Department of Social Welfare, Dunedin 28/07/87, Campbell Park Profile F5000000925803.

<sup>1165</sup> Campbell Park Report 28/09/74, Campbell Park Reports F5000002919978.

<sup>1166</sup> Notes on organisation and policy of Otekaike, D O'Connor, 06/11/56, Campbell Park Profile 24605.

<sup>1167</sup> Campbell Park Report 28/09/74, Campbell Park Reports F5000002919978.

- a) The period up to about 1920 during which they enrolled pupils, mostly on the nomination of medical doctors, who probably ranged from those who were seriously mentally retarded to those who were of at least average intellectual ability but were, for a variety of reasons, generally retarded in their progress at school. The expectation was that pupils would leave the school at 16-18 years prepared for unskilled or semi-skilled employment.
- b) A period from about 1920 to 1930 when enrolment had to be restricted because the schools found themselves obliged to provide long-term care for seriously retarded pupils who could not return to the community. This problem was eased from the late twenties by:
- i. the provision of long-term residential care for persons of this category by the then Department of Mental Hygiene, later incorporated in the Department of Health. The opening of Templeton Hospital about 1928 was the first important step and freed a considerable number of places at Campbell Park and Salisbury.
  - ii. more sophisticated selection procedures following the appointment of the Department's first supervisor of special classes in 1923. During the 1930s and 1940s enrolments were slowly limited primarily to children in the IQ group 50-80 for whom the schools were originally intended.
- c) A period from about 1930 to 1960, during which priority for admission to the schools was given increasingly to backward children who came to the attention of the Department's Child Welfare Division, as it began to develop a national coverage of district offices, as children in need of residential care. By the 1950s, when the psychological service began to examine all children recommended for admission to the schools, most of the children admitted were backward with a history of family inadequacy or neglect, and often also of petty delinquency. Their admission was initiated by the Child Welfare Division. However, both schools, and Salisbury rather more than Campbell Park, still admitted some backward children from satisfactory or better home backgrounds who required special education and who could not enrol in a special class attached to an ordinary school.
- d) The period from about 1960 to 1972, when the Child Welfare Division was absorbed in the new Department of Social Welfare. During this period the pattern of enrolment just described was affected by four developments. These were:
- I. The provision of an increasingly comprehensive network of special classes for backward pupils attached to primary, intermediate and (since 1961) to secondary schools.
  - II. The provision by the Child Welfare Division of small family homes which could provide alternative long-term placements for some backward pupils needing care.
  - III. The steady extension of the Psychological Service outside the six cities serviced in 1960, with a consequent improvement in the screening for admission to the special schools.
  - IV. The assumption by the Department's inspectors and head office of a more active role in formulating, implementing and assessing the schools' overall teaching and care programmes. This move placed more emphasis on the schools' educational roles (as contrasted with their custodial function) and began to link them with the work of the growing networks of special classes in primary and secondary schools.

Over this period the two schools moved slowly but definitely towards their role as it was originally envisaged.

- e) The period since 1972. Over this period the Department of Education has worked actively, and successfully, to develop Campbell Park and Salisbury as effective special schools for backward pupils who cannot, for one reason or another, attend special class. An increasing proportion of the pupils admitted (currently some 20% at Salisbury and 29% at Campbell Park) are recommended for enrolment by the Psychological Service without any formal involvement by the Department of Social Welfare. The schools continue to provide an important service for children for whom that Department has a formal responsibility, and they maintain close links with its field staff, but they are now an integral part of this Department's

national provision for backward pupils. They are beginning to complement and support the work of the special classes for backward pupils in the same way as the residential provisions at our two schools for deaf children provide for those pupils who cannot attend a special class for deaf pupils attached to an ordinary school. This is the proper extension of their original role as it was envisaged when they were established.<sup>1168</sup>

Another more in depth history was given in 1978 when the decision about the placement of the Special Schools with the Department of Education (as opposed to the Department of Social Welfare) was questioned:

- 2) Campbell Park School was established in 1908 at Otekaike Special School to cater for children then described as feeble minded and potentially able to live in the community as adults given suitable education, and perhaps some continuing support. Up to about 1925 a considerable number of even less able pupils were admitted. These children would now be described as intellectually handicapped. Many of them stayed at the school as adults because no alternative placements were available for them. When Templeton Hospital and Training School was opened by the Mental Health Department in 1929 to provide long-term care for mentally retarded persons most of the Campbell Park adult pupils were transferred to it.
- 3) Campbell Park school was then developed as a boarding school for backwards boys aged about 10-17 years who needed special education but could not attend a special class, either because none was available where they lived or because their personal circumstances and/or their behaviour prevented their enrolment at a day school. Many of the pupils in this latter category were boys with social or behavioural difficulties who had come to the notice of the department's Child Welfare Division, which then administered the school.
- 4) From some date in the 1920s until 1954 the school operated as two distinct sections – a school section staffed by teachers which provided schooling for all boys up to 14 years, and a senior section staffed by instructors which provided pre-vocational experience for older pupils up to 18 years of age on the 750 acre farm associated with the school and in some associated workshops. The residential, farm, instruction and office staff were controlled by the principal of the institution, who was not necessarily a teacher. The senior of the two teachers was responsible for the teaching programme, presumably directly to the chief inspector of primary schools.
- 5) The divided administration within the school proved a major impediment to its effective work in the interests of its pupils. To overcome this problem, when the position of Principal became vacant in 1954 the department appointed to it an experienced teacher – Mr D O'Connor – with the brief to bring all sections of the school under his direction.
- 6) Mr O'Connor made useful progress towards this goal but did not link himself closely with the work of his teachers and did not sit as their professional leader. His successor, Mr D F Walsh, was appointed in September 1967 with a clear mandate to implement a unified total programme covering the work of the teaching, residential farm and instructional staff. In developing that programme he was required to take into account the department's decision that backward pupils who needed a period of residential care and education because they were maladjusted would be admitted to Campbell Park or Salisbury rather than to the department's residential schools for maladjusted pupils...
- 7) Mr Walsh laid the groundwork for the unified programme now provided at the school for backward boys aged 10 to 16 years who all require special education, may or may not be identified also as maladjusted, and if so identified, may also be aggressive or delinquent...
- 8) When the Department of Social Welfare was established on 1 April 1972 a decision was required whether Campbell Park and Salisbury should be administered by that department. A full review led to their remaining with the Department of Education.
- 9) Campbell Park school now operates with the Dunedin District Senior Inspector of Primary Schools as the principal's local controlling officer, and through him to the Southern Regional

<sup>1168</sup> Memo, D Ross, Officer for Special Education to Director-General 16/09/76, Campbell Park Profile, Department of Education File.

Superintendent and the Director, Special and Advisory Services. The District Senior Inspector chairs an advisory and planning committee which brings together these departmental groups and local personnel, including the Departments of Health and Social Welfare. On most routine matters the school works directly with Southern Regional Office. By arrangement with that office it works directly with head office in respect to some staffing matters. Admission of pupils is checked and approved through head office. Discharges are arranged by the school with the Psychological Service and/or the Department of Social Welfare as appropriate.

- 10) Over the six years since the Department of Social Welfare was established, Campbell Park School has strengthened and broadened its total educational programme and is now certainly more effective as a school than it has been at any time in the last fifty years. It still accepts some very difficult dull pupils but caters for them much more positively and successfully. It is also now linked effectively with the department's Psychological Service, and through the Service with the primary and secondary schools from which its pupils come and to which many will return.
- 11) There is still more to be done to improve the school's total programme and its link with other schools, though the school's location prevents some desirable developments, and the possibility that we may some day get the proposed Hamilton school inhibits major expenditure on buildings – not that much is now needed. Put simply, the school is now an effective and necessary part of our national educational programme for backward boys.<sup>1169</sup>

The Principal noted that during 1971 there was an increased number of, "... emotionally disturbed boys being admitted to the School, youngsters who are quite unable to stand up for themselves alongside the more traditional hard-core of aggressive slow-learners and that these two groups could not be mixed."<sup>1170</sup>

The senior section of Campbell Park also went through a "critical" period at this time with violence and absconding common.<sup>1171</sup>

In 1972 Campbell Park School was to provide education for backward pupils aged 8 to 15 years who needed special education and could not attend the special class of an ordinary school. Children in the middle of the age range were preferred, but some 16 year olds would be considered in exceptional cases.<sup>1172</sup>

Recommendations for admissions came from Social Welfare and the Psychological Service. Social Welfare was to prepare the application for State Wards, and those under legal or preventive supervision orders, and request a supporting report from the Psychological Service.<sup>1173</sup> All admissions had to be approved through the Head Office.<sup>1174</sup> The Principal was to then liaise with the Directors of Social Welfare on all matters pertaining to the children initially referred for admission by the Department of Social Welfare.<sup>1175</sup>

In 1974 the criteria for admission to Campbell Park was redefined to replace that of the circular memorandum in 1972. The pupil would be considered for admission if they were educationally backward and required a residential programme in order to develop adequate personal and social skills. The IQ range of admissions was meant to be between 50 to 75 but those between 75 to 85 would be considered in special

<sup>1169</sup> DH Ross, Director, Special and Advisory Services to unknown, 26/09/78, Campbell Park Profile, Department of Education File.

<sup>1170</sup> Annual Report 1971, Campbell Park Reports F5000002919978.

<sup>1171</sup> Annual Report 1971, Campbell Park Reports F5000002919978.

<sup>1172</sup> Circular Memorandum: Campbell Park School and Salisbury Girls School Selection, Admission and Withdrawal of pupils, 29/03/72, Campbell Park Admissions F5000002919978.

<sup>1173</sup> Circular Memorandum: Campbell Park School and Salisbury Girls School Selection, Admission and Withdrawal of pupils, 29/03/72, Campbell Park Admissions F5000002919978.

<sup>1174</sup> Inspection Report 10-14/10/82, Campbell Park Reports 19900.

<sup>1175</sup> Circular Memorandum: Campbell Park School and Salisbury Girls School Selection, Admission and Withdrawal of pupils, 29/03/72, Campbell Park Admissions F5000002919978.

circumstances. The pupil had to require special education that could not be given in a normal school and they were not able to attend a local special class due to lack of available placements or because of personal or social difficulties or home circumstances.<sup>1176</sup> The admission criteria was again redefined in 1984 to exclude the IQ requirement, but did include the level of detail required in psychological reports.<sup>1177</sup>

In 1972 it was considered by some Social Workers that the junior section of Campbell Park should be extended because of the much bigger waiting list for admission to the junior section.<sup>1178</sup> It was noted that Social Welfare, "... experience considerable difficulty in the rehabilitation of boys who are discharged before they reach employment age of 15, and would like to see, where possible, boys kept at Campbell Park until they can be placed in employment."<sup>1179</sup> A social welfare response to this was that admissions always fluctuated, as shown by a 15 year old not being admitted late 1971 due to pressures on beds, and that no early decision should be made to alter the structure of the senior section.<sup>1180</sup> It was considered that combining the small number of intermediate residents with the seniors was a problem when it occurred in 1967-1971, and that the demand on senior section beds was decreasing, but maybe that it would be desirable for there to be a greater intake of the intermediate group who would reside with the senior section.<sup>1181</sup> The delay in admissions for junior and intermediate boys was considered detrimental but a reorganisation would need to consider all the needs each section of residents.<sup>1182</sup>

In 1973 it was considered that there might be cases where residents at Campbell Park School should remain there until they were 18 or 19 years old.

In 1975 there were 93 residents in Campbell Park, and of those 41 percent were State Wards.<sup>1183</sup> This was a drop from 1972 when there were more than 50% State Wards in Campbell Park and was considered to possibly be related to the change in the status of Special Schools and the fact that the new appointees probably knew little of the Schools.<sup>1184</sup> It mentions that there was a circular memorandum to make sure that all social work staff knew to consider the Special Schools when making a placement. The decrease was raised with Brian Manchester for consideration.<sup>1185</sup> There is no outcome recorded.

In 1981 it was noted that from 1975 to 1980 the number of State wards admitted to Campbell Park had decreased from 127 in 1975 to 65 in 1976 to 26 in 1980.<sup>1186</sup> Mr Scott (for Director-General) considered that these statistics were false and asked for some clarification from the Department of Social Welfare.<sup>1187</sup>

The number of admissions to Campbell Park on Social Welfare referrals declined from 1974 to 1982 from 85% to approximately 50-60%. The remainder of

<sup>1176</sup> Circular Memorandum by DH Ross, for Director-General of Education: Campbell Park School and Salisbury Girls School Admission Procedures 10/05/74, Campbell Park Admission F5000002919978.

<sup>1177</sup> Circular Memorandum 1984/21: Admission and Discharge Procedures for Campbell Park, Hogben and Salisbury Girls' Residential Schools 05/03/84, Campbell Park Admission 19900.

<sup>1178</sup> Memo, L Pycroft, for Director to Director-General 11/07/72, Campbell Park Profile F5000003611823.

<sup>1179</sup> Memo, L Pycroft, for Director to Director-General 11/07/72, Campbell Park Profile F5000003611823.

<sup>1180</sup> Memo, JD Scott, Director to Director-General 18/08/72, Campbell Park Admissions F5000000634518.

<sup>1181</sup> Memo, JD Scott, Director to Director-General 18/08/72, Campbell Park Admissions F5000000634518.

<sup>1182</sup> Memo, JD Scott, Director to Director-General 18/08/72, Campbell Park Admissions F5000000634518.

<sup>1183</sup> Minute sheet: State Wards in Campbell Park, L C Giles, 14/10/75, Campbell Park Profile 11121.

<sup>1184</sup> Memo, L Pycroft, for Director to Director-General 11/07/72, Campbell Park Profile F5000003611823.

<sup>1185</sup> Memo, L Pycroft, for Director to Director-General 11/07/72, Campbell Park Profile F5000003611823.

<sup>1186</sup> Memo, JD Scott, for Director-General to Director-General of Education 06/08/81, Campbell Park Profile O7D 77-2 Part 2.

<sup>1187</sup> Memo, JD Scott, for Director-General to Director-General of Education 06/08/81, Campbell Park Profile O7D 77-2 Part 2.

admissions were Psychological Service referrals.<sup>1188</sup> The number of admissions who were state wards from 1977 to 1982 varied from between 41 to 48%. Approximately half of admissions in 1982 were section 115 (Education Act) admissions<sup>1189</sup> and the remainder were on section 11 (care agreement) status.<sup>1190</sup>

Half of the residents at Campbell Park between 1977 and 1982 were European and the remainder were either Maori or Pacific Islanders. Between two-thirds and three-quarters of admissions from this period were from the North Island.<sup>1191</sup>

It was noted in the 1982 Inspection Report that the younger residents admitted to Campbell Park often functioned at a much younger level than their age and needed a lot of individual attention which staff sometimes were not able to give.<sup>1192</sup>

By 1985 there were three units at the Home, the junior, intermediate and senior.<sup>1193</sup> There were fewer admissions of the 12 year age group in 1985 and it was proposed that the junior section be closed because of this to leave two groups generally covering ages 12 to 17 years.<sup>1194</sup> The 1986 Inspection Report commented that the junior house, which had been closed, be re-opened, "... for a small group of younger boys who at the moment are at some risk with the older ... lads."<sup>1195</sup>

There was a decrease in suitable referrals to Campbell Park in 1985 which was reflected in the low enrolment figures.<sup>1196</sup>

In 1986 the maximum roll of the school was limited to 72.<sup>1197</sup>

With the impending closure of Campbell Park in 1987, steps were taken to ensure that every student was appropriately placed. Negotiations were finalised in 1987. Some students were to attend Hogben School while the others were to attend mainstream schools with extra support - one such group receiving 12 hours part-time teaching assistance and five hours teacher aide assistance and the other group would receive ten hours teacher assistance and five hours teacher aid assistance. This was to continue with them until they left the school system.<sup>1198</sup>

## Length of stay

There is negligible information held on the Campbell Park files about the length of stay of pupils.

<sup>1188</sup> Campbell Park School Roll, PG Aspden, Principal 08/10/82, Campbell Park Profile 19900.

<sup>1189</sup> These admissions were made at the direction of the Director-General of the Department of Education.

<sup>1190</sup> Campbell Park School Roll, PG Aspden, Principal 08/10/82, Campbell Park Profile 19900.

<sup>1191</sup> Campbell Park School Roll, PG Aspden, Principal 08/10/82, Campbell Park Profile 19900.

<sup>1192</sup> Inspection Report 10-14/10/82, Campbell Park Reports 19900.

<sup>1193</sup> Memo, KA Milne for Director-General to Regional Superintendent of Education and others 16/12/85, Campbell Park Admission 19902.

<sup>1194</sup> Memo, KA Milne for Director-General to Regional Superintendent of Education and others 16/12/85, Campbell Park Admission 19902.

<sup>1195</sup> Inspection Report 24-27/02/86, Campbell Park Reports 19902.

<sup>1196</sup> Memo, KA Milne for Director-General to Regional Superintendent of Education and others 16/12/85, Campbell Park Admission 19902.

<sup>1197</sup> Memo, KA Milne for Director-General to Regional Superintendent of Education and others 16/12/85, Campbell Park Admission 19902.

<sup>1198</sup> Memo, DF Brown, Director Special Education to Regional Superintendents of Education and others 14/08/87, Campbell Park Education O7D 77-5 Part 4.

In 1956 the Principal considered that care needed to be taken when admitting younger boys to Otekaikē as the long stay for these residents meant there was a tendency for them to become institutionalised.<sup>1199</sup>

The normal leaving age in 1956 was 17, but the Principal noted that if a boy reached 19 years of age and was still unable to cope managing his own affairs, the he should be transferred to a custodial home for further training.<sup>1200</sup>

The Principal stated in his 1971 Annual Report that the optimum length of stay was three to four terms and this was reached that year.<sup>1201</sup> This length of stay was shorter than in previous years, but was considered a sound policy because the motivation for possible discharge in the foreseeable future was reflected through improved behaviour, "... boys are not allowed to vegetate through subjection over a long period to institution routines," and it was the most economic use of resources.<sup>1202</sup> However, there were disadvantages to the shorter length of stay in increased pressure on staff.<sup>1203</sup>

Residents were discharged from Campbell Park when it was, "... considered that their education, training and development of personal resources will enable them to cope happily in the community."<sup>1204</sup>

The Code of Practice noted that residents were, "... discharged to their home districts when it is considered that they have developed sufficient personal and social resources to cope, at least marginally, in the community if given some home district support from the referral agency."<sup>1205</sup> A discharge committee would meet at the beginning of each term to review each resident's placement.<sup>1206</sup>

The average length of stay had increased again during the 1980s, and by 1984 was described as being approximately two to three years.<sup>1207</sup> It was noted in the 1983 Campbell Park School Magazine that one boy stayed over 40 years.<sup>1208</sup>

However, the 1984 admission procedures stated that, "While it is desirable for a period in residential schools to be as brief as possible, parents or guardians of each child should be made aware that admission for between one to two years is usually required for a child's personal programme to be effective."<sup>1209</sup> This indicates that the actual length of stay was often longer than official policy.

## Programmes and care

There is limited information held on the Campbell Park files prior to 1974.

<sup>1199</sup> Notes on organisation and policy of Otekaikē, D O'Connor, 06/11/56, Campbell Park Profile 24605.

<sup>1200</sup> Notes on organisation and policy of Otekaikē, D O'Connor, 06/11/56, Campbell Park Profile 24605.

<sup>1201</sup> Annual Report 1971, Campbell Park Reports F5000002919978.

<sup>1202</sup> Annual Report 1971, Campbell Park Reports F5000002919978.

<sup>1203</sup> Annual Report 1971, Campbell Park Reports F5000002919978. Please refer to footnote 176.

<sup>1204</sup> Campbell Park Report 28/09/74, Campbell Park Reports F5000002919978.

<sup>1205</sup> Campbell Park Code of Practice 1984, Campbell Park Profile F5000004059543.

<sup>1206</sup> Campbell Park Code of Practice 1984, Campbell Park Profile F5000004059543.

<sup>1207</sup> Campbell Park Code of Practice 1984, Campbell Park Profile F5000004059543.

<sup>1208</sup> Campbell Park School Magazine 1983, Campbell Park Profile F5000002791151.

<sup>1209</sup> Circular Memorandum 1984/21: Admission and Discharge Procedures for Campbell Park, Hogben and Salisbury Girls' Residential Schools 05/03/84, Campbell Park Admission 19900.



Recreation at Campbell Park in 1958 consisted of many sports, craft work and some basic training in cooking and darning.<sup>1210</sup> Some of the residents belonged to cubs or scouts.<sup>1211</sup>

Campbell Park School had a prospectus and seemed to issue a school magazine each year. The Prospectus on Campbell Park was available through the Department of Education, the Department of Social Welfare, and Psychologists.<sup>1212</sup>

The staff at Campbell Park, "... co-ordinate their efforts to provide for the individual needs of the boys in all aspects of their development so that they may achieve independence, acceptance and integration in society."<sup>1213</sup> The agency responsible for a boy's admission to Campbell Park would maintain contact with the family both during and following the resident's stay at the Institution.<sup>1214</sup> A report on each child was given every six months to the home district and the social worker or psychologist concerned is expected to discuss it with the child's family.<sup>1215</sup>

Sporting activities were increased in 1971 and Campbell Park felt the need to have a more comprehensive sports programme – but they were hindered by the lack of a recreational officer.<sup>1216</sup>

An effective Religious Instruction Programme, with representatives from most denominations, was established at Campbell Park during 1971.<sup>1217</sup>

In 1973 a recommendation was made that the grounds area become an area of activity for all residents after school and at weekends, much as it would in their own homes.<sup>1218</sup>

In 1974, each resident was given pocket money in order for them to appreciate the value of money. Some of this had to be banked each week.<sup>1219</sup>

The school had large playing fields, trampolines, a swimming pool and a gymnasium for a wide range of sports to be played.<sup>1220</sup> There were also indoor recreation facilities such as table tennis and billiards available.<sup>1221</sup>

In 1978 it was said that the introduction of activities such as disco dancing and skate boarding helped the normalisation of social life in the Institution.<sup>1222</sup>

The 1978 Inspection report said the meetings between staff and the senior cottage where discussions were held publicly with the individual and his peers was a, "... powerful effective socialisation session which reinforced the boys' consciousness of the criteria for acceptable behaviour and outlook."<sup>1223</sup> But the issue of at what stage

<sup>1210</sup> Child Welfare Division Field Officers Manual, undated circa 1958.

<sup>1211</sup> Child Welfare Division Field Officers Manual, undated circa 1958.

<sup>1212</sup> Inspection Report 10-14/10/82, Campbell Park Reports 19900.

<sup>1213</sup> Campbell Park Report 28/09/74, Campbell Park Reports F5000002919978.

<sup>1214</sup> Campbell Park Report 28/09/74, Campbell Park Reports F5000002919978.

<sup>1215</sup> Inspection Report 10-14/10/82, Campbell Park Reports 19900.

<sup>1216</sup> Annual Report 1971, Campbell Park Reports F5000002919978.

<sup>1217</sup> Annual Report 1971, Campbell Park Reports F5000002919978.

<sup>1218</sup> Campbell Park School Visit, National Organiser (Backward Pupils) 24-27/07/73, Campbell Park Education 11121.

<sup>1219</sup> Campbell Park Report 28/09/74, Campbell Park Reports F5000002919978.

<sup>1220</sup> Campbell Park Report 28/09/74, Campbell Park Reports F5000002919978.

<sup>1221</sup> Campbell Park Report 28/09/74, Campbell Park Reports F5000002919978.

<sup>1222</sup> Inspection Report 7-18/10/78, Campbell Park Reports 11121.

<sup>1223</sup> Inspection Report 7-18/10/78, Campbell Park Reports 11121.

publicity of personal defects and misbehaviour by an individual may be considered rewarding or suggestive to others needed to be looked at.<sup>1224</sup>

A former pupil recalled that there were head boys at Campbell Park who were voted by their peers and were in charge of discipline by sending other pupils to the teacher. "I don't remember any favouritism or antagonism show by these boys..."<sup>1225</sup>

The 1982 Inspection Report remarked on the isolation of the School throwing up challenges including trying to make sure the residents kept in touch with the real world.<sup>1226</sup> It was considered that Campbell Park's record with this was good with the introduction of disco dancing, BMX racing, pool, video games, and other sporting activities.<sup>1227</sup>

The implementation of long term planning with specific objectives for each individual was noted in the Inspection Report 1982.<sup>1228</sup>

The 1982 Inspection Report also noted that the casework goal was a general one focussed on, "... maturation, good general care, parenting and good modelling ... expected to help boys develop to a stage where they can return to the community..."<sup>1229</sup> It was felt that while this was good, it could be tailored more specifically to meet individual needs.<sup>1230</sup>

There was a Code of Practice in 1984 that looked at the philosophy of the Campbell Park, its objectives and the staff's obligations to the residents.<sup>1231</sup>

The staff in the Senior house ran a training programme for the residents about living skills. Those ready for discharge were introduced to the flatting experience by having the use of the house next to their cottage. They would cook their own meals and keep the place clean.<sup>1232</sup> This programme was still continuing and considered to be very beneficial in 1986.<sup>1233</sup>

In 1982, the staff were involved in getting the residents involved in sporting activities and sports were played with other schools including visits to and from the school.<sup>1234</sup>

During the evenings at Campbell Park, a variety of activities were organised by staff including a hobby evening, films and picnics.<sup>1235</sup> The older residents were taught the driving theory necessary to obtain a drivers licence.<sup>1236</sup>

In 1982 it was noted that, "Rest periods are sometimes observed for the younger boys during the weekends but are not regular daily practice."<sup>1237</sup>

The Inspection Report of 1986 states that Campbell Park had, "... made effective use of its location and the strengths of its environment to implement a programme

<sup>1224</sup> Inspection Report 7-18/10/78, Campbell Park Reports 11121.

<sup>1225</sup> Watson, Owen (undated, circa 1980) *Campbell Park School: The way I remember it*, Dunedin Public Library. (Please note that this is an uncorroborated account of a former pupil).

<sup>1226</sup> Inspection Report 10-14/10/82, Campbell Park Reports 19900.

<sup>1227</sup> Inspection Report 10-14/10/82, Campbell Park Reports 19900.

<sup>1228</sup> Inspection Report 10-14/10/82, Campbell Park Reports 19900.

<sup>1229</sup> Inspection Report 10-14/10/82, Campbell Park Reports 19900.

<sup>1230</sup> Inspection Report 10-14/10/82, Campbell Park Reports 19900.

<sup>1231</sup> Campbell Park Code of Practice 1984, Campbell Park Profile F5000004059543. For more detail, see the file.

<sup>1232</sup> Inspection Report 10-14/10/82, Campbell Park Reports 19900.

<sup>1233</sup> Inspection Report 24-27/02/86, Campbell Park Reports 19902.

<sup>1234</sup> Inspection Report 10-14/10/82, Campbell Park Reports 19900.

<sup>1235</sup> Inspection Report 10-14/10/82, Campbell Park Reports 19900.

<sup>1236</sup> Inspection Report 10-14/10/82, Campbell Park Reports 19900.

<sup>1237</sup> Inspection Report 10-14/10/82, Campbell Park Reports 19900.

that presents one model for the handling of boys with intellectual and behavioural problems."<sup>1238</sup> It also used the location to compensate for some disadvantages through activities such as skiing and tramping.<sup>1239</sup>

It was noted in 1986 that with a high percentage of residents from a Maori or Polynesian background, Maori language and culture needed to be part of the school activities.<sup>1240</sup> It was noted that statements, "... on a philosophy of residential care or code of practice and recognition of cultural heritage should be included," at Campbell Park and that the statements used in the Handbook for Teachers in Department of Social Welfare Institutions would provide a good basis.<sup>1241</sup>

The decrease in the Institution's roll and the closure of the junior cottage allowed for two staff to provide a special programme for the younger residents in the intermediate cottage in 1986.<sup>1242</sup>

In 1986 individual case plans were set up after six weeks from the date of admission. This Residential Care Plan was prepared by the residential social worker and approved by the senior residential social worker.<sup>1243</sup> An Education Care Plan was also prepared by the teacher.<sup>1244</sup> The Inspection Report commented that more coordination of these plans would ensure that targets are better achieved, and that residents should be more involved in the plans.<sup>1245</sup> The plans were update each six months.<sup>1246</sup>

There was a "Go for Gold" system operating at Campbell Park in 1986 which was well accepted by the residents.<sup>1247</sup> It was a progression system with a set of "realistic and readily attainable" series of targets for the residents.<sup>1248</sup>

## Work and training

There is no information about work and training in Campbell Park held on the files prior to 1971.

The Senior Section of Campbell Park aimed to give boys in the 15 to 17 year age group work experience and training.<sup>1249</sup> Some residents would receive work training in another district for a few weeks and would stay at the Family Home in that district.<sup>1250</sup> It was thought by the Principal that the work training programme for senior boys would be better placed closer to the business community or if it had to stay at Campbell Park, then the system should be reviewed to provide, "... specific skills more associated with industry and trade," through the appointment of more highly qualified instructors and the possibility of apprenticeships.<sup>1251</sup>

<sup>1238</sup> Inspection Report 24-27/02/86, Campbell Park Reports 19902.

<sup>1239</sup> Inspection Report 24-27/02/86, Campbell Park Reports 19902.

<sup>1240</sup> Inspection Report 24-27/02/86, Campbell Park Reports 19902.

<sup>1241</sup> Inspection Report 24-27/02/86, Campbell Park Reports 19902.

<sup>1242</sup> Inspection Report 24-27/02/86, Campbell Park Reports 19902.

<sup>1243</sup> Inspection Report 24-27/02/86, Campbell Park Reports 19902.

<sup>1244</sup> Inspection Report 24-27/02/86, Campbell Park Reports 19902.

<sup>1245</sup> Inspection Report 24-27/02/86, Campbell Park Reports 19902.

<sup>1246</sup> Inspection Report 24-27/02/86, Campbell Park Reports 19902.

<sup>1247</sup> Inspection Report 24-27/02/86, Campbell Park Reports 19902.

<sup>1248</sup> Inspection Report 24-27/02/86, Campbell Park Reports 19902.

<sup>1249</sup> Annual Report 1971, Campbell Park Reports F5000002919978.

<sup>1250</sup> Annual Report 1971, Campbell Park Reports F5000002919978.

<sup>1251</sup> Annual Report 1971, Campbell Park Reports F5000002919978.

The boys in the senior section attended vocational class room work three times a week and manual training once a week to learn the skills to obtain and hold employment on return to the community.<sup>1252</sup> This class also gave them the opportunity to gain a driver's licence.<sup>1253</sup> For the remainder of the time, the boys in the senior section received various work training under the guidance of instructors in areas such as laundry, gardening, painting and others.<sup>1254</sup>

In 1973 a visit to Campbell Park by the National Organiser (Backward Pupils) made recommendations about each of the nine training areas that were in use or could have been in use at the Institution.<sup>1255</sup> The work training and experience programme was considered to be lacking and an overall organiser was considered to be urgently needed.<sup>1256</sup> A chief instructor had been appointed by 1982.<sup>1257</sup>

It was remarked in 1986 that the remote location of Campbell Park was a barrier to developing work experience programmes.<sup>1258</sup>

There were nine instruction areas at Campbell Park for the senior residents: engineering, laundry, gardening, poultry, carpentry, painting, grounds, mechanics and driving. Some boys were also placed with the cook and kitchen staff.<sup>1259</sup>

There was also a programme operating which emphasised the development of responsibility and cooperative social skills which was recommended to be developed further into areas of self-esteem, independence and skills in areas such as interview techniques.<sup>1260</sup>

## Resident-to-resident issues

There was limited information regarding resident-to-resident issues on Campbell Park files.

In 1969 two residents of Campbell Park presented with damaged arms which were found to have been caused by an older resident who then threatened them with reprisals if they told what happened. This older resident had not progressed past the stage of play with the younger group, but because he was older had become the leader. The injuries were considered to not have been maliciously inflicted.<sup>1261</sup>

A Teacher at Campbell Park noted on a resident's school report in 1978 that he had been involved in sexual misconduct, possibly only mutual masturbation, with an "older known molester" and that, "While only one recent incident has been recorded there is a general attitude among some of the boys which would suggest that the

<sup>1252</sup> Campbell Park Report 28/09/74, Campbell Park Reports F5000002919978.

<sup>1253</sup> Campbell Park Report 28/09/74, Campbell Park Reports F5000002919978.

<sup>1254</sup> Campbell Park Report 28/09/74, Campbell Park Reports F5000002919978.

<sup>1255</sup> Campbell Park School Visit, National Organiser (Backward Pupils) 24-27/07/73, Campbell Park Education 11121. For more detail, see the file.

<sup>1256</sup> Campbell Park School Visit, National Organiser (Backward Pupils) 24-27/07/73, Campbell Park Education 11121.

<sup>1257</sup> Inspection Report 10-14/10/82, Campbell Park Reports 19900.

<sup>1258</sup> Inspection Report 24-27/02/86, Campbell Park Reports 19902.

<sup>1259</sup> Inspection Report 24-27/02/86, Campbell Park Reports 19902.

<sup>1260</sup> Inspection Report 24-27/02/86, Campbell Park Reports 19902.

<sup>1261</sup> Memo, DF Walsh, Principal to Superintendent 15/08/69, Campbell Park Incidents F5000001599338.

problem is greater than would appear on the surface."<sup>1262</sup> The file does not record whether there was a response to this.

## Health and medication

There is negligible information held on the Campbell Park files regarding health and medication prior to 1971.

A resident doctor was available in Kurow and there were two registered nurses on the staff. The school was equipped with a sick bay and surgery, but illness at the school was small, and this was attributed to the healthy climate.<sup>1263</sup>

In 1971 the local general practitioner and the medical officer of health for Timaru were, "... concerned about the lack of Specialist supervision of the psychotropic drug regimes which have been prescribed for our boys either prior to, or following admission..."<sup>1264</sup> At this time there were 23 boys taking 13 varieties of these type of drugs.<sup>1265</sup> The general practitioner said that he could not properly continue to prescribe such drugs without Specialist supervision and three monthly reviews.<sup>1266</sup> There was no response to this concern recorded on file.

The facilities at Cherry Farm Hospital were considered to be inadequate. Campbell Park had not received a visit from a psychiatrist in over seven months and had been told by the Medical Superintendent of Cherry Farm that they could only see eight cases at any one time.<sup>1267</sup>

Both Medical Matrons left Campbell Park in 1971 and the Principal considered that there were no replacements in sight.<sup>1268</sup>

During 1971 the Institution began to use the services of the Senior Educational Psychologist in Timaru, but this ceased with his transfer and the position remaining unfilled.<sup>1269</sup>

In 1974 the Home was serviced by a psychologist, psychiatrist, doctor and dentist and the matron of Campbell Park was a registered nurse.<sup>1270</sup>

The 1982 Inspection Report recorded that the Institution had good cooperation from the local doctor, the medical room facilities were good, and boys with real or imaginary ailments were treated with kindness and sympathy.<sup>1271</sup>

In 1985 27 psychological reports were received by the school, mainly in relation to discharge placement advice, but some recommendations and advice for the programme development of certain individuals.<sup>1272</sup>

1262

<sup>1263</sup> Notes on organisation and policy of Otekaieke, D O'Connor, 06/11/56, Campbell Park Profile 24605.

<sup>1264</sup> Memo, T Wilson, Principal to Superintendent 06/12/71, Campbell Park Health (unknown file number).

<sup>1265</sup> Memo, T Wilson, Principal to Superintendent 06/12/71, Campbell Park Health (unknown file number).

<sup>1266</sup> Memo, T Wilson, Principal to Superintendent 06/12/71, Campbell Park Health (unknown file number).

<sup>1267</sup> Memo, T Wilson, Principal to Superintendent 06/12/71, Campbell Park Health (unknown file number).

<sup>1268</sup> Annual Report 1971, Campbell Park Reports F5000002919978.

<sup>1269</sup> Annual Report 1971, Campbell Park Reports F5000002919978.

<sup>1270</sup> Campbell Park Report 28/09/74, Campbell Park Reports F5000002919978.

<sup>1271</sup> Inspection Report 10-14/10/82, Campbell Park Reports 19900.

<sup>1272</sup> Inspection Report 24-27/02/86, Campbell Park Reports 19902.

The Code of Practice noted that a psychiatrist visited the Home on a monthly basis.<sup>1273</sup>

## Psychiatric hospital placement

There is negligible information held on Campbell Park files regarding psychiatric hospital placement.

There was a sharp increase in the number of residents being referred for psychiatric help at Cherry Farm Hospital in 1971. The senior staff thought that they should have access to similar Hospitals throughout the country as so many residents were from the North Island.<sup>1274</sup>

Discussions took place in 1971 with executive staff at Cherry Farm and Wakari Hospital regarding future psychiatric referral policy.<sup>1275</sup>

## Staffing

There is no information on staffing at Campbell Park prior to the history of Campbell Park given in the Resident Profile and in this section prior to 1971.

### Staffing Administration

Campbell Park was a Special School under the responsibility of the Department of Education. Even though it was not a Child Welfare Division institution, this Division provided services to Campbell Park in areas such as appointing, training and providing the staff services for all staff excluding the teaching staff.<sup>1276</sup> The Child Welfare Division also provided the general casework service for Principal's of the Special Schools, other interested departmental officers, and teachers.<sup>1277</sup> There was an agreement whereby the Child Welfare Division carried out the practical administration of the Special Schools. The executive authority for the Special Schools was exerted by the Child Welfare Division's Head Office, but that, "... in many respects the instructions which emanate from there conform to the professional and administrative views of the Head Office of the Department."<sup>1278</sup>

The Department of Education provided the Child Welfare Division with psychological services, twenty teachers, and other administration type services.<sup>1279</sup>

<sup>1273</sup> Campbell Park Code of Practice 1984, Campbell Park Profile F5000004059543.

<sup>1274</sup> Annual Report 1971, Campbell Park Reports F5000002919978.

<sup>1275</sup> Annual Report 1971, Campbell Park Reports F5000002919978.

<sup>1276</sup> Memo, KJ Sheen, Director-General Education to Minister of Education 04/09/67, Campbell Park Profile, Department of Education File.

<sup>1277</sup> Memo, KJ Sheen, Director-General Education to Minister of Education 04/09/67, Campbell Park Profile, Department of Education File.

<sup>1278</sup> Memo, AG Hedgman, Chief Office Inspector to Chief Executive Officer 08/10/71, Campbell Park Profile, Department of Education File 45/4/1 Pt1.

<sup>1279</sup> Memo, KJ Sheen, Director-General Education to Minister of Education 04/09/67, Campbell Park Profile, Department of Education File.

The formal establishment of the Department of Social Welfare occurred on 1 April 1972 and the Child Welfare Division separated from the Department of Education and relinquished its administrative responsibilities for the Special Schools.<sup>1280</sup>

In 1978 Mr Manchester (designation unknown) stated that he did not agree with Special Schools remaining under the control of the Department of Education as it seemed that such a high percentage of admissions to these Special Schools were referrals from Child Welfare. He requested that Social Welfare participate in an inspection of Campbell Park<sup>1281</sup> and Mr Lucas (designation unknown) agreed that Social Welfare should take part in an inspection.<sup>1282</sup>

A report in 1978 from Alan Frazer (designation unknown) noted that there needed to be improved communication between the Department of Education and the Department of Social Welfare to enhance awareness of the problems relating to Special Schools. In particular for Campbell Park, he considered that more definite admissions times should be given to parents or Social Welfare as "vague statements" were not helpful and that there should be discussion over the significance of the high percentage of Social Welfare residents placed in Campbell Park.<sup>1283</sup>

It was also noted in 1978 that it had been, "... five years since any kind of report was made on the work of Campbell Park School as a whole" and a proposal was made for a team to visit the Institution which would include a social welfare staff member.<sup>1284</sup>

### Staffing Organisation

1971 was a year of unstable staffing for Campbell Park with a number of staff changes. These movements were considered to be due to the isolation of the Institution and the strain of dealing with large numbers of difficult residents.<sup>1285</sup> At one stage the staff were lacking five of the ten housemasters. The Principal, T Wilson, stated that in spite of this the staff worked admirably and gave complete cooperation.<sup>1286</sup> A senior clerk was employed because the staff could not keep up with routine office duties.<sup>1287</sup>

The teachers at Campbell Park had mandatory extra-supervisory duties until 1971 and even though supervision was still expected from teachers, it decreased due to it being voluntary.<sup>1288</sup>

Due to a staff member who 'slept in' in the senior section going on leave, two nightwatchman were appointed and it was considered that this should be a permanent feature.<sup>1289</sup>

<sup>1280</sup> Memo, KE Haswell, Executive Officer to Regional Offices, Principals Special Schools and Child Welfare Head Office, 22/03/72, Campbell Park Profile 11121.

<sup>1281</sup> Memo, BM Manchester (designation unknown) to Mr Te Punga, Acting Director-General 30/08/78, Campbell Park Profile 11121.

<sup>1282</sup> Memo, JH Lucas, designation unknown to Mr Te Punga, designation unknown 31/08/78, on Memo, BM Manchester (designation unknown) to Mr Te Punga, Acting Director-General 30/08/78, Campbell Park Profile 11121.

<sup>1283</sup> Report regarding Campbell Park, Alan Frazer, designation unknown 23/06/78, Campbell Park Reports 11121.

<sup>1284</sup> Memo, Owen Lawn, Inspector of Schools, Department of Education to Mr T Ball, designation unknown, Department of Social Welfare 17/08/78, Campbell Park Reports 11121.

<sup>1285</sup> Annual Report 1971, Campbell Park Reports F5000002919978.

<sup>1286</sup> Annual Report 1971, Campbell Park Reports F5000002919978.

<sup>1287</sup> Annual Report 1971, Campbell Park Reports F5000002919978.

<sup>1288</sup> Annual Report 1971, Campbell Park Reports F5000002919978.

There was a change in Principal in 1971 when Mr T Wilson was appointed to replace Mr Walsh.<sup>1290</sup>

In 1973 it was commented that the six assistant housemasters who staffed the grounds also assisted in the organisation of cottage control and recreational activities.<sup>1291</sup>

In 1973 a recreational officer was considered urgent as was an organiser for the work experience and training.<sup>1292</sup>

Each section of the Home (the residents' units) were staffed by three housemasters and a cottage matron who cared for the boys and organised their recreational and social activities amongst other things.<sup>1293</sup>

An inspection report in 1978 commented that there were many improvements in staffing, "... from a time when memories of bad newspaper publicity, shortage of staff, a housemasters' strike and eruptions of violence were fresh."<sup>1294</sup> It was said that this improvement was due to the Principal of the previous five years who, "... worked so effectively to realise his clear conception of what Campbell Park should be."<sup>1295</sup>

The inspection report in 1978 recommended that the influence of women on the residents and the cottage life policy and practice at Campbell Park be increased.<sup>1296</sup>

The 1982 inspection reported noted the rising quality of staff that were recruited in residential care and instructor groups.<sup>1297</sup> The staffing had been stable for some time.<sup>1298</sup> Two night staff were on duty at any time, split between the junior and senior sections. The Inspection report noted that there was an imbalance in the workloads between these areas, with the junior section night staff dealing with a high number of bedwetters.<sup>1299</sup> The night staff's task was the care and responsibility for the well-being, safety and security of the residents.<sup>1300</sup>

The 1982 Inspection Report noted that when the junior and intermediate Houses were full, the staff were, "... stretched to considerable limits," and it was felt that the Assistant Residential Social Workers should have some cleaning duties relaxed and some ancillary staff should be employed in each cottage to alleviate some of the pressures.<sup>1301</sup>

There was a marked improvement from the Instructors (who were involved in areas such as gardening carpentry and engineering) in their attitude, planning, evaluation and liaison with the other staff groups because of the appointment of a chief instructor.<sup>1302</sup> A desk file for instructors was also introduced and with the improved

<sup>1289</sup> Annual Report 1971, Campbell Park Reports F5000002919978.

<sup>1290</sup> Annual Report 1971, Campbell Park Reports F5000002919978.

<sup>1291</sup> Campbell Park School Visit, National Organiser (Backward Pupils) 24-27/07/73, Campbell Park Education 11121.

<sup>1292</sup> Campbell Park School Visit, National Organiser (Backward Pupils) 24-27/07/73, Campbell Park Education 11121.

<sup>1293</sup> Campbell Park Report 28/09/74, Campbell Park Reports F5000002919978.

<sup>1294</sup> Inspection Report 7-18/10/78, Campbell Park Reports 11121.

<sup>1295</sup> Inspection Report 7-18/10/78, Campbell Park Reports 11121.

<sup>1296</sup> Inspection Report 7-18/10/78, Campbell Park Reports 11121.

<sup>1297</sup> Inspection Report 10-14/10/82, Campbell Park Reports 19900.

<sup>1298</sup> Inspection Report 10-14/10/82, Campbell Park Reports 19900.

<sup>1299</sup> Inspection Report 10-14/10/82, Campbell Park Reports 19900.

<sup>1300</sup> Inspection Report 10-14/10/82, Campbell Park Reports 19900.

<sup>1301</sup> Inspection Report 10-14/10/82, Campbell Park Reports 19900.

<sup>1302</sup> Inspection Report 10-14/10/82, Campbell Park Reports 19900.



planning and evaluation there was a much more professional approach shown from this group.<sup>1303</sup>

In 1986 all assistant residential social workers were given a caseload of a maximum of two residents.<sup>1304</sup> It was considered that the residential staff had become, "... more involved in the 'social work' aspects of residential care."<sup>1305</sup>

In 1986 it was noted that fee for service staff were not a major part of the schools staff group due to the low pay and the distance to Campbell Park.<sup>1306</sup>

## Code of Practice

A code of practice was introduced in 1984 and listed the responsibilities and duties staff had to the pupils. The aim of the Institution was "... to provide group care and planned individual treatment and educational programmes for pupils whose present needs cannot be adequately met in the community. The ultimate aim is to return the pupils to the community better equipped to cope academically, socially and/or vocationally." Some examples of these duties that the staff had to the pupils included having the responsibility to protect the rights and dignity of the pupil, to educate the pupil in his responsibility towards himself and others, to provide a safe, secure and pleasant environment and to develop an appreciation of the different cultural backgrounds of the pupils.

## Training and Supervision

The Principal commented in 1971 that while the need for staff training was fully understood and supported, it was possibly not appropriate when it was accomplished at the expense of the staff and the residents as there were no replacements to take over the duties of those going on training.<sup>1307</sup>

A daily instructor's meeting was established in 1971 to coordinate the work of instructors and discuss the needs of individual residents.<sup>1308</sup>

In 1974 the Principal of Campbell Park asked for assistance with an in-service training course to be held at the Institution which was the first of its kind to be held when all staff were involved.<sup>1309</sup> The theme of the course was based on the responsibility of staff in influencing residents and providing personal standards.<sup>1310</sup>

The 1978 Inspection Report commented on the growth of in-service training, the well organised desk files, the useful staff library and the good beginning on the house manual.<sup>1311</sup>

The provision of cottage meetings involving residential social workers and teachers to discuss cases was noted in the 1982 Inspection Report.<sup>1312</sup>

<sup>1303</sup> Inspection Report 10-14/10/82, Campbell Park Reports 19900.

<sup>1304</sup> Inspection Report 24-27/02/86, Campbell Park Reports 19902.

<sup>1305</sup> Inspection Report 24-27/02/86, Campbell Park Reports 19902.

<sup>1306</sup> Inspection Report 24-27/02/86, Campbell Park Reports 19902.

<sup>1307</sup> Annual Report 1971, Campbell Park Reports F5000002919978.

<sup>1308</sup> Annual Report 1971, Campbell Park Reports F5000002919978.

<sup>1309</sup> Memo, P Walsh, for Principal to Assistant Director (Social Work) 12/07/74, Campbell Park Staffing F5000000925635.

<sup>1310</sup> Memo, P Walsh, for Principal to Assistant Director (Social Work) 12/07/74, Campbell Park Staffing F5000000925635.

<sup>1311</sup> Inspection Report 7-18/10/78, Campbell Park Reports 11121.

<sup>1312</sup> Inspection Report 10-14/10/82, Campbell Park Reports 19900.

Copies of the applicable Acts and Determinations were held by the Assistant Principal.<sup>1313</sup> Extensive and comprehensive desk files were held for residential social workers, assistant residential social workers and Instructors.<sup>1314</sup>

The 1982 Inspection Report noted that the main form of communication was by meeting and that five meetings were held (although it does not note how often) including; senior staff meeting, assistant principal and senior residential social workers, cottages, instructors and teachers.<sup>1315</sup> By this time Campbell Park had also developed a staff induction programme.<sup>1316</sup>

It was thought in the 1982 Inspection Report that changes in the staffing organisation, such as the change in status from attendants to assistant residential social workers, should have been accompanied with a training package. It was also thought that the Department of Education should assist with courses such as those planned for staff in the Social Welfare Institutions.<sup>1317</sup>

The general casework goal at Campbell Park was considered to be lacking in individual training for residents and a more structured approach to casework and casework supervision was recommended in the Inspection Report.<sup>1318</sup> It was considered that the assistant residential social workers should have a small caseload and be supervised by residential social workers as this would reduce their caseload. The residential social workers were supervised by the senior residential social workers on a regular basis, details of which are provided in the inspectors report.<sup>1319</sup>

By 1986 there had been an increase in both internal and external staff training opportunities,<sup>1320</sup> but it was felt that the provision of a staff training checklist be developed for those new staff who needed early and intensive staff training in basic childcare and management.<sup>1321</sup>

There was a firm commitment to the concept of supervision in 1986 and the sessions were considered to be very important.<sup>1322</sup>

## Concern

For ten months of 1971 the top administrative officers were under, "... acute strain arising from the lack of a Senior Section Housemaster and a Chief Instructor, which were both regarded as essential..."<sup>1323</sup> The Principal considered that more staff housing was necessary in order to have a full staff.<sup>1324</sup>

The disadvantage of the shorter length of stay than was considered optimum in 1971 was that staff were strained and an improved staff ratio was considered necessary, especially in clerical, teaching, cottage and administrative staff.<sup>1325</sup>

<sup>1313</sup> Inspection Report 10-14/10/82, Campbell Park Reports 19900.

<sup>1314</sup> Inspection Report 10-14/10/82, Campbell Park Reports 19900. A residential social workers desk file is held on file.

<sup>1315</sup> Inspection Report 10-14/10/82, Campbell Park Reports 19900.

<sup>1316</sup> Inspection Report 10-14/10/82, Campbell Park Reports 19900. This staff induction programme is not recorded on Campbell Park files.

<sup>1317</sup> Inspection Report 10-14/10/82, Campbell Park Reports 19900.

<sup>1318</sup> Inspection Report 10-14/10/82, Campbell Park Reports 19900.

<sup>1319</sup> Inspection Report 10-14/10/82, Campbell Park Reports 19900.

<sup>1320</sup> Inspection Report 24-27/02/86, Campbell Park Reports 19902.

<sup>1321</sup> Inspection Report 24-27/02/86, Campbell Park Reports 19902.

<sup>1322</sup> Inspection Report 24-27/02/86, Campbell Park Reports 19902.

<sup>1323</sup> Annual Report 1971, Campbell Park Reports F5000002919978.

<sup>1324</sup> Annual Report 1971, Campbell Park Reports F5000002919978.

<sup>1325</sup> Annual Report 1971, Campbell Park Reports F5000002919978.

The Principal commented in 1971 that there was still much to be desired in relation to the quality of work and attitudes of instructors at Campbell Park.<sup>1326</sup>

In 1973 there was considered to be a need for greater staff liaison between all sections.<sup>1327</sup>

The 1982 Inspection Report commented on the isolation of the Campbell Park being a problem for staff in bringing grievances as the majority of the staff lived close to each other on the school site.<sup>1328</sup>

The Inspection Report in 1986 noted that the, "... close-knit nature of the Campbell Park community undoubtedly can heighten what are relatively minor procedural, philosophical or personal disagreements."<sup>1329</sup>

Although no abuse by staff is recorded in the Campbell Park files, in October 2004 Noel George Robinson, a former housemaster of Campbell Park school was convicted on six sexual assault charges against a pupil of the school during the 1980's and was sentenced to six years imprisonment.<sup>1330</sup>

## Schooling

There is limited information on schooling held on the Campbell Park files prior to 1971.

## Staffing

The teaching staff in 1971 was comprised mainly of permanent and relieving teachers.<sup>1331</sup>

The Principal repeated his quote from the 1970 Annual Report in the 1971 Annual Report as he considered it still appropriate. "The anomalous position is therefore that while we believe that stable staffing by specially qualified and emotionally suitable teachers is essential, we are in fact being forced to accept a large proportion of transient staff who are inexperienced and sometimes of unstable temperament."<sup>1332</sup>

Due to the absence of relieving staff in 1971, the Day School staff were not able to attend In-Service training that was organised away from the school.<sup>1333</sup>

In 1986 the staffing organisation of the day school at Campbell Park was one head teacher, three senior teachers and six basic scale teachers.<sup>1334</sup> It was considered that the head teacher should ensure that he spent a significant amount of time in

<sup>1326</sup> Annual Report 1971, Campbell Park Reports F5000002919978.

<sup>1327</sup> Campbell Park School Visit, National Organiser (Backward Pupils) 24-27/07/73, Campbell Park Education 11121.

<sup>1328</sup> Inspection Report 10-14/10/82, Campbell Park Reports 1990.

<sup>1329</sup> Inspection Report 24-27/02/86, Campbell Park Reports 19902.

<sup>1330</sup> Otago Daily Times "Six years' jail for molesting student" 20/10/04, Campbell Park Incidents (no file ref)

<sup>1331</sup> Annual Report 1971, Campbell Park Reports F5000002919978.

<sup>1332</sup> Annual Report 1971, Campbell Park Reports F5000002919978.

<sup>1333</sup> Annual Report 1971, Campbell Park Reports F5000002919978.

<sup>1334</sup> Inspection Report 24-27/02/86, Campbell Park Reports 19902.

cooperative teaching to influence pupil management, curriculum development and pupil evaluation.<sup>1335</sup>

## Programme

There were two parts to the school structure; the junior school and the vocational class.<sup>1336</sup> Admissions under 15 went to the junior school and attended normal day school. When they reached the age of 15, they were transferred to the senior school where they were instructed in trades, farming and work habits.<sup>1337</sup>

The junior section of the school in 1958 had nine full time teachers so that classes were small and students could have individual attention.<sup>1338</sup> There were approximately 80 residents of school age.<sup>1339</sup> Basic education was given in the area of reading, writing, measuring and the practical use of money in order for a pupil to be able to read a newspaper and count change by the time he had finished school.<sup>1340</sup>

The senior section catered for 45 residents over the age of 15. Training was given in areas such as carpentry and painting and these residents were given instruction in social studies and letter writing, although no formal schooling.<sup>1341</sup> It was noted that on rare occasions when residents showed "unusual ability" in practicing a trade, permission was obtained to waive the academic requirements of the Apprenticeship Committee.<sup>1342</sup>

It was considered unwise for a resident to leave Campbell Park just after obtaining school leaving age as they would not have had any grounding in vocational training.<sup>1343</sup> It was also considered that "backward boys" would be too immature socially and would not be able to cope with normal society.<sup>1344</sup>

The junior school was divided mainly in terms of reading ability in 1970 with one mixed ability group determined on social compatibility.<sup>1345</sup> Team-teaching for the pre-reading and early reading class was abandoned in 1971 due to increase in pupil to staff ratio and this was considered detrimental especially in light of the increase in emotionally disturbed children in this age group.<sup>1346</sup>

The vocational class had a problem with pupil movement due to pressures in the intermediate section necessitating the transfer of older residents to the senior section and the need for more full-time work training boys resulting from Senior Section discharges.<sup>1347</sup>

In 1973 a visit by the National Organiser of backward pupils considered that the junior, intermediate and senior sections of the Home were too rigidly enforced and that schooling should not be automatically stopped for those transferred to the senior

<sup>1335</sup> Inspection Report 24-27/02/86, Campbell Park Reports 19902.

<sup>1336</sup> Annual Report 1971, Campbell Park Reports F5000002919978.

<sup>1337</sup> Notes on organisation and policy of Otekaike, D O'Connor, 06/11/56, Campbell Park Profile 24605.

<sup>1338</sup> Child Welfare Division Field Officers Manual, undated circa 1958.

<sup>1339</sup> Child Welfare Division Field Officers Manual, undated circa 1958.

<sup>1340</sup> Child Welfare Division Field Officers Manual, undated circa 1958.

<sup>1341</sup> Child Welfare Division Field Officers Manual, undated circa 1958.

<sup>1342</sup> Child Welfare Division Field Officers Manual, undated circa 1958.

<sup>1343</sup> Child Welfare Division Field Officers Manual, undated circa 1958.

<sup>1344</sup> Notes on organisation and policy of Otekaike, D O'Connor, 06/11/56, Campbell Park Profile 24605.

<sup>1345</sup> Annual Report 1971, Campbell Park Reports F5000002919978.

<sup>1346</sup> Annual Report 1971, Campbell Park Reports F5000002919978.

<sup>1347</sup> Annual Report 1971, Campbell Park Reports F5000002919978.

section.<sup>1348</sup> This was addressed in 1974 when in a report on Campbell Park School it was noted that once a boy had reached 15, close assessment of his needs determined whether he should be transferred to the senior section or whether a full school programme was still desirable.<sup>1349</sup>

A report on the school in 1974 stated that all boys under the age of 15 attended school full time. The classes were small and attempted to meet the pupil's individual needs.<sup>1350</sup> The school focussed on a general primary school curriculum but those pupils who were of high school age and ability followed a modified high school programme.<sup>1351</sup>

Educational visits to places of interest in the local district were made as part of the programme and occasional extended visits to areas of special interest were taken as part of a study programme.<sup>1352</sup> Outside sports meetings were also attended regularly.<sup>1353</sup> There was a woodwork/metalwork room for all pupils to gain experience.<sup>1354</sup>

The inspection report in 1982 noted that there was variety of teaching approaches at Campbell Park including bike-based teaching, book-based teaching, from mother care to work experience.<sup>1355</sup> Some of the specific points noted in the inspection report were, "The quite influential scheme which generally provides a good useable framework on which class teachers can plan more specific class programmes relevant to their pupils' particular needs ... the good ... quality of formal reporting on pupils" as well as the emphasis on art, writing letters home and use of visual aids.<sup>1356</sup> The vocational programmes were considered to be interesting and educational.<sup>1357</sup>

The Inspector considered that the staff at the school worked to an appropriate range of experiences for the pupils, and the pupils were said to make significant but slow gains.<sup>1358</sup>

A new scheme was developed in 1985 which provided a cohesive and balanced curriculum.<sup>1359</sup>

The 1986 Inspection Report considered that the amount of time pupils spent listening to directions and teacher instructions should be examined.<sup>1360</sup>

It was also noted in 1986 that when it was appropriate, residents were placed in Kurow Area School and Otekaike Primary School.<sup>1361</sup>

In 1986 an Education Care Plan was prepared by the teacher to compliment the Residential Care plan. The Inspection Report considered that there needed to be more coordination of these plans.<sup>1362</sup>

<sup>1348</sup> Campbell Park School Visit, National Organiser (Backward Pupils) 24-27/07/73, Campbell Park Education 11121.

<sup>1349</sup> Campbell Park Report 28/09/74, Campbell Park Reports F5000002919978.

<sup>1350</sup> Campbell Park Report 28/09/74, Campbell Park Reports F5000002919978.

<sup>1351</sup> Campbell Park Report 28/09/74, Campbell Park Reports F5000002919978.

<sup>1352</sup> Annual Report 1971, Campbell Park Reports F5000002919978.

<sup>1353</sup> Annual Report 1971, Campbell Park Reports F5000002919978.

<sup>1354</sup> Campbell Park Report 28/09/74, Campbell Park Reports F5000002919978.

<sup>1355</sup> Inspection Report 10-14/10/82, Campbell Park Reports 19900.

<sup>1356</sup> Inspection Report 10-14/10/82, Campbell Park Reports 19900.

<sup>1357</sup> Inspection Report 10-14/10/82, Campbell Park Reports 19900.

<sup>1358</sup> Inspection Report 24-27/02/86, Campbell Park Reports 19902.

<sup>1359</sup> Inspection Report 24-27/02/86, Campbell Park Reports 19902.

<sup>1360</sup> Inspection Report 24-27/02/86, Campbell Park Reports 19902.

<sup>1361</sup> Inspection Report 24-27/02/86, Campbell Park Reports 19902.

## School/Institution Relationship

The provision of cottage meetings involving residential social workers and teachers to discuss cases was noted in the 1982 Inspection Report.<sup>1363</sup> The same report also commented that while the residential and teaching staff relationship had been poor in the past, it had improved with the introduction of cottage meetings.<sup>1364</sup> It was felt that in spite of this, they did keep separate most of the time and that relationships and cooperation between the two areas could be further improved.<sup>1365</sup>

It was commented in 1986 that progress had been made so that the objectives for residents were pursued by all staffing areas; the school, instructors and residential staff.<sup>1366</sup>

## Concern

The Principal commented that boys should remain in school until 15 (the legal leaving age) but sometimes this was not possible because the Home could not mix the younger and older residents.<sup>1367</sup> Also with the limited staff and the accommodation issues, a dual system within the senior section could not be operated.<sup>1368</sup>

The Principal was concerned in 1971 about the School and the calibre of the staff and said that, "Instead of providing the stable environment necessary for our boys, we are now re-enforcing their instability through frequent staff changes and low calibre teachers. The situation is further aggravated by the present policy of admitting groups of boys from time to time during terms which, in turn, necessitates class movements in order to re-grade pupils in terms of compatability [sic] ability, etc."<sup>1369</sup>

The Inspection Report of 1982 noted that with the difficulties in teaching the type of children admitted to Campbell Park, the teachers often felt dissatisfied and the teaching was not helped by the fact that so many of the pupils at Campbell Park had become accustomed to failing in the school environment.<sup>1370</sup> It was also noted that it was not uncommon for a lot of the teaching time to have been spent on control and management of the class rather than actual teaching.<sup>1371</sup> The 1986 Inspection Report stated in relation to this that, "The attempts already made to achieve optimistic and positive teaching strategies should be maintained and every opportunity to use positive reinforcement should be grasped."<sup>1372</sup>

---

<sup>1362</sup> Inspection Report 24-27/02/86, Campbell Park Reports 19902. For more information see the Programmes and Care section

<sup>1363</sup> Inspection Report 10-14/10/82, Campbell Park Reports 19900.

<sup>1364</sup> Inspection Report 10-14/10/82, Campbell Park Reports 19900.

<sup>1365</sup> Inspection Report 10-14/10/82, Campbell Park Reports 19900.

<sup>1366</sup> Inspection Report 24-27/02/86, Campbell Park Reports 19902.

<sup>1367</sup> Annual Report 1971, Campbell Park Reports F5000002919978.

<sup>1368</sup> Annual Report 1971, Campbell Park Reports F5000002919978.

<sup>1369</sup> Annual Report 1971, Campbell Park Reports F5000002919978.

<sup>1370</sup> Inspection Report 10-14/10/82, Campbell Park Reports 19900.

<sup>1371</sup> Inspection Report 10-14/10/82, Campbell Park Reports 19900.

<sup>1372</sup> Inspection Report 24-27/02/86, Campbell Park Reports 19902.

## Absconding

There is no information held on Campbell Park files in relation to absconding.

## Secure care

There is no information held on the Campbell Park files relating to secure care. It is possible that Campbell Park did not have a secure unit because it was a school. However, no direct information on this point was located.

## Discipline

There is negligible information on discipline held on Campbell Park files.

The 1982 Inspection Report noted that a variety of behaviour controls were used which mainly included withdrawal or extension of privileges, but also that corporal punishment was still used.<sup>1373</sup>

In a book by a former pupil of Campbell Park School, he recalls that residents who wet their bed were made to carry their wet linen past all the other boys as punishment.<sup>1374</sup> This former pupil also noted that pupils who misbehaved had money deducted from their pocket money.<sup>1375</sup> Another form of punishment he received in the sixties was being made to eat unripe apples that he had stolen after which he ended up very sick.<sup>1376</sup>

This former resident also commented on an incident where three residents (one being a friend of his) raped [redacted] "My friend lost all privileges. You had to wear a black and white jersey which meant not talking to anyone, eat at a table on your own in the middle of the dining room, you couldn't have seconds of food, couldn't go to the movies, and were banned from a lot of other activities as well. The whole incident was dealt with by the principal, the police were not involved at all."<sup>1377</sup> There is no information on existing Campbell Park files that corroborates or is contrary to these comments.

Section 29(1)(a) Privacy Act 1993- Affairs of Another

<sup>1373</sup> Inspection Report 10-14/10/82, Campbell Park Reports 1990.

<sup>1374</sup> Watson, Owen (undated, circa 1980) *Campbell Park School: The way I remember it*, Dunedin Public Library. (Please note that this is an uncorroborated account of a former pupil).

<sup>1375</sup> Watson, Owen (undated, circa 1980) *Campbell Park School: The way I remember it*, Dunedin Public Library. (Please note that this is an uncorroborated account of a former pupil).

<sup>1376</sup> Watson, Owen (undated, circa 1980) *Campbell Park School: The way I remember it*, Dunedin Public Library. (Please note that this is an uncorroborated account of a former pupil).

<sup>1377</sup> Watson, Owen (undated, circa 1980) *Campbell Park School: The way I remember it*, Dunedin Public Library. (Please note that this is an uncorroborated account of a former pupil).

## Physical punishment

There is limited information on physical punishment held on Campbell Park files.

Corporal punishment was still used at Campbell Park in 1982. The Principal was aware of the frequency with which it was used and of staff efforts to reduce its frequency.<sup>1378</sup> Records studied for the Inspection Report showed that it was becoming less frequent and less intense in application.<sup>1379</sup>

In a book written by a former resident he remembered that he was caned three times on each hand by the headmaster for running away.<sup>1380</sup> He also recalled that the, "School rules actually allowed disputes between boys to be settled with an official boxing match. If we decided to fight each other, we had to use boxing gloves. Two teachers would be there to referee the match if it got too rough; but even so, a black eye or a bleeding nose was not usual..."<sup>1381</sup>

## Drugs, alcohol, and tattoos

There is no information held on Campbell Park files about drugs and alcohol, and there was only one reference to tattoos on these files.

It was noted in the Inspection Report in 1982 that tattoos were removed, usually in the Dunedin Hospital.<sup>1382</sup>

## Smoking

There were only three references to smoking on Campbell Park files.

The Child Welfare Division Field Officer's Manual (approximately 1958) stated that residents over 16 in Campbell Park were allowed to purchase one ounce of tobacco a week.<sup>1383</sup>

The Inspection Report in 1978 commented on the Principal's stand against smoking by the senior boys.<sup>1384</sup>

The 1982 Inspection Report stated that boys were not allowed to smoke at Campbell Park.<sup>1385</sup>

<sup>1378</sup> Inspection Report 10-14/10/82, Campbell Park Reports 19900.

<sup>1379</sup> Inspection Report 10-14/10/82, Campbell Park Reports 19900.

<sup>1380</sup> Watson, Owen (undated, circa 1980) *Campbell Park School: The way I remember it*, Dunedin Public Library. (Please note that this is an uncorroborated account of a former pupil).

<sup>1381</sup> Watson, Owen (undated, circa 1980) *Campbell Park School: The way I remember it*, Dunedin Public Library. (Please note that this is an uncorroborated account of a former pupil).

<sup>1382</sup> Inspection Report 10-14/10/82, Campbell Park Reports 19900.

<sup>1383</sup> Child Welfare Division Field Officers Manual, undated circa 1958.

<sup>1384</sup> Inspection Report 7-18/10/78, Campbell Park Reports 11121.

<sup>1385</sup> Inspection Report 10-14/10/82, Campbell Park Reports 19900.



## Contact with field social workers

There is no information held on Campbell Park files regarding contact with field social workers prior to 1976.

In 1976 the Director-General issued an invitation to social workers to call on Campbell Park and the Principal when they were in the area, but that prior notice would be appreciated.<sup>1386</sup> This request was agreed to be beneficial and was said to be taken into account, but it was noted that time would probably not permit Social Work inspection committees to visit.<sup>1387</sup>

It was noted in 1976 that social workers were able to visit in the course of their escort duties.<sup>1388</sup>

The Code of Practice noted that the referring agents (social workers or psychologists) had a continuing responsibility for oversight and had to discuss reports and provide holiday reports on the residents.<sup>1389</sup>

## Contact with community

There is limited information on contact with the community held on Campbell Park files in the years preceding 1971.

There was a bus from Oamaru to Otekaike that went Monday to Saturday. Because of this timetable, visitors would stay overnight at the school where accommodation was usually available.<sup>1390</sup>

Sporting activities involving the community were encouraged and increased in 1971.<sup>1391</sup> An increased number of outside community groups also visited Campbell Park in 1971.<sup>1392</sup> Other contact with the community during this time included attendance at the North Otago Music Festival and the holding of the Seventh Summer Music School at Campbell Park at the beginning of the year.<sup>1393</sup>

Rotary, Jaycees and the Maori Women's Welfare League were some of the number of community groups who took an interest in Campbell Park in 1974.<sup>1394</sup>

The 1982 Inspection Report noted that Campbell Park, "... continues to enjoy the support of the various organisations in North Otago, and efforts are made by members of these organisations to visit boys and arrange outings."<sup>1395</sup>

<sup>1386</sup> Memo, Director-General, Education to Director-General, Social Welfare 01/11/76 Campbell Park Profile 11121.

<sup>1387</sup> Memo, JD Scott, designation unknown to Mr Te Punga, designation unknown 05/11/76, on Memo, Director-General, Education to Director-General, Social Welfare 01/11/76 Campbell Park Profile 11121.

<sup>1388</sup> Memo, Director-General, Education to Director-General, Social Welfare 01/11/76 Campbell Park Profile 11121.

<sup>1389</sup> Campbell Park Code of Practice 1984, Campbell Park Profile F5000004059543.

<sup>1390</sup> Notes on organisation and policy of Otekaike, D O'Connor, 06/11/56, Campbell Park Profile 24605.

<sup>1391</sup> Annual Report 1971, Campbell Park Reports F5000002919978.

<sup>1392</sup> Annual Report 1971, Campbell Park Reports F5000002919978.

<sup>1393</sup> Annual Report 1971, Campbell Park Reports F5000002919978.

<sup>1394</sup> Campbell Park Report 28/09/74, Campbell Park Reports F5000002919978.

<sup>1395</sup> Inspection Report 10-14/10/82, Campbell Park Reports 19900.

The boys regularly attended church in 1982 and effort was made to ensure that residents attended a service of their own denomination at least once a month.<sup>1396</sup>

## Visiting committees

There is no information on Visiting Committees held on the Campbell Park files. This is because Visiting Committees were instituted in residential care facilities in 1978, when Campbell Park was under the control of the Department of Education.

## Contact with families

There is limited information available on the Campbell Park files regarding contact with families.

Families and friends were allowed to visit the School by prior arrangement.<sup>1397</sup>

The 1978 Inspection Report recommended that the practice of checking residents' mail be examined with a view to its complete discontinuance if possible.<sup>1398</sup> The 1982 Inspection report noted that mail was not formally checked when the sender was known.<sup>1399</sup>

The residents went to their Home districts during the May, August and Christmas holidays.<sup>1400</sup>

## Preparation for discharge and after care arrangements

Residents who were close to discharge would often receive more regular work training outside Campbell Park and would stay in the particular district's Family Home.<sup>1401</sup> In 1971 the Principal commented, "The effectiveness of our Family Homes has been variable. Special mention must be made of the Timaru Home which is indeed a valuable adjunct to the school programme..."<sup>1402</sup> This was continued in 1982 in the Timaru or Oamaru Family Homes, and it was considered that this was, "... a valuable experience for the boys and gives them a chance to test out living in the community."<sup>1403</sup>

The decision to discharge a resident was made by a discharge committee established at Campbell Park and the decision was to be made in consultation with the psychologist responsible. The social worker or psychologist would usually be given at least two months notice of the discharge so they could assist the parents or

<sup>1396</sup> Inspection Report 10-14/10/82, Campbell Park Reports 19900.

<sup>1397</sup> Campbell Park Report 28/09/74, Campbell Park Reports F5000002919978.

<sup>1398</sup> Inspection Report 7-18/10/78, Campbell Park Reports 11121.

<sup>1399</sup> Inspection Report 10-14/10/82, Campbell Park Reports 19900.

<sup>1400</sup> Campbell Park Code of Practice 1984, Campbell Park Profile F5000004059543.

<sup>1401</sup> Campbell Park Report 28/09/74, Campbell Park Reports F5000002919978.

<sup>1402</sup> Annual Report 1971, Campbell Park Reports F5000002919978.

<sup>1403</sup> Inspection Report 10-14/10/82, Campbell Park Reports 19900.

guardian in arranging for where the child would live and also assist in school placement or gaining employment.<sup>1404</sup> Campbell Park was meant to be informed of progress with these arrangements in order to keep the resident up-to-date.<sup>1405</sup>

---

<sup>1404</sup> Circular Memorandum 1984/21: Admission and Discharge Procedures for Campbell Park, Hogben and Salisbury Girls' Residential Schools 05/03/84, Campbell Park Admission 1990.

<sup>1405</sup> Circular Memorandum 1984/21: Admission and Discharge Procedures for Campbell Park, Hogben and Salisbury Girls' Residential Schools 05/03/84, Campbell Park Admission 1990.

For the bulk of the period of this report, the following three national institutions were for girls.

Chapter

5

# Weymouth

## Physical description

Initially known as Weymouth Girls' Training School, Weymouth opened in September 1973 at 400 Weymouth Road, Manurewa in South Auckland.<sup>1406</sup> Weymouth was a national institution providing long-term care. Situated approximately three kilometres from Manurewa and forty kilometres from Auckland City, it had capacity for 60 residents in three hostels and 19 beds in a secure hostel.<sup>1407</sup> Each of the three units had 20 single rooms, a laundry, four bathrooms, a small kitchen, a dining room, a lounge, and a duty office.<sup>1408</sup> There was an administration block (with offices, a sick bay, consulting rooms and a staff room) a kitchen, a laundry, a school and a gym also on the grounds.<sup>1409</sup> Weymouth grounds covered almost 40 acres of land, some of which was farmed.<sup>1410</sup>

The grounds were completely enclosed with the administration block across the front and a 10 foot barbed wire fence around the sides and back of the grounds.<sup>1411</sup> In 1973 the Principal Marek Powierza commented that the fence gave the residents a sense of freedom in that so long as they were enclosed within the fence they did not need to be locked in the units.<sup>1412</sup>

There were 14 staff houses attached to the institution, in a 'street' on the property and on an adjacent public street. Additionally there were three flats and eight bed sitting rooms to accommodate single staff members.<sup>1413</sup>

There was a campsite on the grounds which consisted of 16 bunks with a further eight bunks available in a boatshed. The camp was alongside an inlet of the Manukau Harbour.<sup>1414</sup> There was a boat ramp into the estuary, a jetty, a flying fox,

<sup>1406</sup> "Weymouth Girls' School: A study of what is, with a view to what might be" Nicola Atwood, 1977, Weymouth Reports, p 31.

<sup>1407</sup> Residential Workers Manual, circa 1975, Weymouth Reports, F5000002388341 D5.00.

<sup>1408</sup> "Weymouth Girls' School: A study of what is, with a view to what might be" Nicola Atwood, 1977, Weymouth Reports, p 34.

<sup>1409</sup> "Weymouth Girls' School: A study of what is, with a view to what might be" Nicola Atwood, 1977, Weymouth Reports; and 'Principal risks a 70-girl migraine', Sheldon Brown, newspaper unknown, 8/10/73, Weymouth Profile 33551.

<sup>1410</sup> Quarterly Management Report, 25/6/1984, Weymouth Reports F5000006041345.

<sup>1411</sup> "Weymouth Girls' School: A study of what is, with a view to what might be" Nicola Atwood, 1977, Weymouth Reports, p 34.

<sup>1412</sup> 'Principal risks a 70-girl migraine', Sheldon Brown, newspaper unknown, 8/10/73, Weymouth Profile 33551.

<sup>1413</sup> R J Wilson, Regional Director to Director-General, Development of Weymouth, 7/6/84, Weymouth Reports F5000006041345.

<sup>1414</sup> R J Wilson, Regional Director to Director-General, Development of Weymouth, 7/6/84, Weymouth Reports F5000006041345.

rope bridges, swings, barbeque area and male and female toilet and shower facilities.<sup>1415</sup>

In 1985 an extra 12 bed unit was built onsite as Weymouth prepared for the intake of young people on remand.<sup>1416</sup> The hostel buildings were renamed. Awhina housed special needs, remand and secure, Whetu housed short-term girls, Nga-Tai-e-Wha housed short-term boys, and Rimu House and Arohanui housed extended care girls.<sup>1417</sup>

In late 1985 the Wesleydale gymnasium was transferred to Weymouth and reconstructed into a Whare Wananga.<sup>1418</sup> This was expected to open in May 1987.<sup>1419</sup>

A Circular Memorandum in April 1985 reported that the Weymouth Girls' Home had changed its name to the Weymouth Residential Centre.<sup>1420</sup>

In 1987, as a result of the Residential Services Management Plan, bed capacity reduced from 72 to 52.<sup>1421</sup> Weymouth was expected to close in/or around December 1988.<sup>1422</sup> No specific reasons for the closure are cited on file, but the closure was one of several around the country at this time as the department responded to falling demand for residential care.

In 1990 an audit report mentioned that the Weymouth Residential Centre officially reopened on 30 July 1990 and comprised of 'a 20 bed Youth Justice Unit, an eight bed Care and Protection Unit and a nine bed secure Care facility'. With the reopening came an upgrade of facilities.<sup>1423</sup> It was from this date that Weymouth was known as the Northern Residential Centre.<sup>1424</sup>

## Resident profile

The Assistant Director of Residential Services stated in 1974 that Weymouth was 'designed to meet a proven need for girls who were not able to be placed or treated in community settings such as foster homes or family homes'.<sup>1425</sup> He stated that department representatives had travelled overseas to ascertain practices in institutional care in the United Kingdom, United States of America and Australia and that Weymouth was opened after an 'extensive examination' of overseas trends.<sup>1426</sup>

<sup>1415</sup> Memo from J H Wood, Principal to Director Residential Services, 12/4/83, Weymouth Education F5000006020996.

<sup>1416</sup> Interim Report on the Development Facilities and Programmes at Weymouth, 1985, Weymouth Reports F5000006020997.

<sup>1417</sup> Interim Report (6 months) Weymouth Residential Centre Programme Development Committee, November 1985, Weymouth Reports F5000006020995.

<sup>1418</sup> Interim Report (6 months) Weymouth Residential Centre Programme Development Committee, November 1985, Weymouth Reports F5000006020995.

<sup>1419</sup> Programme Development Committee Minutes, 1987, Weymouth Profile F5000002388234.

<sup>1420</sup> Circular Memorandum 1985/76, 16/4/85, Weymouth Education F5000002368864.

<sup>1421</sup> Audit Report 1987, Weymouth Reports F5000006020999.

<sup>1422</sup> A J Birrell to Assistant Director General, 27/9/87, Weymouth Profile F5000002381847.

<sup>1423</sup> Audit Report 1990, Weymouth Reports F5000006020999.

<sup>1424</sup> April Erulti, Director to Directors of Social Welfare (all districts) 24/7/1990, Weymouth Profile F5000002388234.

<sup>1425</sup> Assistant Director Residential Services to I Macdonald, New Zealand Herald, 27/8/74 Weymouth Reports 33551.

<sup>1426</sup> Assistant Director Residential Services to I Macdonald, New Zealand Herald, 27/8/74 Weymouth Reports 33551.

In 1977 Weymouth provided long-term care for delinquent girls who were committed by the Children and Young Persons Court. The Home played no part in deciding who was admitted or when.<sup>1427</sup> It was categorised as a 'longer term unit providing a variety of programmes of special training and rehabilitation'.<sup>1428</sup>

In 1975 there were 50 girls in Weymouth, 28% of whom were Pakeha and 72% Maori.<sup>1429</sup> Between 1979 and 1984 there were generally around 35 girls in residence.<sup>1430</sup>

A Victoria University student completing her Masters on Weymouth ('the Masters student') commented that most residents were resentful about being confined against their will, but that their employment skills and interpersonal relationship skills were underdeveloped.<sup>1431</sup>

In 1982, Weymouth aimed to provide custodial control and rehabilitation for 'difficult, disturbed and delinquent 13-17 year old girls'.<sup>1432</sup>

From 1 March 1982, in response to a change in Head Office policy, applications for residence were made directly to Weymouth, instead of to Head Office. Applications were still to be based on the catchment area unless there were exceptional circumstances.<sup>1433</sup>

The catchment area was the major part of the North Island, with the boundary line including Wairoa and Wanganui as well as Gisborne, Taumaranui and New Plymouth.<sup>1434</sup> Girls with exceptional circumstances were accepted from as far south as Wellington and the South Island. Most girls were from Auckland, Waikato and the Bay of Plenty.<sup>1435</sup>

In 1982 most residents were at Weymouth for extended care, but assessment cases were also dealt with.<sup>1436</sup> In 1983 the Principal said that the Home was planning to accept up to 10 girls on remand status from the South Auckland area. He recognised that in order to accept boys on remand the facilities would require a permanent adjustment.<sup>1437</sup>

Weymouth admitted boys for the first time on 24 November 1983.<sup>1438</sup> November and December 1983 were notable as girls from an overflow at Bollard were placed in Weymouth Hostel 1 and boys from Owairaka overflow were placed in Weymouth

<sup>1427</sup> "Weymouth Girls' School: A study of what is, with a view to what might be" Nicola Atwool, 1977, Weymouth Reports, p 32.

<sup>1428</sup> Categorised under the Children and Young Persons Act (1974).

<sup>1429</sup> "Weymouth Girls' School: A study of what is, with a view to what might be" Nicola Atwool, 1977, Weymouth Reports, p 47.

<sup>1430</sup> For details on numbers of residents see: Weymouth Development Plan, 1980s, Weymouth Reports F5000006041345; I Johnston, Assistant Director Regional Residential Services, to Director General, 4/6/80, Weymouth Secure F5000002388341; Annual Report 1982, Weymouth Reports F5000006020996; R J Wilson, Regional Director to Director-General, Development of Weymouth, 7/6/84, Weymouth Reports F5000006041345; and Weymouth Development Plan, 1980s, Weymouth Reports F5000006041345.

<sup>1431</sup> "Weymouth Girls' School: A study of what is, with a view to what might be" Nicola Atwool, 1977, Weymouth Reports, p 47.

<sup>1432</sup> Circular Memorandum 1982/22, 15/2/82, Weymouth Education F5000006021240.

<sup>1433</sup> Circular memorandum 1982/22, 15/2/82, Weymouth Education F5000006021240.

<sup>1434</sup> Annual Report 1983, Weymouth Reports F5000006020997.

<sup>1435</sup> J H Wood, Principal to Director Residential Services, 22/11/83, Weymouth Education F5000006020996.

<sup>1436</sup> Annual Report 1982, Weymouth Reports F5000006020996.

<sup>1437</sup> Annual Report 1983, Weymouth Reports F5000006020997.

<sup>1438</sup> R R Thomas Assistant Principal Temporary Weymouth Remand Unit to J H Wood Principal, 13/12/83, Weymouth Profile, F5000002389201.

secure area<sup>1439</sup> causing a sharp increase in admissions at this stage due to the overflow admissions.<sup>1440</sup>

In March 1984 the Director of Residential Services expected that remand facilities for girls would operate at Weymouth from 15 April 1985 and for boys from 1 September 1985. There were to be 12 beds for remand boys initially but he expected this number to rise as Police utilised the facility more.<sup>1441</sup>

In 1985 the Regional Director commented that with a nominal role of 43, facilities were not being used to their full potential and that Weymouth could be developed in order to more effectively meet the needs of the region. He intended that in future Weymouth would continue to provide extended care for 40 girls, but additionally provide a remand facility for 20 girls from the South Auckland region and also a remand facility for boys under the age of 14.<sup>1442</sup> As of 15 April 1985 one of the hostels at Weymouth was used for girls admitted via court remand, arrest or warrant.<sup>1443</sup>

In 1985 it was noted that Maori youngsters made up the largest proportion of residents in care and a training programme for Maori staff was proposed to help staff and residents feel positive about being Maori.<sup>1444</sup>

In 1987 there was a continuing drop in numbers in special needs/secure and extended care residents and therefore the management of these programmes was merged. Short term units continued to be busy and full near to capacity.<sup>1445</sup>

In 1989 the Director of the 'Weymouth Resource Centre' (as the residence was referred to at that time) noted that there had been a "dramatic fall off in admissions" and he expected admissions to decrease even more following implementation of the Children Young Persons and their Families Act 1989.<sup>1446</sup> The Regional Director informed the Police that Weymouth would accept "unplanned admissions" from girls who were residents of Otahuhu, Manukau and Papakura.<sup>1447</sup>

When the Northern Residential Centre opened in 1990 its aim was 'to provide custodial care for those arrested or on remand; to provide placements as a result of Court recommendation; and to provide Care and Protection placement facilities'. The residence was to provide mixed gender care with a bed capacity of 20 Youth justice beds (for 14-17 year olds who had been involved in offending and at times 12-14 year olds charged with indictable offences) and eight Care and Protection beds (for young people who could not be provided for from a community based option).<sup>1448</sup> Residents were either remanded in the care of the Director-General of

<sup>1439</sup> Annual Report 1983, Weymouth Reports F5000006020997

<sup>1440</sup> R J Wilson, Regional Director to Director-General, Development of Weymouth, 7/6/84, Weymouth Reports F5000006041345

<sup>1441</sup> Notes from Director Residential Services after Auckland Visit, 18-21/3/85, Weymouth Profile, F5000006020995

<sup>1442</sup> Interim Report on the Development Facilities and Programmes at Weymouth, 1985, Weymouth Reports F5000006020997.

<sup>1443</sup> Memo from Director Regional Residential Services to Director, 10/4/85, Weymouth Complaints, F500000602097.

<sup>1444</sup> Interim Report (6 months) Weymouth Residential Centre Programme Development Committee, November 1985, Weymouth Reports F5000006020995.

<sup>1445</sup> Programme Development Committee Minutes, 1987, Weymouth Profile, F5000002388234.

<sup>1446</sup> Director Weymouth Resource Centre to Weymouth Residents and Ratepayers Association, 14/12/89, Weymouth Profile, F5000002388234.

<sup>1447</sup> G T Comber for Regional Director to Chief Superintendent I Bird, 10/4/85, Weymouth Complaints, F5000006020997.

<sup>1448</sup> Memo from April Erutti to Director of Social Welfare (all districts) 24/7/1990, Weymouth Profile, F5000002388234.

Social Welfare by the Youth Court or were fulfilling the requirements of a Supervision with Residence order.<sup>1449</sup>

There were around 24 residents in 1992. At this stage there were 25 Youth Justice beds and 8 Care and Protection beds.<sup>1450</sup>

In March 1994 there were 21 residents in the Youth Justice unit aged between 14 and 16. There were 8 residents in the Care and Protection unit aged between 11 and 14.<sup>1451</sup>

In 1994 a review team suggested that a remand service may be better provided for at a different site as the 'Weymouth Deed' prevented Youth Justice residents from being held in secure care for longer than 72 hours.<sup>1452</sup>

## Length of stay

No information prior to 1977 was found on file. Between 1977 and 1982 the average length of stay was approximately nine to 12 months, depending on individual progress and behaviour.<sup>1453</sup>

In 1983 the Principal commented that the average length of stay was three school terms, or up to three months on a short-term assessment programme.<sup>1454</sup> He noted that the majority of discharges went to family or relatives, with smaller numbers being discharged to places such as hostels.<sup>1455</sup>

Remand unit residents' length of stay varied according to the requirements of courts and recommendation of police and social workers.<sup>1456</sup>

Length of stay rose from an average of 141 days in 1980 to an average of around 210 days in 1981 and 1982. By 1983 it had decreased to an average of 147 days and decreased even further to 114 days in 1984.<sup>1457</sup>

## Programmes and care

No information relating to programmes and care was found prior to 1977. In 1977 the scope for "therapeutic relationships" between residents and staff was limited due

<sup>1449</sup> Circular memorandum 1990/234, author unknown, 24/10/94, Weymouth Profile, F5000006021151.

<sup>1450</sup> Question for Written Answer from George Hawkins (Manurewa) to Hon. Jenny Shipley (Minister of Social Welfare) Supplementary Information, 1/4/92, Weymouth Incidents, F5000005627876

<sup>1451</sup> Question for Written Answer, 7/4/94, Weymouth Profile, F5000004081323.

<sup>1452</sup> Report from Transitional Management Team, November 1994, Weymouth Reports F5000006021151.

<sup>1453</sup> Weymouth Girls' School: A study of what is, with a view to what might be" Nicola Atwood, 1977, Weymouth Reports, page 39; Circular Memorandum 1982/22, 15/2/82, Weymouth Education. F5000006021240.

<sup>1454</sup> J H Wood, Principal to Director Residential Services, 22/11/83, Weymouth Education F5000006020996.

<sup>1455</sup> Annual Report 1983, Weymouth Reports F500000602097.

<sup>1456</sup> R J Wilson Regional Director to Director General, Weymouth Development Plan, 21/9/84, Weymouth Profile, F5000006020997.

<sup>1457</sup> M P Doolan, Director Residential Services to Director General, 4/11/85, Weymouth Admissions F5000002186501, Appendix F. M P Doolan, Director Residential Services to Director General, 4/11/85, Weymouth Admissions F5000002186501, Appendix



to the fact that most Housemistresses and Housemasters lacked formal training.<sup>1458</sup> The distribution of staff meant that Housemasters and Housemistresses had limited time to spend with the individual girls on their caseloads.<sup>1459</sup>

In 1977 the Assistant Director Residential Services was concerned about how Weymouth was functioning and in particular about the use of secure and about the treatment programmes Weymouth offered. He noted that when he had made inquiries about specific residents the responses he had received were "evasive" and recommended a review of the residence.<sup>1460</sup>

In 1978 the Assistant Director Residential Services commented that senior staff from the Auckland District did not recommend girls' admission to Weymouth due to its home leave practices.<sup>1461</sup>

In 1980 N G Stevens, advisor to the Director Residential Services, commented that there was an effort "to upgrade the general standard of programme" and Weymouth staff were expected to increase their contribution.<sup>1462</sup>

In 1980 it was noticed that "although many Maori and Polynesian children pass through the home, there was no Maori identity in the training."<sup>1463</sup>

In 1980 staff members of Weymouth produced a Code of Practice which set out many of the practices and policies of the home. Residents were to be allocated a caseworker as soon as possible after their admission. Case workers were to review their residents' case plans and alter or update as necessary and to provide support and counselling.<sup>1464</sup>

The Code of Practice stated that the residents' routine were to be "flexible and appropriate to the age, social custom and culture of the individual person." Each girl was to have a programme that catered to her individual needs. It also stated that staff should relate easily to residents in a way that resembled "typical family interactions."<sup>1465</sup> Privacy for "personal ablutions" was the norm unless leaving the resident unsupervised was dangerous due to illness, injury or uncontrolled behaviour.<sup>1466</sup>

The aims of Weymouth as stated in 1983 were to reintegrate residents with family and community; provide a stable long-term environment and achieve long term stabilising; to teach residents social skills; provide a time out for the District and the resident; and to provide rehabilitation.<sup>1467</sup> Treatment was provided via casework and

<sup>1458</sup> "Weymouth Girls' School: A study of what is, with a view to what might be" Nicola Atwool, 1977, Weymouth Reports, p 58.

<sup>1459</sup> "Weymouth Girls' School: A study of what is, with a view to what might be" Nicola Atwool, 1977, Weymouth Reports, p 58.

<sup>1460</sup> T Ball, Assistant Director Residential Services to unknown recipients, 2/11/77, Weymouth Profile 33551.

<sup>1461</sup> Assistant Director Residential Services, Notes on Home Leave from Weymouth, 10/01/78, Weymouth Profile 33551. For more information on home leave policy see Contact with Family section.

<sup>1462</sup> Notes from visit to Weymouth, N G Stevens, 4-7/8/1980, Weymouth Profile 33551.

<sup>1463</sup> J P Olsen, Private Secretary Office of the Minister of Social Welfare to Director General, 9/6/80, Weymouth Staffing 33551.

<sup>1464</sup> Code of Practice for Weymouth Girls School, prepared by Weymouth Staff, 1982, Weymouth Profile F5000006020996.

<sup>1465</sup> Code of Practice for Weymouth Girls School, prepared by Weymouth Staff, 1982, Weymouth Profile F5000006020996.

<sup>1466</sup> Code of Practice for Weymouth Girls School, prepared by Weymouth Staff, 1982, Weymouth Profile F5000006020996.

<sup>1467</sup> J H Wood, Principal to Director Residential Services, 22/11/83, Weymouth Education F5000006020996.

group living relationships; the Senior Counsellor; psychologists and psychiatrists; work experience and placement schemes; short term assessment; a social skills group pre-release; family inclusion in treatment and planning; an intensive care therapy unit; and individualised programmes for individual residents.<sup>1468</sup>

In 1983 the Principal noted that Weymouth had been 'tested severely' with the pressure of overload from Bollard Girls Home and Owairaka Boys Home in late 1983.<sup>1469</sup>

In 1984, following the suicide of a resident in secure, a report noted that the same casework policies had been in place for ten years, and also commented on a lack of effective recording systems. He noted that information about residents was recorded in the 'day book' (which held information about all residents) and also on a 'comment sheet' (which existed for each individual girl). He recommended "the positioning of a casework recording system" and also noted that staff required urgent training in the "acquiring, collating and recording of information."<sup>1470</sup>

The Director of Residential Services M P Doolan commented in 1984 that when Weymouth began its programmes for remand boys and remand girls in addition to its extended care programme for girls, the three programmes should be integrated as much as possible in schooling, recreation and the secure unit.<sup>1471</sup>

In [REDACTED] over a three week period there were three suicide attempts at Weymouth, each involving a resident trying to hang herself [REDACTED]. Following the attempts the girls were given medical attention and individual 24 hour supervision.<sup>1472</sup>

In 1985 there was a "reporting obligation" at Weymouth to inform Police of suspected incidents of sexual assault.<sup>1473</sup>

In 1988 an audit report summarised that the Weymouth Residential Centre was providing a 'basic nurturing programme and service for the children and young people in residence' but that the provided services and programmes were 'not at an optimum level of effectiveness and efficiency'.<sup>1474</sup>

The role of the Residence in 1990 was to "contain young people and confront them with their inappropriate behaviour".<sup>1475</sup>

### Residents' grievance processes

In 1977 the right of appeal available to residents was limited. The Masters student commented that 'while there is nothing to prevent them appealing, the reality of the situation is that greater consideration is given to the staff member's interpretation of

<sup>1468</sup> J H Wood, Principal to Director Residential Services, 22/11/83, Weymouth Education F5000006020996.

<sup>1469</sup> Annual Report 1983, Weymouth Reports F5000006020997.

<sup>1470</sup> Weymouth Policy and Practice Report, B M Fitzgerald, 10/01/1985, Weymouth Profile F5000006020997. For more information on issues with casework recording, see staffing section.

<sup>1471</sup> M P Doolan Director Residential Services to Divisional Director (S.W) 10/7/84 J H Wood Principal to Regional Director, 15/3/84, Weymouth Profile, F5000006020997.

<sup>1472</sup> [REDACTED]  
<sup>1473</sup> G Vanderstaak, Senior Counsellor to Principal, 19/9/85, Weymouth Complaints F5000006020997.

<sup>1474</sup> Institution Internal Audit Report 1988, Weymouth Reports, F5000006020999.

<sup>1475</sup> Memo from April Eruiti to Director of Social Welfare (all districts) 24/7/1990, Weymouth Profile, F5000002388234.

the situation to that of the inmate.' Girls therefore felt that it was not worth appealing.<sup>1476</sup>

The 1982 Code of Practice stated that there were grievance procedures available to residents and their families if they thought the disciplinary measures had been excessive. It stated Weymouth grievance procedures consisted out of "easy access to senior staff, outside visitors, visiting committees and field social workers."<sup>1477</sup>

In 1987 an audit report noted that Weymouth lacked a formal grievance procedure for residents. It was recommended residents be given the opportunity to lodge any grievance in writing, discuss the issue with the Principal, receive a written response to their grievance, and have it recorded in the Log Book.<sup>1478</sup>

In 1989 Grievance Procedure Outlines stated that residents could approach a staff member to help them write out the details of their grievance. An "Action Sheet" was to be completed and forwarded to their Assistant Director who was then to acknowledge receiving the complaint. Following any appropriate action, the Assistant Director would complete the results section of the sheet, and a copy would be provided to the resident within seven days of the grievance being acknowledged.<sup>1479</sup>

In 1990 a Grievance officer was appointed to the Centre who visited residents regularly.<sup>1480</sup>

In 1991 the Youth Law Project complained about the lack of proper grievance procedures at Weymouth.<sup>1481</sup>

### **Progression through hostels**

In 1983 most admissions went through Hostel 1 for a six-week induction programme.<sup>1482</sup> With the exception of remand cases from Bollard, approval for admissions was given by an Admissions Committee made up of senior staff. The Principal or Assistant Principal had to approve the admission.<sup>1483</sup> During the induction period new residents experienced a 'firm and fairly structured programme' which set expectations and prepared girls for their stay at Weymouth.<sup>1484</sup> Having completed the induction programme residents moved into either Hostel 2 or Hostel 3 where the emphasis was on learning self control. Girls generally stayed in these hostels for the remainder of their time at Weymouth unless they were to spend time in secure in Hostel 4, or go 'flating' in House 9.<sup>1485</sup> Progression through hostels was used as an incentive measure as each move up allowed more privileges.<sup>1486</sup>

<sup>1476</sup> "Weymouth Girls' School: A study of what is, with a view to what might be" Nicola Atwool, 1977, Weymouth Reports, 57.

<sup>1477</sup> Code of Practice for Weymouth Girls School, prepared by Weymouth Staff, 1982, Weymouth Profile F5000006020996.

<sup>1478</sup> Audit Report 1987, Weymouth Reports F5000006020999.

<sup>1479</sup> Weymouth Resource Centre Grievance Procedure Guideline, 9/11/89, Weymouth Complaints, F5000002381847.

<sup>1480</sup> Audit Report 1990, Weymouth Reports F5000006020999.

<sup>1481</sup> Robert Ludbrook for Youth Law Project to Faith Denny, Senior Programme Advisor, 9/1/91, Weymouth Profile F5000002388234.

<sup>1482</sup> Annual Report 1983, Weymouth Reports F5000006020997.

<sup>1483</sup> Annual Report 1983, Weymouth Reports F5000006020997.

<sup>1484</sup> Weymouth Development Plan, 1980s, Weymouth Reports F5000006041345.

<sup>1485</sup> Weymouth Development Plan, 1980s, Weymouth Reports F5000006041345.

<sup>1486</sup> "Weymouth Girls' School: A study of what is, with a view to what might be" Nicola Atwool, 1977, Weymouth Reports, p 157.

In 1984 the Senior Residential Social Worker proposed reorganisation of the House 9 programme to allow girls to develop skills that would make for a less traumatic transition from residence to community. He intended to allow House 9 residents reduced supervision and the opportunity manage their own affairs (such as shopping, cooking and banking) and as a consequence the girls would learn responsibility and accountability; learn to live with others; and learn to share group responsibilities.<sup>1487</sup>

A unit built in 1985 was used as an induction hostel, and had been designed to easily supervise girls who often arrived from unsettled and distressing circumstances and who could be unwilling participants. Smaller groups made the girls more manageable. Over their first six weeks in the home girls were given medical, dental and psychological care as necessary, had their educational needs assessed, and were introduced to recreational programmes.<sup>1488</sup>

In 1985 as Weymouth prepared to extend to remand care, it was expected Hostel 3 would house girls who had finished their induction programme and would build on meeting the residents' identified needs.<sup>1489</sup>

When Weymouth began to admit young persons on remand, its progression system changed. Extended care girls were admitted straight into Hostel 2 or Hostel 3, and Hostel 1 was used for Remand and Assessment.<sup>1490</sup>

## Recreation

In 1977 it was noted that the girls at the home often complained of being bored during the evening and at weekends. The responsibility of providing residents with recreational activities rested with staff, but the enthusiasm of staff members often waned when their ideas were met with residents' apathy.<sup>1491</sup>

The Masters student commented however that 'one of the reasons juvenile delinquents find themselves in institutions is because they have drifted into anti-social ways of filling their spare time. At the present time the institution is failing to demonstrate more constructive and satisfying methods of using this spare time.' She also remarked that there were no organised therapy sessions for residents, nor was there any organised activity outside the hours of 9am and 3pm.<sup>1492</sup>

In the 1970s it was noted that most residents went outside of the residence for recreation at some point every weekend and during holidays, and frequently at other times. Teams from Weymouth were entered in local competitions and girls often visited nearby swimming pools, skating rinks and public recreation areas.<sup>1493</sup> Girls were given opportunities to learn sewing and dressmaking, interested girls could learn about Maori culture from visitors, and the Home had a well equipped gymnasium and teams involved in local basketball, netball and softball competitions. Girls could receive religious instruction or attend local churches if they wished.

<sup>1487</sup> K K Lindsay, Senior Residential Social Worker to J H Wood Principal, 8/10/84, Weymouth Education F5000006020995.

<sup>1488</sup> Interim Report on the Development Facilities and Programmes at Weymouth, 1985, Weymouth Reports F5000006020997. For more information on healthcare at Weymouth see the Health and Medication section.

<sup>1489</sup> Interim Report on the Development Facilities and Programmes at Weymouth, 1985, Weymouth Reports F5000006020997.

<sup>1490</sup> J H Wood, Principal to Regional Director, 15/3/84, Weymouth Profile F5000006020997.

<sup>1491</sup> "Weymouth Girls' School: A study of what is, with a view to what might be" Nicola Atwood, 1977, Weymouth Reports, p 64.

<sup>1492</sup> "Weymouth Girls' School: A study of what is, with a view to what might be" Nicola Atwood, 1977, Weymouth Reports, p 43.

<sup>1493</sup> Questionnaire sent to National Institutions, date unknown circa 1970s, Weymouth Reports 33551.

Weymouth owned several horses and the residents were given opportunities to ride. Picnics and camping trips were offered throughout the year.<sup>1494</sup>

In 1982 the Code of Practice stated that residents' leisure time was to be varied according to individual preference and interest, and that staff were to encourage the "NZ sporting spirit and love for the outdoors and experience cultural diversity and inquiry." Girls were encouraged to "participate in planned recreational activities so as to expose them to new experiences, without the use of compulsion."<sup>1495</sup>

Between 1982 and 1984 recreation activities included weekend camps, fun runs, hairdressing, piano lessons, indoor basketball, horse riding and pony club competing, swimming, roller skating, beach outings, calf and chicken feeding, canoeing, boating, berry and fruit picking, cake baking, sewing, and Maori culture, trampoline, pool tables, netball, softball, indoor basketball, swimming, horse riding, and involvement in Maori culture encouraged.<sup>1496</sup> Weymouth also acquired equipment to put together a band.<sup>1497</sup>

In 1982 CAA (Fee for Service) provided 25 hours weekly each of gardening and hairdressing and 11 hours of horse riding.<sup>1498</sup> In 1983 weekly CAA use consisted of 20 hours of horse riding, 20 hours of hairdressing, 10 hours of physical training and 10 hours of piano.<sup>1499</sup>

Maori Culture was taught on a formal basis in 1984 with large group visits sponsored by the Maori Affairs Department. Residents were involved in a wananga and a six day hui.<sup>1500</sup>

In 1994 staff felt that the physical environment of the Centre was not conducive to running good residential programmes. A transitional review team disagreed, and commented that staff needed to 'look more at the potential the facilities and environment offer and capture that potential in their programmes'.<sup>1501</sup>

## Privileges and rewards systems

In 1974 the Assistant Director of Residential Services in a letter to a journalist mentioned that Weymouth operated a behaviour modification system 'based principally and primarily on positive reinforcement for good behaviour and consequent rewards, to alter deviant behaviour and enhance positive functioning'.<sup>1502</sup>

In 1977 pocket money was issued at a set amount each week, and money could only be deducted from residents to cover the costs of damage.<sup>1503</sup>

<sup>1494</sup> Residential Workers Manual, circa 1975, Weymouth Reports, F5000002388341 D5.00. For more information on contact Weymouth residents had with members of the local community, see Contact with Community section.

<sup>1495</sup> Code of Practice for Weymouth Girls School, prepared by Weymouth Staff, 1982, Weymouth Profile F5000006020996.

<sup>1496</sup> Annual Report 1982, Weymouth Reports, F5000006020996; Annual Report 1983, Weymouth Reports F5000006020997; and Annual Report 1984, Weymouth Reports F5000006020997.

<sup>1497</sup> Annual Report 1982, Weymouth Reports F5000006020996.

<sup>1498</sup> Annual Report 1982, Weymouth Reports F5000006020996.

<sup>1499</sup> Annual Report 1983, Weymouth Reports F5000006020997.

<sup>1500</sup> Annual Report 1984, Weymouth Reports F5000006020997.

<sup>1501</sup> Report from Transitional Management Team, November 1994, Weymouth Reports F5000006021151.

<sup>1502</sup> Assistant Director Residential Services to I Macdonald, New Zealand Herald, 27/8/74 Weymouth Reports 33551.

<sup>1503</sup> "Weymouth Girls' School: A study of what is, with a view to what might be" Nicola Atwool, 1977, Weymouth Reports, page 71.

In 1977 the girls' behaviour was regulated by the operation of a 'token economy'. During the day staff could allocate 'points' to girls for specified behaviour. Categories of point allocation included things such as tidiness of bedrooms, personal appearance, and participation in programmed activities. The points were tallied each day and added to a cumulative total. Points could then be used to 'buy' privileges such as watching movies on television on a Saturday night, or going home for a weekend.<sup>1504</sup>

## Work and training

The Assistant Principal commented in 1976 that he was having trouble implementing the work experience programme as the Labour Department had no provisions for such a programme unless it was through the Education Scheme. He noted that a voluntary scheme was appropriate as there were few openings available locally for full-time paid work and furthermore, many girls were not stable enough.<sup>1505</sup>

In 1977 senior staff decided at the start of each week which tasks the girls who chose not to attend school would be doing, and the girls were required to stay on that task for the whole week. The Masters student stated that because most of the routine cleaning was completed in the morning before the other girls left for school, it was often difficult to come up with tasks to keep these girls occupied. Jobs were issued around the grounds and gardens and in the kitchen and laundry.<sup>1506</sup> The student noted "on the whole, inmates are employed in menial tasks which they do not enjoy. In some instances work is created for them and is, therefore, meaningless."<sup>1507</sup> After their first few months of completing tasks around the Home, residents were sometimes able to seek employment in the community.<sup>1508</sup> Work training was limited by the 'economic situation' in New Zealand in 1983 although there was one girl working as a school cleaner and employers such as Homai College, Barclay Knitwear and Hollywood Shoes offered positions.<sup>1509</sup>

In 1977 all residents were required to work in the hostels between 9am and 11am.<sup>1510</sup>

In 1978 the Assistant Principal noted that it had been difficult for capable girls to find employment and recommended to the Principal that a resident be employed to fill the empty vacancy in the kitchen as junior cook on a temporary basis until the position had been filled.<sup>1511</sup>

The Senior Residential Social Worker proposed a Work Skill Development Programme in 1982, which would see girls being paid by the Labour Department while gaining work experience in hairdressing, laundry, kitchen, sewing, gardening

<sup>1504</sup> "Weymouth Girls' School: A study of what is, with a view to what might be" Nicola Atwool, 1977, Weymouth Reports, p 45.

<sup>1505</sup> Assistant Principal to Principal, 21/10/76, Weymouth Education, 33551.

<sup>1506</sup> "Weymouth Girls' School: A study of what is, with a view to what might be" Nicola Atwool, 1977, Weymouth Reports, p 43.

<sup>1507</sup> "Weymouth Girls' School: A study of what is, with a view to what might be" Nicola Atwool, 1977, Weymouth Reports, p 63.

<sup>1508</sup> Circular Memorandum 1982/22, 15/2/82, Weymouth Education F5000006021240.

<sup>1509</sup> Annual Report 1983, Weymouth Reports F5000006020997

<sup>1510</sup> "Weymouth Girls' School: A study of what is, with a view to what might be" Nicola Atwool, 1977, Weymouth Reports, p 44.

<sup>1511</sup> Memo from J W Chambers Assistant Principal to Principal, 3/7/78, Weymouth Education, 33551.

and agriculture. It was proposed that all participating girls would be housed together in Hostel 3.<sup>1512</sup> The proposal was declined by the Labour Department.<sup>1513</sup> The programme was implemented in 1983 although the continuing attempts to gain funding from the Labour Department to give the girls "token payment" were unsuccessful. The programme was intended "to help introduce girls to the adult working world."<sup>1514</sup>

In 1983 the work experience programme was extended and improved, and girls from the Home were able to visit various schools to assist teachers with the younger pupils.<sup>1515</sup> Girls completing work experience had many placements in the community and the exposure to Labour Department programmes resulted in permanent employment for some.<sup>1516</sup>

In 1984 the Principal commented that Weymouth staff members "were aware that the needs of most of our young people are going to be helped by learning practical skills". The industries team (consisting of two instructors) taught girls sewing skills and provided individuals with personal examples of their ability to show prospective employers.<sup>1517</sup> Girls were provided opportunities in the kitchen and laundry, and through CAA staff attempted to give girls a basic knowledge and skills in hairdressing, pottery and music.<sup>1518</sup>

In 1987 Weymouth was advised that in order to meet the requirements of the Children and Young Persons Regulations (1986) a planned vocational training programme needed to be implemented in the residential units.<sup>1519</sup>

Weymouth was contracting for the provision of programmes in Conflict Resolution, Anger Management, and Defensive Driving in 1990. Residential Social Workers also took courses in areas of their interest or expertise.<sup>1520</sup>

## Resident-to-resident issues

In 1977 A Victoria University Masters student noted that in each of the Weymouth units there was a clearly identifiable leader and an isolate. She noted that the isolates "tend to be teased and victimised which identifies their tendency to be withdrawn and sulky. Often they are unpopular with both girls and staff members and may retain this lonely position throughout their time in the Institution."<sup>1521</sup>

There was an incident in 1984 where a resident refused to comply with staff instructions. The staff on duty could not cope, and when the girl became physically abusive to them she was placed in the secure unit. The other residents, in her support, barricaded themselves in a room in what was described as a "blatant girl

<sup>1512</sup> J Sublette Senior Residential Social Worker to Principal, 11/10/82, Weymouth Education, F5000006020996.

<sup>1513</sup> Memo from J Sublette Senior Residential Social Worker to Principal, 28/10/82, Weymouth Education, F5000006020996.

<sup>1514</sup> Annual Report 1982, Weymouth Reports F5000006020996.

<sup>1515</sup> Annual Report 1983, Weymouth Reports F5000006020997.

<sup>1516</sup> Annual Report 1983, Weymouth Reports F5000006020997.

<sup>1517</sup> Annual Report 1984, Weymouth Reports F5000006020997.

<sup>1518</sup> Annual Report 1984, Weymouth Reports F5000006020997.

<sup>1519</sup> Institution Internal Audit Report 1988, Weymouth Reports, F5000006020999.

<sup>1520</sup> Audit Report 1990, Weymouth Reports F500000602099.

<sup>1521</sup> "Weymouth Girls' School: A study of what is, with a view to what might be" Nicola Atwool, 1977, Weymouth Reports, p 48.

versus staff challenge". The Police were called. Having caused extensive damage to the secure cell, and the Assistant Director of Residential Services advised the principal to have the abusive girl charged with damage to government property and recommended for borstal training due to the fact that Weymouth staff could not cope with her. It was noted she was very influential over the other residents.<sup>1522</sup>

In 1988 there was an alleged sexual assault at Weymouth by one male resident against another, but no further details are recorded on file. The Clinical Psychologist commented that abuse between residents was an important issue and that Weymouth staff needed to learn to look out for behavioural indicators of sexual abuse and how to intervene.<sup>1523</sup>

In 1990 Youth Justice residents were at times coming into contact with Care and Protection residents at school. Attempts to separate them by staggering start times were unsuccessful, as 'the young people have met when teachers have not been prompt in returning to their classes after breaks'.<sup>1524</sup>

The practice of remand residents living in the same hostels as Supervision with Residence residents was under review in 1990.<sup>1525</sup>

In [REDACTED] a female resident claimed that she had been placed in a visiting room with a male resident after an argument to "talk through their differences" and that while in the room she was threatened and raped. Weymouth staff stated that the door had been open and the two residents had been checked regularly. The resident later indicated she wished to withdraw her complaint, and once she had been interviewed by Police all charges were dropped.<sup>1526</sup>

In [REDACTED] a staff member found a resident being physically and sexually assaulted by another resident in a toilet cubicle. The perpetrator was placed in secure while staff undertook an investigation and the victim was offered counselling options. There were four similar incidents around this time.<sup>1527</sup>

In 1994 the Minister of Social Welfare advised that there had been only one reported case of sexual abuse of a resident in the Centre's Care and Protection Unit. He noted that the information had been relayed to the Police and the resident allegedly responsible for the assault was formally charged and subsequently transferred to the Epuni Residential Centre. He reported that the victim had received a full medical examination and was undergoing counselling, and an investigation had been carried out to ascertain how the assault occurred and how further assaults could be prevented.<sup>1528</sup>

<sup>1522</sup> Memo from D G Reilly Assistant Director Institutional Services to Director General, 29/7/74, Weymouth Incidents 33551.

<sup>1523</sup> Tim Clark Clinical Psychologist to J Wood Principal, 7/10/88, Weymouth Complaints, F5000002381847.

<sup>1524</sup> Audit Report 1990, Weymouth Reports F500000602099.

<sup>1525</sup> Audit Report 1990, Weymouth Reports F500000602099.

<sup>1526</sup> Memo from A Gillies Director (Corporate Duties) to Director General, [REDACTED], Weymouth Complaints [REDACTED]

<sup>1527</sup> Incident Reports – Care and Protection, [REDACTED] Weymouth Incidents, [REDACTED] See this file for detail of similar incidents.

<sup>1528</sup> Question for Written Answer, 11/3/94, Weymouth Complaints, F5000004081323.



## Health and medication

In 1974 the Principal commented that although there were facilities at Weymouth for dentist and venereologist services, arrangements could not be finalised until approval had been given and finance was made available.<sup>1529</sup>

In January 1974 a Doctor accepted the role of diagnosing and treating venereal diseases in a clinic at Weymouth subject to the Director General's approval.<sup>1530</sup> In February the Principal again requested approval which still had not been granted.<sup>1531</sup> The registered nurse at Weymouth had pointed out that the girls needed to be diagnosed and treated in the early stages of the disease, and too many resources were being tied up when transporting the residents to be treated in Auckland City.<sup>1532</sup> The role of the Venereologist was approved and later that year approval was given for her to present a series of lectures to residents and staff outlining the clinical and social aspects of venereal diseases and answering their questions.<sup>1533</sup>

In 1976 the Venereologist recommended that no resident use the pool until she had been medically cleared following any overnight stay away from Weymouth. The Senior Counsellor commented that this effectively meant a weekend or overnight outing would automatically incur a vaginal examination and exclusion from the pool for approximately two weeks.<sup>1534</sup> The Principal sought a ruling from the Director General, but the files do not record an outcome.<sup>1535</sup>

In 1982 there were weekly psychological services, periodic dentist services and GP services as required. Psychiatric back up was provided by Campbell Lodge, Papakura.<sup>1536</sup>

In 1982 the Code of Practice noted that the school nurse ensured that all specialised health services available to New Zealand children outside institutions were also available to residents. At this time there was a medical practitioner who visited weekly to oversee general healthcare of the residents. Each girl was to be given a general physical examination upon admission and the results of this and future examinations were made available to caseworkers. Regular dental care was provided for residents with specialist referrals as necessary.<sup>1537</sup>

In 1983 there was a qualified nurse who attended to the day to day requirements, organised specialist consultations and assisted the doctor, dentist and venereologist who visited regularly. The Principal commented the resident nurse provided an 'excellent service'. He also remarked that the residents were, "anxious at times" but that with counselling from staff and the nurse all their needs were being met.<sup>1538</sup>

<sup>1529</sup> M Powierza, Principal to Director General, 25/2/74, Weymouth Secure 33551.

<sup>1530</sup> Memo from G M Wilson for Director General to Director General, 16/1/74, Weymouth Health, 33551.

<sup>1531</sup> Memo from M Powierza Principal to Director General on memo from V J Green Registered Nurse to Principal, 27/2/74, Weymouth Health 33551.

<sup>1532</sup> Memo from V J Green Registered Nurse to Principal, 27/2/74, Weymouth Health 33551.

<sup>1533</sup> Memo from V J Green Nurse to Principal, 11/6/74, Weymouth Health, 33551.

<sup>1534</sup> Memo from N McLauchlan Senior Counsellor to Principal, 10/9/76, Weymouth Health 33551.

<sup>1535</sup> M Powierza Principal to Director General on memo from N McLauchlan Senior Counsellor to Principal, 10/9/76, Weymouth Health 33551.

<sup>1536</sup> Annual Report 1982, Weymouth Reports F5000006020996.

<sup>1537</sup> Code of Practice for Weymouth Girls School, prepared by Weymouth Staff, 1982, Weymouth Profile F5000006020996.

<sup>1538</sup> Circular Memorandum 1982/22, 15/2/82, Weymouth Education. F5000006021240.

Over their first six weeks in the home girls were given medical, dental and psychological care as necessary in 1985.<sup>1539</sup>

### **Availability of psychologists and psychiatrists**

In 1974 the Papakura Psychological Services had been involved at Weymouth and provided assistance with diagnosis; staff training; and support and counselling. The Principal requested their involvement with the school programme, assisting in educational and social programmes.<sup>1540</sup>

In 1982 the Code of Practice stated that in order to ensure that a girl's problems were "behavioural and not organic" girls could be referred to psychological or psychiatric professionals to develop an appropriate programme. It stated "adequate professional supervision is to be provided where aversive procedures, deprivation or medication is being used to control exceptional behavioural difficulties."<sup>1541</sup>

In 1983 psychologist reports upon admission were at the discretion of the Principal.<sup>1542</sup> He commented this year that the psychologist liaised with the Senior Counsellor to provide assessment and advice for school and hostel service, but that the role of the psychologist was under review due to a reduction in services.<sup>1543</sup>

In 1983 the Principal J H Wood commented that the psychologist service was limited but that psychiatric backup through Campbell Lodge Papakura had been very good.<sup>1544</sup> In the same year the Senior Counsellor commented that Weymouth had a very satisfactory psychiatric and psychological referral system.<sup>1545</sup>

In 1984 the Principal commented that there was an urgent need for a clinical psychologist 'on tap'.<sup>1546</sup>

There was concern after an incident in 1985 when an "acutely psychotic" resident was removed from Weymouth without any consultation with her doctor. The Visiting Medical Officer was concerned about the breakdown in communication and wished to prevent it from occurring again.<sup>1547</sup>

In 1985 Weymouth had a resident Senior Counsellor and a Psychologist, although the Development Committee commented that as Weymouth was now a multi-purpose residential centre there was an increased need for specialist services and it was hoped another psychologist and a part-time psychiatrist would be appointed.<sup>1548</sup>

<sup>1539</sup> Interim Report on the Development Facilities and Programmes at Weymouth, 1985, Weymouth Reports F5000006020997.

<sup>1540</sup> M Powierza Principal to Director General, 5/12/74, Weymouth Health 33551.

<sup>1541</sup> Code of Practice for Weymouth Girls School, prepared by Weymouth Staff, 1982, Weymouth Profile F5000006020996.

<sup>1542</sup> Michael Sagar Senior Psychologist to Principal, 9/1/83, Weymouth Health F5000006020997.

<sup>1543</sup> J H Wood, Principal to Director Residential Services, 22/11/83, Weymouth Education F5000006020996.

<sup>1544</sup> Annual Report 1983, Weymouth Reports F5000006020997.

<sup>1545</sup> Memo from G Vanderstaak Senior Counsellor to Principal, 5/4/83, Weymouth Health F5000006041345.

<sup>1546</sup> Annual Report 1984, Weymouth Reports F5000006020997.

<sup>1547</sup> Memo from Dr R J Avery to Principal, 14/10/85, Weymouth Health, F5000006020997.

<sup>1548</sup> Interim Report (6 months) Weymouth Residential Centre Programme Development Committee, November 1985, Weymouth Reports F5000006020995.

## Medication

In 1977 staff were responsible for the distribution of medication. Medication ranged from antibiotics to tranquilizers. The Victoria University Masters student commented 'by far the major proportion involves antibiotics and treatment for specific medical complaints. Use of medication to influence behaviour was comparatively rare. Usually no more than 1 or 2 girls in a unit at any one time would require this type of medication'.<sup>1549</sup>

Medication given to residents was recorded in the Medication Register. In feedback in the 1980s it was commented that the recording was very good.<sup>1550</sup> The 1982 Code of Practice stated that medication was held securely unless it could safely be held in the resident's possession.<sup>1551</sup>

In 1984 it was noted that a social worker had injected medication into a resident after she had attempted suicide. The Director General commented that although the staff member was a qualified nurse, because he had been employed in the capacity of Residential Social Worker and was not receiving continuing nurse training or supervision, he was not to practise his nursing skills.<sup>1552</sup>

## Psychiatric hospital placement

In 1983 the Senior Counsellor commented that Weymouth had a very satisfactory psychiatric and psychological referral system. He sought a directive as to the "loco parentis responsibilities" regarding psychiatric referrals.<sup>1553</sup>

Apart from the comments in the above paragraph, there was nothing found on file relating to placements in psychiatric hospitals of Weymouth residents.

## Staffing

No information on staffing was found for 1973-1976.

In 1977 the majority of the 68 staff members were pakeha women. All night staff (aside from the grounds supervisor) were female. Staff numbers had doubled since opening.<sup>1554</sup> At this point each shift was staffed by three staff members in each of the hostels and four staff members in secure.<sup>1555</sup> Staff on each shift were expected

<sup>1549</sup> "Weymouth Girls' School: A study of what is, with a view to what might be" Nicola Atwool, 1977,

Weymouth Reports.

<sup>1550</sup> Handwritten Feedback on Weymouth, author unknown, undated circa 1980s, Weymouth Reports, F5000006020996.

<sup>1551</sup> Code of Practice for Weymouth Girls School, prepared by Weymouth Staff, 1982, Weymouth Profile F5000006020996.

<sup>1552</sup> B M Manchester for Director General to Principal, 31/10/84, Weymouth Incidents, F5000006020997.

<sup>1553</sup> Memo from G Vanderstaak Senior Counsellor to Principal, 5/4/83, Weymouth Health

F5000006041345.

<sup>1554</sup> "Weymouth Girls' School: A study of what is, with a view to what might be" Nicola Atwool, 1977, Weymouth Reports, p 51.

<sup>1555</sup> "Weymouth Girls' School: A study of what is, with a view to what might be" Nicola Atwool, 1977, Weymouth Reports, p 43.

not only to supervise the residents but also to complete paperwork, tally the girls' 'points', and record the events of the shift.<sup>1556</sup> Staff members were organised on a team basis, and the Victoria University Masters student commented "in most instances a permanent team evolves a harmonious working relationship" and that the greatest determinant was how the Housemaster or Housemistress handled their seniority.<sup>1557</sup> She noted that staff rivalries existed between the shifts in the hostels, ranging from friendly jokes to open hostility and commented "criticisms are rarely voiced openly but dissatisfaction is generally conveyed in one way or another."<sup>1558</sup>

The Masters student commented that a rule book for staff explicitly stated that the role of staff was more than maintaining custody; staff members were expected to "circulate among the girls" and to assist in providing activities.<sup>1559</sup> Neither the rule book nor details of its content are held on the files.

In 1977 the Assistant Director Residential Services stated after a visit to the Residence that he felt that there was a little less tension at Weymouth than there had been earlier that year but that "the place still does not appear to function on any really positive lines even though they have a number of able and very dedicated staff."<sup>1560</sup>

In 1980 pressure was placed on staff to increase their contributions to the institution and its programmes. Mr Wood commented to N G Stevens that several staff members had been "brought to task" due to lack of input and that in the instances where staff were not "measuring up" he expected the full support of Head Office (which he claimed had not always been available in the past).<sup>1561</sup>

In 1982 there was a disagreement between Weymouth Principal Marek Powierza and the Department of Education regarding the use of a dinghy purchased for the school.<sup>1562</sup>

The Code of Practice stated that neither staff nor girls wore uniforms or badges and residents were to refer to staff members by name or by nickname. Staff members were to join in games and recreation with the residents, and caseworkers were to take their girls shopping. Staff were to respect residents, "refrain from infringing on the personal rights and freedoms of the residents"; to set appropriate models for residents to observe, and to respect confidentiality where appropriate.<sup>1563</sup>

The Code of Practice also stated that management would inform each new employee of their immediate line of communication; provide an induction programme covering essential aspects of Weymouth policy and philosophy, and provide regular supervision for all staff. It was stated that staff would have performance assessments undertaken by their most appropriate supervisor. Staff were to

<sup>1556</sup> "Weymouth Girls' School: A study of what is, with a view to what might be" Nicola Atwool, 1977, Weymouth Reports, p 45.

<sup>1557</sup> "Weymouth Girls' School: A study of what is, with a view to what might be" Nicola Atwool, 1977, Weymouth Reports, p 52.

<sup>1558</sup> "Weymouth Girls' School: A study of what is, with a view to what might be" Nicola Atwool, 1977, Weymouth Reports, page 53.

<sup>1559</sup> "Weymouth Girls' School: A study of what is, with a view to what might be" Nicola Atwool, 1977, Weymouth Reports, p 55.

<sup>1560</sup> T Ball, Assistant Director Residential Services, notes from visit to Weymouth on 21/11/77, Weymouth Profile, 33551.

<sup>1561</sup> Notes from visit to Weymouth, N G Stevens, 4-7/8/1980, Weymouth Profile 33551.

<sup>1562</sup> B A McGrath Executive Officer to M Powierza Principal, 11/2/82, Weymouth Staffing, F5000006041345.

<sup>1563</sup> Code of Practice for Weymouth Girls School, prepared by Weymouth Staff, 1982, Weymouth Profile F5000006020996.

recognise that their primary responsibility was the care and development of residents and to conduct their programmes according to the needs of their residents.<sup>1564</sup>

In 1982 and 1984 the staff ceiling was 63, and this was considered a minimal figure to continue providing the same level of care as had previously been given.<sup>1565</sup> CAA was allocated as 20 hours weekly for horse riding, 20 hours weekly for hairdressing, 10 hours weekly for physical training and 10 hours weekly for piano. Domestic and Ancillary services were provided by two or three cooks, a laundry instructor, two gardeners and a handyman.<sup>1566</sup>

In 1983 casework was allocated to all Residential Social Workers and to Assistant Residential Social Workers as it was decided they were 'ready for this step'.<sup>1567</sup>

In November 1983 as the first male residents were admitted, the Assistant Principal of the temporary remand unit noted that there were some "fears amongst the staff" who consequently functioned with extreme care.<sup>1568</sup>

In the 1980s a teacher with skills in Maoritanga was appointed to the staff in recognition of the importance of incorporating a Maori identity into the training programme.<sup>1569</sup>

The Principal noted that due to the boys and girls being placed at Weymouth on remand the staff were exhausted by the end of 1983.<sup>1570</sup> The closure of Cornwall Park and possible transfers from there added to the pressure on staff.<sup>1571</sup>

In 1984 the Director of Residential Services commented that each of the three programmes (that is, extended care for girls, remand care for girls and remand care for boys) should be staffed independently with its own Assistant Principal.<sup>1572</sup> The Director General recommended a fourth Assistant Principal (Administration) whom he envisaged would relieve the Principal of administrative work.<sup>1573</sup>

In 1987 the Programme Development Committee reported that the lack of clear information regarding changes in staffing and programmes in the Residence had produced anxiety in staff. A general staff meeting was suggested so the Principal could communicate the changes clearly.<sup>1574</sup>

It was frequently commented that the changing and restructuring of Weymouth around 1984-1988 created anxiety for staff which resulted in uncertainty and low

<sup>1564</sup> Code of Practice for Weymouth Girls School, prepared by Weymouth Staff, 1982, Weymouth Profile F5000006020996.

<sup>1565</sup> Annual Report 1982, Weymouth Reports, F5000006020996; and Annual Report 1983, Weymouth Reports F5000006020997

<sup>1566</sup> Annual Report 1983, Weymouth Reports F5000006020997.

<sup>1567</sup> Annual Report 1983, Weymouth Reports F5000006020997.

<sup>1568</sup> R R Thomas Assistant Principal Temporary Weymouth Remand Unit to J H Wood Principal, 13/12/83, Weymouth Profile, F5000002389201.

<sup>1569</sup> Proposal from Manurewa Maori Committee re Weymouth Girls' Home, author unknown, date unknown circa 1980s, Weymouth Staffing, 33551.

<sup>1570</sup> Annual Report 1983, Weymouth Reports F5000006020997

<sup>1571</sup> Annual Report 1983, Weymouth Reports F5000006020997

<sup>1572</sup> M P Doolan Director Residential Services to Divisional Director (S.W) 10/7/84 J H Wood Principal to Regional Director, 15/3/84, Weymouth Profile, F5000006020997

<sup>1573</sup> R J Wilson Regional Director to Director General, Weymouth Development Plan, 21/9/84, Weymouth Profile, F5000006020997.

<sup>1574</sup> Programme Development Committee Minutes, 1987, Weymouth Profile, F5000002388234.

staff morale, and staff were taking the Department of Social Welfare up on offers such as early retirement.<sup>1575</sup>

The Transition Manager of the Northern Residential Centre in 1994 stated that there was "media hype" that focused on absconding rates which had a "lowering effect on morale."<sup>1576</sup>

In 1994 a review team found the Northern Residential Centre had low staff morale due to 'lack of direction from management, lack of professional supervision, constant changes and a general feeling of being used and abused by management'.<sup>1577</sup>

Between 1991 and 1994 staff numbers ranged from 54 to 58, the majority of which were social work staff.<sup>1578</sup>

### Staff shortages

In 1974 a journalist contacted the Assistant Director of Residential Services and alleged Weymouth had acute staff shortages with about two staff to every twenty girls.<sup>1579</sup> The Assistant Director replied that there were no staff shortages in the Residence but there were vacancies for staff and that staff turnover was usual as "women prefer regular hours rather than the rostering system inevitable in institution management".<sup>1580</sup>

Weymouth was short four staff members after restructuring in 1981.<sup>1581</sup>

In 1985 it was reported that "grave staff shortages" in secure had resulted in inexperienced relievers' involvement in admitting girls to secure.<sup>1582</sup>

### Training and supervision

In 1974 a journalist claimed that the Department of Social Welfare failed to provide adequate training for its residential staff and as such the staff were lacking 'basic insights methods and equipment' to deal with the girls in the Home.<sup>1583</sup> The Assistant Director of residential Services responded that prior to the opening of Weymouth all staff attended induction courses and further formal training courses had been held over the year and that some ongoing training was on-the-job.<sup>1584</sup> He advised there were weekly sessions and meetings and individual counselling of staff as needed. He noted that when appropriate Weymouth staff received two months training, or refresher courses, at the Residential training School in Levin and that all

<sup>1575</sup> See, for example, Institution Internal Audit Report 1988, Weymouth Reports, F5000006020999.

<sup>1576</sup> P H Campbell, Transition Manager to Area Manager Auckland Youth Justice, 18/11/94, Weymouth Incidents F5000004081323. For more information on absconding over this period see Absconding section.

<sup>1577</sup> Report from Transitional Management Team, November 1994, Weymouth Reports F5000006021151.

<sup>1578</sup> Question for Written Answer, 7/4/94, Weymouth Staffing, F5000004081323.

<sup>1579</sup> I Macdonald, New Zealand Herald to Assistant Director Residential Services, 12/8/74, Weymouth Reports 33551.

<sup>1580</sup> Assistant Director Residential Services to I Macdonald, New Zealand Herald, 27/8/74 Weymouth Reports 33551.

<sup>1581</sup> Suggested Restructure for 58 Residents, handwritten, date unknown, Weymouth Staffing, F5000006041345.

<sup>1582</sup> Handwritten notes, author unknown, 05/02/85, Weymouth Profile, F5000006020997.

<sup>1583</sup> I Macdonald, New Zealand Herald to Assistant Director Residential Services, 12/8/74, Weymouth Reports 33551.

<sup>1584</sup> Assistant Director Residential Services to I Macdonald, New Zealand Herald, 27/8/74 Weymouth Reports 33551.

staff would eventually have been offered a course 'specifically designed to meet their needs'.<sup>1585</sup>

In 1977 very few staff, other than those working at Assistant Principal or Counsellor level, had any related educational training. However, some had undertaken extra-mural training, the Counsellor provided training within the Home and each staff member had a Senior Housemaster whom they could approach if they had any job related problems.<sup>1586</sup>

In the 1980s in feedback provided to Weymouth it was noted that there was good "follow up and induction" of Assistant Residential Social Workers, but that supervision was not good, on the job training had "scope for improvement", and that there was not enough training being given to existing staff.<sup>1587</sup>

In 1983 and 1984 monthly training days were allocated for staff, and additionally there were attendances at Tiromoana Residential Staff Training Service and at Taranaki House. Three staff members were completing Massey University extra-mural courses, and three staff sat residential care certificates.<sup>1588</sup> There was a greater emphasis on supervision in 1984, provided through hostel meetings, senior meetings and individual sessions. The Principal was of the belief that a higher percentage of staff received and sought supervision on a regular basis.<sup>1589</sup>

In 1984 following the suicide of one of the residents, a Social Work Advisor commented to the regional Director that there were inadequate recording systems in place at Weymouth, and that there had been "a dependence upon verbal exchange of information and reluctance on the part of key persons to record happenings, statements, opinions and concerns." The Social Work Advisor also commented that "open rejection" of structured, recorded supervision was commonplace and that although training was required, the problem was "human" and attitudes would need to change before the problem could be eliminated.<sup>1590</sup>

In 1987 staff voiced concern about the lack of external training opportunities made available to them.<sup>1591</sup>

In 1988 the findings of an audit of Weymouth stated that staff consistently reported a lack of on-campus training, that staff supervision was not being carried out regularly, that the training of new and relieving staff was 'haphazard' and the staff development depended on the skill and motivation of controlling officers. It was also commented that staff first needed to be sourced from other units before calling in relief staff.<sup>1592</sup>

All staff of the reopened Weymouth Residential Centre in 1990 received training.<sup>1593</sup> At this time the Assistant Principal provided supervision for Senior Social Workers who in turn provided supervision for their teams.<sup>1594</sup>

<sup>1585</sup> Assistant Director Residential Services to I Macdonald, New Zealand Herald, 27/8/74 Weymouth Reports 33551.

<sup>1586</sup> "Weymouth Girls' School: A study of what is, with a view to what might be" Nicola Atwool, 1977, Weymouth Reports.

<sup>1587</sup> Handwritten Feedback on Weymouth, author unknown, undated circa 1980s, Weymouth Reports, F5000006020996.

<sup>1588</sup> Annual Report 1983, Weymouth Reports F5000006020997; and Annual Report 1984, Weymouth Reports F5000006020997.

<sup>1589</sup> Annual Report 1984, Weymouth Reports F5000006020997.

<sup>1590</sup> Weymouth Policy and Practice Report, B M Fitzgerald, 10/01/1985, Weymouth Profile F500000602997

<sup>1591</sup> Audit Report 1987, Weymouth Reports F5000006020999.

<sup>1592</sup> Institution Internal Audit Report 1988, Weymouth Reports, F5000006020999.

<sup>1593</sup> Audit Report 1990, Weymouth Reports F500000602099.

<sup>1594</sup> Audit Report 1990, Weymouth Reports F500000602099.

In 1994 a review team expressed concern that some of the Northern Residential Centre social work staff did not meet the Children and Young Persons Service requirements. The team remarked that professional supervision and personal development plans were almost non-existent.<sup>1595</sup>

### Management practices

The first Principal was Marek Powierza, who was appointed in 1973 and who had previously held the Principal position at Holdsworth School in Wanganui.<sup>1596</sup> He remained Principal until 1982.<sup>1597</sup>

In 1977 the structure of the 68 staff at Weymouth was hierarchical ranging from Assistant Housemistresses and Housemasters up to the Assistant Principal and Principal. The Masters student noted that the day-to-day running of the institution was left to the Principal but that decision-making at the top level was the result of discussion among all senior staff. She commented that 'there was certainly no suggestion of arbitrary and autocratic use of power by the Principal' and that he had instead at times been criticised for not taking a hard enough line.<sup>1598</sup> Major decisions affecting the whole institution were passed on to all staff by the Senior Housemaster once finalised.<sup>1599</sup>

The Masters student noted that the participation of lower level staff such as Assistant Housemistresses and Housemasters in decision-making regarding the day-to-day running of the Home was limited. At times senior staff members undermined the Assistant Housemistresses and had a tendency to take over. There was also no consistent effort to include the residents in decision-making even though the rule book stated that no rule could be changed without their being consulted.<sup>1600</sup>

In 1977 Principal Marek Powierza commented that as the Social Work Manual had not been updated after the implementation of the Children and Young Persons Act 1974 he had not been following its instructions in relation to home leave.<sup>1601</sup> The Assistant Director Residential Services accepted his explanation but commented that he still thought it was, "another example of Weymouth doing its own thing without us actually being aware of what is actually involved".<sup>1602</sup>

Weekly "Housemistress" meetings were held in 1977 attended by all Housemistresses, Housemasters and senior staff members. There was also a weekly Hostel 1 meeting attended by the Senior Housemaster and all staff members on duty at the time of the meeting.<sup>1603</sup>

<sup>1595</sup> Report from Transitional Management Team, November 1994, Weymouth Reports F5000006021151.

<sup>1596</sup> 'Principal risks a 70-girl migraine', Sheldon Brown, newspaper unknown, 8/10/73, Weymouth Profile, 33551.

<sup>1597</sup> Annual Report 1982, Weymouth Reports F5000006020996.

<sup>1598</sup> Weymouth Girls' School: A study of what is, with a view to what might be" Nicola Atwool, 1977, Weymouth Reports, page 66.

<sup>1599</sup> "Weymouth Girls' School: A study of what is, with a view to what might be" Nicola Atwool, 1977, Weymouth Reports, pages 67-68.

<sup>1600</sup> "Weymouth Girls' School: A study of what is, with a view to what might be" Nicola Atwool, 1977, Weymouth Reports, pages 68-73.

<sup>1601</sup> Marek Powierza, Principal, to Director General, 15/21/77, Weymouth Profile, 33551. For more information on home leave see Contact with Family section.

<sup>1602</sup> Assistant Director Residential Services, Notes on Home Leave from Weymouth, 10/01/78, Weymouth Profile 33551.

<sup>1603</sup> "Weymouth Girls' School: A study of what is, with a view to what might be" Nicola Atwool, 1977, Weymouth Reports, pages 42-43.



In 1982 the Code of Practice stated that "Staff should make every effort to consult with the residents and involve them as much as possible in decision making within their hostels." It also stated that management would endeavour to ensure maximum staff participation in planning, and clearly define the "channels of communication" between residential staff and senior staff.<sup>1604</sup>

In 1982 there were weekly senior staff meetings, and weekly meetings within each hostel. School staff had weekly meetings, and individual teachers also attended hotel meetings. There were weekly general staff meetings and support staff met once a week.<sup>1605</sup>

In 1983 Weymouth was visited by the Director General, the Auckland Regional Director, the Director of Residential Services, Head Office and the Auckland Senior Psychologist Head Office.<sup>1606</sup>

There were weekly hostel staff meetings in 1984.<sup>1607</sup>

In 1985 the Director of Residential Service questioned "the management's capacity to cope with the complexities of the proposed campus."<sup>1608</sup>

In 1990 weekly Centre Management meetings were held, and the minutes were made available to all staff members. An internal auditor commented that information from management to staff was dispersed quickly and effectively and that staff felt consulted and informed.<sup>1609</sup>

In 1994 it was decided that the Northern Residential Centre would run on 'unit management lines' meaning 'all supervisors as well as having personal responsibility for an individual living unit have responsibility for the whole Centre when they are the supervisor on duty'. This decision was met with some contention by staff.<sup>1610</sup>

## Staff incidents

In 1984 following the suicide of a Weymouth resident it was noted that the recording systems at Weymouth were defective as the girl had previously attempted suicide and had talked about killing herself but the staff members caring for her had not been made aware of this. Furthermore, if the requisite half hourly checks had been carried out, they had not been recorded.<sup>1611</sup> The Principal reiterated the need to record all checks and also directed that residents in a distressed or upset state were not to be left alone.<sup>1612</sup>

'Truth' newspaper ran an article in approximately 1984 that contained allegations about Weymouth made by former and existing residents. The girls alleged they had been treated as prisoners, hit and slapped, and called offensive names by staff. The writer claimed that the girls' statements and taped interviews had been handed to the

<sup>1604</sup> Code of Practice for Weymouth Girls School, prepared by Weymouth Staff, 1982, Weymouth Profile F5000006020996.

<sup>1605</sup> Annual Report 1982, Weymouth Reports F5000006020996.

<sup>1606</sup> Annual Report 1983, Weymouth Reports F5000006020997.

<sup>1607</sup> Weymouth Policy and Practice Report, B M Fitzgerald, 10/01/1985, Weymouth Profile F500000602997

<sup>1608</sup> Notes from Director Residential Services after Auckland Visit, 18-21/3/85, Weymouth Profile, F5000006020995

<sup>1609</sup> Audit Report 1990, Weymouth Reports F5000006020999.

<sup>1610</sup> Report from Transitional Management Team, November 1994, Weymouth Reports F5000006021151.

<sup>1611</sup> B M Manchester for Director General to Regional Director, 16/11/1984, Weymouth Reports F5000006020995.

<sup>1612</sup> R J Wilson Regional Director to Director General, 26/3/1985 F5000006020995.

Police and the Department of Social Welfare.<sup>1613</sup> 'Truth' had been approached by a man who the Director General stated had appointed himself "a spokesperson for street kids and young people who have absconded from Social Welfare homes". As well as contacting the media, this man contacted the Police Commissioner and the Ombudsman and Department of Social Welfare management staff with concerns about the Residences and the circumstances surrounding the suicide of a resident. The Director General concluded that his claims were "unfounded".<sup>1614</sup>

In [REDACTED] an employee of Weymouth, was charged and convicted of sodomy, and his employment was immediately terminated. He had first been employed as a relieving Night Attendant at Wesleydale Boys' Home and when it closed he had been transferred to Weymouth. He had failed to complete the previous convictions section on his employment application, and it later transpired he had a previous conviction for sodomy. The offence that resulted in the second conviction took place while the employee was off-duty, but was against a former Wesleydale resident.<sup>1615</sup>

In [REDACTED] a number of residents complained that three staff members had physically abused another resident. One staff member admitted to kicking the boy and consequently received a written warning. Another staff member admitted to placing him in a "Therapeutic Restraint Hold" with permission, and this form of restraint was later prohibited by the Senior Management team. The boy was interviewed by a panel and gave no adverse opinions of Weymouth or its staff, and the interviewing panel concluded "there was no substance to the complaints made other than the admission by one staff member".<sup>1616</sup>

In [REDACTED] resident a male resident was assaulted by an unnamed residential Social worker who had reportedly gone "beyond what was required to physically respond to the situation". The staff member was given a written warning and sent on an anger management course. In 1994 the investigation was reopened and it was reported that there was no record the course had been attended, nor was there any record that the Police or the boy's parents had been notified.<sup>1617</sup>

In [REDACTED] Weymouth a resident complained to staff at Youth Justice South that he had been assaulted by a Weymouth staff member. Wilson Irons, Manager of Social Services, wrote to the manager at Youth Justice South stating that he had investigated the allegation and concluded it was not correct, and requested any mention of the assault be deleted from kept records.<sup>1618</sup>

## Schooling

In the 1970s the school at Weymouth had 11 classrooms, and each class consisted of approximately six students. The school employed five full-time and four part-time

<sup>1613</sup> 'Girls Home A Horror House', Peter Howland, *Truth*, date unknown circa 1984, Weymouth Complaints F5000006020995.

<sup>1614</sup> Report to the Minister of Social Welfare, 13/12/84, Weymouth Incidents F5000006041345.

<sup>1615</sup> Memo, author and recipients unknown, in relation to possible criticism by High Court, [REDACTED] Weymouth Incidents, F5000006020995.

<sup>1616</sup> R J Herbert Director to R E O Residential Services, [REDACTED], Weymouth Complaints, F5000002381847.

<sup>1617</sup> Memo from Alison Thom Practice Consultant to Paula Wallis Regional Competency Coordinator, 22/9/94, Weymouth Complaints, F5000004081323.

<sup>1618</sup> Memo from Wilson Irons Manager Social Services to Manager NZCYP Service Youth Justice South, 22/3/94, Weymouth Complaints, F5000005782161.

teachers. Occasionally residents would attend outside schools.<sup>1619</sup> The school was equipped with a woodwork room, a sewing room, a kitchen, an art room, a library and two classrooms.<sup>1620</sup>

In 1974 the Assistant Director of Residential Services noted that vacancies in the teacher establishment were 'a matter of concern'. He stated that everything was being done to fill the vacancies as soon as possible due to the importance of the school to the training programme.<sup>1621</sup>

The Assistant Director of Residential Services noted in 1974 that most of the girls disliked school and were "educationally seriously retarded". He stated "the emphasis of the training programme is to find avenues for the discovery of personal abilities and satisfaction in learning and maintaining interest for the completion of tasks and projects."<sup>1622</sup>

Girls under 15 years of age were required to attend school classes. Girls older than 15 were encouraged to attend.<sup>1623</sup> All extended care residents were required to attend the school for six weeks upon their admission and in 1983 the Principal noted that most continued beyond that period.<sup>1624</sup>

In 1982 a girl's educational level was ascertained on admission and staff planned for her educational needs. For those with "basic academic proficiencies" there were remedial programmes and for those with "limited academic ability" there were basic course materials. The Code of Practice stated "we make the educational system meet the needs the girls rather than the girls having to meet the needs of the system." Class numbers were small to ensure close support from teachers was possible. Maoritanga was taught in the school and girls were given opportunities to participate in Home Economics, Sewing, Arts and Crafts and Physical Education. There were also educational experiences offsite. Educational progress and term reports were provided.<sup>1625</sup>

In 1983 school was compulsory for all girls for their first half-term irrespective of their age. The education programme took a "high school experience class approach" teaching reading, languages, living skills and coping strategies.<sup>1626</sup>

In 1984 the Director General informed the Department of Education that Weymouth was to integrate its boys' and girls' remand programmes with its extended care programmes and that they recommended an integrated educational system also.<sup>1627</sup> This integration was occurring by 1988.<sup>1628</sup>

<sup>1619</sup> Questionnaire sent to National Institutions, date unknown circa 1970s, Weymouth Reports 33551.

<sup>1620</sup> "Weymouth Girls' School: A study of what is, with a view to what might be" Nicola Atwool, 1977, Weymouth Reports.

<sup>1621</sup> Assistant Director Residential Services to I Macdonald, New Zealand Herald, 27/8/74 Weymouth Reports 33551.

<sup>1622</sup> Assistant Director Residential Services to I Macdonald, New Zealand Herald, 27/8/74 Weymouth Reports 33551.

<sup>1623</sup> Circular Memorandum 1982/22, 15/2/82, Weymouth Education. F5000006021240.

<sup>1624</sup> Annual Report 1983, Weymouth Reports F5000006020997

<sup>1625</sup> Code of Practice for Weymouth Girls School, prepared by Weymouth Staff, 1982, Weymouth Profile F5000006020996.

<sup>1626</sup> J H Wood, Principal to Director Residential Services, 22/11/83, Weymouth Education F5000006020996.

<sup>1627</sup> M P Doolan for Director General to Director-General Department of Education, 18/12/1984, Weymouth Profile, F500006041345.

<sup>1628</sup> Institution Internal Audit Report 1988, Weymouth Reports, F5000006020999.

In 1985 it was expected that once the remand units opened the school would have three classes, one of which was an induction class. The school's capacity would be 64.<sup>1629</sup> Teachers endeavoured to formulate a specific school programme especially for new admissions in the induction class.<sup>1630</sup>

Residents who were in the Northern Residential Centre on the care and protection programme were to have their educational needs met by local schools in 1990.<sup>1631</sup> It is not recorded how the educational needs of Youth Justice residents were met.

In 1992 Weymouth school did not admit any non-resident students. It had nine teachers and 28 students.<sup>1632</sup>

In 1993 the Children and Young Persons Service requested that the designation for the school be changed from "Primary" to "Composite" or "Secondary" in order to ensure "the school was resourced at the appropriate level, would attract staff with the right mix of skills and attributes, and would generally contribute to an improved programme to meet the educational needs of the residents."<sup>1633</sup>

The Regional Manager commented that the standard of the school at Weymouth and its programme in 1993 was not adequate, and that absconding rates from the school were unacceptably high. There were no resources to station security staff at the school or to increase the physical security and it was instead recommended that individuals "be withdrawn from School on a day to day basis unless or until Weymouth management are better able to guarantee acceptable security."<sup>1634</sup> There had been up to five abscondings a week from the school and the teachers were not authorised to restrain the residents.<sup>1635</sup>

In 1994 the school had a role of 35 and subjects taught were based on the "standard New Zealand curriculum goals and objectives."<sup>1636</sup>

### **Links between school and the home**

In 1977 the school operated "relatively autonomously" and the institution staff were not usually involved the education programme. The Victoria University Masters student wrote that the school was a "separate world where institution staff were occasionally sent to supervise". There was however an attempt to 'bridge the gap' between the school and the residence, and some residence staff trained in remedial reading and each took responsibility for one resident.<sup>1637</sup>

<sup>1629</sup> Memo from M P Doolan to Director General Education Department, 26/3/85, Weymouth Education, F5000006020995.

<sup>1630</sup> Interim Report on the Development Facilities and Programmes at Weymouth, 1985, Weymouth Reports F5000006020997.

<sup>1631</sup> Memo from April Eruti to Director of Social Welfare (all districts) 24/7/1990, Weymouth Profile, F5000002388234.

<sup>1632</sup> Memo from Eddie Clark Acting Director Policy to Dr Lockwood Smith Minister of Education, 7/9/92, Weymouth Education, F5000006021151.

<sup>1633</sup> Report to the Minister of Social Welfare, 22/9/73, Weymouth Profile, F5000004081323.

<sup>1634</sup> R J Deyell Regional Manager to Acting General Manager, 10/5/93, Weymouth Education, F5000004081323.

<sup>1635</sup> April Eruti Branch Manager to Regional Manager, 5/5/93, Weymouth Education, F5000004081323.

<sup>1636</sup> Question for Written Answer, 11/4/94, Weymouth Education, F5000004081323

<sup>1637</sup> "Weymouth Girls' School: A study of what is, with a view to what might be" Nicola Atwool, 1977, Weymouth Reports, 61.

In 1982 the Code of Practice stated that teaching staff worked "in close co-operation with the girl's case workers and hostel staff."<sup>1638</sup>

In 1993 the Education Review Office commented that the blurred roles of authority between social welfare and education agencies had resulted in deep seated "suspicion and mistrust".<sup>1639</sup> They further commented in 1994 that the lack of cooperation between the school and the residential centre had continued, and was "hindering any development of a joint venture."<sup>1640</sup>

### **Issues with the provision of education**

In 1977 residents who were contemplating continuing their education complained that it was very difficult to learn as the other residents did not take school seriously.<sup>1641</sup>

In 1977 the Masters student remarked that that the school teachers had not been able to adapt to the special requirements of the residents. She noted that because the teachers attempted to conduct lessons as if they were in a normal school, they failed to "engage the residents in the educational process".<sup>1642</sup>

In 1985 it was reported that the Department of Education was going to request an extra two teachers for the Weymouth school but were not optimistic, and that it may be necessary to "cut the Weymouth coat according to the available cloth."<sup>1643</sup>

In 1993 the Education Review Office found many problems with the school and its Board of Trustees, and noted that the teachers at Weymouth found it very difficult to cater for both the Youth Justice young people and those there for care and protection.<sup>1644</sup>

In 1994 all residents released from secure were given a 24 hour stand-down period, during which time they were not permitted to attend school. A transitional review team commented that this was effectively a school suspension and believed this practice was illegal.<sup>1645</sup>

In 1994 a review team of the Northern Residential Centre found 'the partnership between the school and the residence is an ongoing problem, and while this remains, the school is not delivering a comprehensive education service to all the Centre's clients'.<sup>1646</sup>

In 1994 the Education Review Office stated that significant intervention would be required to resolve the issues and recommended the dissolution of the Board of

<sup>1638</sup> Code of Practice for Weymouth Girls School, prepared by Weymouth Staff, 1982, Weymouth Profile F5000006020996.

<sup>1639</sup> Education Review Office Assurance Audit Report, 26/3/93, Weymouth Education, F5000006021151.

<sup>1640</sup> Specific Compliance Audit Report, October 1994, Weymouth Education F5000004081323.

<sup>1641</sup> "Weymouth Girls' School: A study of what is, with a view to what might be" Nicola Atwood, 1977, Weymouth Reports, p 60.

<sup>1642</sup> "Weymouth Girls' School: A study of what is, with a view to what might be" Nicola Atwood, 1977, Weymouth Reports, p 61.

<sup>1643</sup> Notes on DSW/Deped Bimonthly Meeting, 2/5/85, Weymouth Education, F5000006020995.

<sup>1644</sup> Education Review Office Assurance Audit Report, 26/3/93, Weymouth Education, F5000006021151.

<sup>1645</sup> Report from Transitional Management Team, November 1994, Weymouth Reports F5000006021151.

<sup>1646</sup> Report from Transitional Management Team, November 1994, Weymouth Reports F5000006021151.

Trustees.<sup>1647</sup> In 1995 the Education Review Office found the school had "remained in a state of crisis."<sup>1648</sup>

## Absconding

In 1974 Principal Marek Powierza raised issues with the security of the Weymouth facilities. He noted that two of the main gates were buckled and twisted, the fence had been pulled up in places which enabled children to climb under, and the boundary block wall was insufficiently tall.<sup>1649</sup>

In 1977 the Principal stated that since the advent of their weekend leave programme, absconding had reduced considerably. He commented that home leave, "is the most effective part of our programme in enabling many of our children to get home legitimately without having to run home to do so."<sup>1650</sup> In 1978 the Assistant Director Residential Services remarked that this surprised him as the Assistant Principal had informed him that most of the absconding at that time was occurring while residents were on home leave.<sup>1651</sup>

In 1977 the measures in place to prevent absconding were 'compulsory detention in maximum secure after the first offence'; chains on windows; Hostel 1 was locked overnight; fire doors were alarmed; and the grounds were completely enclosed at night. The Masters student commented that preventive measures overshadowed discussions of why girls might abscond.<sup>1652</sup>

In 1982 the Principal reported that absconding had been kept to a low figure and accredited this to "a generally happy environment with optional activities, core of experiences staff with ample land to provide breathing space".<sup>1653</sup>

There were 147 abscondings in 1983 involving 126 girls. This was an increase over previous years reflecting the increasing number of girls in short-term care.<sup>1654</sup> As with other residences profiled in this report, there were also discrepancies in absconding figures provided to Head Office. The Director of Residential services later reported that there had been 159 incidents of absconding at Weymouth in 1983.<sup>1655</sup>

In 1984, following the suicide of a resident and subsequent closure of the maximum secure area, abscondings increased. The Principal suggested that perhaps the

<sup>1647</sup> Specific Compliance Audit Report, October 1994, Weymouth Education F5000004081323.

<sup>1648</sup> Education Review Office Assurance Audit Report, December 1995, Weymouth Education F5000006021150.

<sup>1649</sup> M Powierza, Principal to Director General, 25/2/74, Weymouth Secure 33551.

<sup>1650</sup> Marek Powierza, Principal, to Director General, 15/21/77, Weymouth Profile, 33551. For more information on the home leave policy, see Contact With Families section.

<sup>1651</sup> Assistant Director Residential Services, Notes on Home Leave from Weymouth, 10/01/78, Weymouth Profile 33551.

<sup>1652</sup> "Weymouth Girls' School: A study of what is, with a view to what might be" Nicola Atwool, 1977, Weymouth Reports, page 80. For more information about the use of secure as a punishment for absconding, see Secure Care section.

<sup>1653</sup> Annual Report 1982, Weymouth Reports F5000006020996.

<sup>1654</sup> Annual Report 1983, Weymouth Reports F5000006020997.

<sup>1655</sup> M P Doolan, Director Residential Services to Director General, 4/11/85, Weymouth Admissions F5000002186501, Appendix E.

increase in abscondings was due the higher numbers of residents that were on remand, and the liberal treatment previous absconders had been given.<sup>1656</sup>

In 1985 the Visiting Committee reported that Police had been concerned about boys' absconding from Weymouth. The Department responded that actual incidents of absconding were low and not considered to be a problem.<sup>1657</sup>

There were 21 absconding incidents in 1988, 66 in 1989 and 82 in 1990.<sup>1658</sup>

Between March 1993 and February 1994 there were 83 abscondings from Weymouth. All abscondings were reported to the Police "as a matter of practice and policy".<sup>1659</sup>

Eighteen percent of total admissions absconded in 1991; compared to 12% in 1992 and 1993; and 11% in 1994.<sup>1660</sup> In 1994, the Northern Residential Centre hired two security guards "in an attempt to reduce the number of escapes."<sup>1661</sup>

## Secure care

In 1973 a newspaper article made reference to the fact that all admissions were via secure. The Principal was quoted as saying of the residents "they are not hard in themselves, but they will need a spell in the cells. Staff will have to work them out of there."<sup>1662</sup> In 1977 all girls spent approximately two weeks in medium secure upon admission as a general orientation to Weymouth.<sup>1663</sup>

The Assistant Director of Residential Services stated in 1974 that a resident would be placed into secure care when necessary to protect the safety of the girl herself or the physical safety of other residents or members of staff, and that the continuing sole object was to return the girl to the group as soon as possible. He also stated that confinement was not used without good reason or planning made for discharge.<sup>1664</sup>

In the maximum secure unit in 1977, two staff members had to be present when a cell was opened and residents were only allowed out of their cells one at a time. They were given exercise at least once every day. Meals were delivered to residents in their cells. Residents in medium secure care were locked in the unit during the day but not confined to their individual rooms. They were however, locked

<sup>1656</sup> Annual Report 1984, Weymouth Reports F5000006020997.

<sup>1657</sup> Visiting Committee Annual Reports 1986, Weymouth Profile F5000006661405.

<sup>1658</sup> Question for Written Answer from George Hawkins (Manurewa) to Hon. Jenny Shipley (Minister of Social Welfare) Supplementary Information, 1/4/92, Weymouth Incidents F5000005627876

<sup>1659</sup> April Eruiti, Branch Manager to George Hawkins, Member of Parliament, Official Information Act 1982 request, 4/3/94, Weymouth Incidents F5000004081323.

<sup>1660</sup> P H Campbell, Transition Manager to Area Manager Auckland Youth Justice, 18/11/94, Weymouth Incidents F5000004081323.

<sup>1661</sup> 'Security Guards on Patrol' author unknown, *Manukau Courier*, 22/11/94, Weymouth Profile, F5000004081323.

<sup>1662</sup> 'Principal risks a 70-girl migraine', Sheldon Brown, newspaper unknown, 8/10/73, Weymouth Profile 33551.

<sup>1663</sup> "Weymouth Girls' School: A study of what is, with a view to what might be" Nicola Atwool, 1977, Weymouth Reports, p 39.

<sup>1664</sup> Assistant Director Residential Services to I Macdonald, *New Zealand Herald*, 27/8/74 Weymouth Reports 33551.

in their cells at night time. The routine in medium secure during the day was similar to that in the open hostels.<sup>1665</sup>

The Masters student commented in 1977 that staff/resident conflict usually resulted in the resident being admitted to secure. She stated "the solution is seen in terms of the girl learning to control such outbursts rather than in the examination of the circumstances surrounding the incidents."<sup>1666</sup>

In 1977 a report stated that girls were frequently being admitted to secure for 'puerile' reasons, one example given was wearing jeans under a dressing gown.<sup>1667</sup> At this time medium and maximum secure cells were being used for disciplinary purposes. Maximum secure was used for serious offences such as physical assault of a resident or staff member. For the four years after Weymouth opened three weeks confinement in maximum secure was the "unavoidable consequence" of absconding. After September 1977 an incentive system was introduced so that with good behaviour girls could be released back into an open unit before the three weeks was up.<sup>1668</sup>

In 1980 staff commented that they would not lock girls up for more than a few days at a time.<sup>1669</sup>

Following the Johnston report, in 1982 the Principal of Weymouth was reminded that unless there were substantial reasons why secure admission was necessary, residents were to be admitted directly to the open house.<sup>1670</sup> A clearly demonstrated risk of absconding and serious offending was considered reason to admit a resident through secure.<sup>1671</sup>

In 1983 the Secure Senior noted that having acknowledged and applied the Human Rights/Johnston report where necessary and that with "the growth and development of better standards, knowledge and experience" secure care had been updated constantly towards quality and effectiveness.<sup>1672</sup>

In 1983 there was a form which staff had to complete before placing residents in secure. Staff were required to set out the reasons why the resident was being admitted and the problems being presented; the recommended treatment programme or suggested tasks for the resident; the suggested length of stay; and how often and when the secure placement should be reviewed. The form needed to be signed by the Residential Social Worker, the Senior Counsellor and the Principal.<sup>1673</sup>

In 1983 the secure care programme was divided over three areas: Special Needs/Intensive Care in Hostel 4; remand; and maximum secure. Relief workers

<sup>1665</sup> "Weymouth Girls' School: A study of what is, with a view to what might be" Nicola Atwool, 1977, Weymouth Reports, p 41.

<sup>1666</sup> "Weymouth Girls' School: A study of what is, with a view to what might be" Nicola Atwool, 1977, Weymouth Reports, page 80. For more information on the use of the secure facility see Secure Care section.

<sup>1667</sup> Handwritten report on Home Leave at National Institutions to Mr Ball, author unknown, 31/10/77, Weymouth Profile 33551.

<sup>1668</sup> "Weymouth Girls' School: A study of what is, with a view to what might be" Nicola Atwool, 1977, Weymouth Reports, p 42.

<sup>1669</sup> Notes from visit to Weymouth, N G Stevens, 4-7/8/1980, Weymouth Profile 33551.

<sup>1670</sup> B M Manchester for Director General to Principal Weymouth, 26/11/82, Weymouth Reports F5000006041345.

<sup>1671</sup> Weymouth Development Plan, 1980s, Weymouth Reports F5000006041345.

<sup>1672</sup> Annual Report 1983, Weymouth Reports F5000006020997.

<sup>1673</sup> Examples of such completed forms can be found in file F5000002389201.



were used to attempt to maintain staff levels of four per shift, which was considered ideal but not always possible.<sup>1674</sup>

Hostel 4 offered intensive, skilled social work for the girls. Numbers were restricted to five girls at any one time although the unit had eight beds. There was a fully equipped classroom in Hostel 4. High priority was given at this point to obtaining 'bright cheery' carpeting and dressing tables for the bedrooms to eliminate the 'normal dreariness of a secure area'.<sup>1675</sup>

Maximum secure was for shorter stays in secure care. Residents usually stayed in this area for periods of three days or less, and in many instances it was used for a period of only one or two hours. In this area "emphasis was placed on minimal containment in rooms and maximum time allocated to programmes/counselling, case worker visits in the recreational room or in the large lawned courtyard".<sup>1676</sup> In 1983 it was noted that there was a decline in the number of admissions to this area.<sup>1677</sup>

There was also a Remand area taking the overflow from nearby Homes.<sup>1678</sup>

In 1983 when Weymouth first began to accept boys on remand, there was some confusion as to whether they needed to be contained in secure custody. Some boys were spending periods of two weeks or more in secure. The Assistant Principal noted that some of their offences warranted such close confinement but remarked that Weymouth was not "filling the role of the prisons".<sup>1679</sup> The Principal commented that the length of time remand boys were to spend in Weymouth required urgent attention due to the "restriction of movement" they were forced to impose.<sup>1680</sup>

In 1984 the Director Regional Residential Services commented that when residents were placed in secure it was for a "relatively brief" period it gave them opportunity to have time to themselves, to catch up on sleep and to become more settled. He also remarked that placing girls in secure "allows staff many times to discuss matters quietly and without distraction."<sup>1681</sup>

Maximum secure was closed in 1984 following the suicide of a resident who had been placed in secure after returning from absconding.<sup>1682</sup> B M Manchester for the Director General commented in 1985 that the secure facility was unsuitable and in need of refurbishment but that the Hostel 4 programme would "suffer considerably" if it remained the only secure facility in use.<sup>1683</sup>

Following the suicide the Director General commented that the Weymouth practice of always readmitting absconding girls through secure was being re-examined.<sup>1684</sup>

<sup>1674</sup> Annual Report 1983, Weymouth Reports F5000006020997.

<sup>1675</sup> Annual Report 1983, Weymouth Reports F5000006020997.

<sup>1676</sup> Annual Report 1983, Weymouth Reports F5000006020997.

<sup>1677</sup> Annual Report 1983, Weymouth Reports F5000006020997.

<sup>1678</sup> Annual Report 1983, Weymouth Reports F5000006020997.

<sup>1679</sup> R R Thomas Assistant Principal Temporary Weymouth Remand Unit to J H Wood Principal, 13/12/83, Weymouth Profile F5000002389201.

<sup>1680</sup> J H Wood Principal to Director Residential Services 12/12/83 on R R Thomas Assistant Principal Temporary Weymouth Remand Unit to J H Wood Principal, 13/12/83, Weymouth Profile F5000002389201.

<sup>1681</sup> G T Comber Director Regional Residential Services to Director General, 24/8/84, Weymouth Secure, F5000002389201.

<sup>1682</sup> Annual Report 1984, Weymouth Reports F5000006020997.

<sup>1683</sup> B M Manchester to Regional Director, 25/3/85, Weymouth Complaints F5000006020997.

<sup>1684</sup> Report to the Minister of Social Welfare, 13/12/84, Weymouth Incidents F5000006041345.

The practice was contrary to department policy.<sup>1685</sup> In staff member statements about the suicide a Weymouth employee had commented that it was "normal for an absconder to be taken to the cell area when first brought in."<sup>1686</sup> However, Weymouth management responded that they had never practised a "policy of automatically admitting returned absconders to close custody. The longstanding practice has been to assess each case individually and placement will be made in the open house if circumstances permit."<sup>1687</sup>

Later in 1984 the Principal noted that there were another two serious suicide attempts by residents in secure that year which were avoided through 'staff vigilance'.<sup>1688</sup>

In 1985 it was stated in a Hostel 4 meeting that it "was not and is not policy to admit every absconder to close custody." Each instance was to be assessed individually.<sup>1689</sup>

In 1985 the bedroom doors in secure were to remain unlocked during the day until the night staff came on duty.<sup>1690</sup>

In 1985 the secure facility was used for residents showing disturbed behaviour in need of assessment and treatment; for those showing excessive aggression in need of control for their own safety and the safety of others and property; for those whom the court directed to be held in a secure setting; and for those who it was considered would be at risk if they absconded.<sup>1691</sup>

In 1990 the Director of the Northern Residential Centre stated that residents would only be held in secure custody when there were legal grounds to place them there; when the placement was in the accordance with the Residential Care regulations; and when all necessary approvals had been obtained.<sup>1692</sup> The approval of a District Court Judge was required before a resident could be placed in secure care, and needed to be updated every 14 days. Following the Children Young Persons and Their Families Act 1989, Judges visited Weymouth and conducted hearings in the secure unit, reducing security risks.<sup>1693</sup>

In 1990 an internal auditor commented that Weymouth staff were possibly failing to comply with Regulations by confining residents in secure in their rooms and that staff needed 'clear direction from management and training in the practise issues arising from Regulations pertaining to secure Care'.<sup>1694</sup>

<sup>1685</sup> B M Manchester for Director General to Regional Director, 16/11/1984, Weymouth Reports F5000006020995.

<sup>1686</sup> Statement made by O I Stevenson, 10/8/94, Weymouth Incidents F5000006041345/

<sup>1687</sup> R J Wilson Regional Director to Director General, 26/3/1985 F5000006020995.

<sup>1688</sup> Annual Report 1984, Weymouth Reports F5000006020997.

<sup>1689</sup> Minutes of Hostel 4 Meeting, 11/2/85, Weymouth Profile F5000006020997.

<sup>1690</sup> Minutes of Hostel 4 Meeting, 11/2/85, Weymouth Profile F5000006020997.

<sup>1691</sup> Interim Report on the Development Facilities and Programmes at Weymouth, 1985, Weymouth Reports F5000006020997.

<sup>1692</sup> April Eruliti, Director to Directors of Social Welfare (all districts) 24/7/1990, Weymouth Profile F5000002388234.

<sup>1693</sup> G McKinstry, Regional Solicitor to Manager, Planning Department Manukau City Council, 5/11/90, Weymouth Profile F5000002388234.

<sup>1694</sup> Audit Report 1990, Weymouth Reports F500000602099.

## Physical layout of secure

In 1973 a newspaper article described the Weymouth secure cells as "grim" with just the bare essentials – toilet, washbasin, bed, and steel table with attached chair. The article states there were vents on the windows 'not big enough to get a razor blade through' and notes the glass was 'armour plated'. There was an alarm system monitoring the cells, and a heavy locked door which lead to a courtyard surrounded by a 12-foot high block wall.<sup>1695</sup>

In 1974 Principal Marek Powierza noted the construction of the building left it open to "abuse in the area of control supervision, privacy and security." Five young people had absconded from medium secure after kicking through doors, and armoured glass in the maximum secure block had been removed and smashed. He also remarked that as the heating pipes were exposed there was a danger of residents committing suicide.<sup>1696</sup>

In 1977 the secure unit had 19 beds. Eleven beds were 'maximum security cells' and eight beds were in six 'medium secure cells' (four single and two double).<sup>1697</sup>

In 1984 the Director of Regional Residential Services remarked that the secure rooms were basic and did not "present attractively" and that it was a priority to make the cells more appealing.<sup>1698</sup> He expected that boys remand, girls remand, and girls extended care programmes would share the same 19 bed secure facilities.<sup>1699</sup>

The Regional Director commented in 1985 that the secure facility was in urgent need of upgrading.<sup>1700</sup>

In 1990 an auditor of Weymouth noted that exposed water pipes and exposed power point covers were a potential risk to residents. He also noted that there was a lack of security in the Secure Care admission area and that an upgrade of secure would begin soon.<sup>1701</sup> In November 1990 alterations were made to the secure care facility in an attempt to make it more secure. These included "replacement of window glass with polycarbonate panes, restricting access to windows and further internal doors."<sup>1702</sup>

## Programmes and education in secure

The Senior Counsellor for Weymouth provided counselling and individual or group therapy for girls in Hostel 4 in 1983.<sup>1703</sup> Although Hostel 4 contained a classroom, it was only allocated 6½ hours of teaching time per week. It was expected that in

<sup>1695</sup> 'Principal risks a 70-girl migraine', Sheldon Brown, newspaper unknown, 8/10/73, Weymouth Profile 33551.

<sup>1696</sup> M Powierza Principal to Director General, 25/2/74, Weymouth Secure 33551.

<sup>1697</sup> "Weymouth Girls' School: A study of what is, with a view to what might be" Nicola Atwool, 1977, Weymouth Reports, p 34.

<sup>1698</sup> G T Comber, Director Regional Residential Services to Director General, 24/8/84, Weymouth Secure F5000002389201.

<sup>1699</sup> M P Doolan for Director General to Director-General Department of Education, 18/12/1984, Weymouth Profile F500006041345.

<sup>1700</sup> Interim Report on the Development Facilities and Programmes at Weymouth, 1985, Weymouth Reports F5000006020997.

<sup>1701</sup> Audit Report 1990, Weymouth Reports F500000602099.

<sup>1702</sup> G McKinstry, Regional Solicitor to Manager, Planning Department Manukau City Council, 5/11/90, Weymouth Profile F5000002388234.

<sup>1703</sup> Annual Report 1983, Weymouth Reports F5000006020997.

1984 an Occupational Therapist would be appointed and 'compliment and enhance' the education that was already available.<sup>1704</sup>

In 1985 schooling for residents in Hostel 4 was assessed on merit. If an extended care girl enrolled in the school was in Hostel 4 and was considered a risk Hostel 4 staff were to organise a programme for her.<sup>1705</sup>

In 1990 residents in secure care were denied access to the gymnasium facilities at times as there was a lack of adequate security.<sup>1706</sup> Secure residents also had 'Individual Care Programmes' available to them for three hours each day which were provided by school resources and supported by Residential Social Workers.<sup>1707</sup> They were provided with "educational, occupational, cultural and recreational facilities".<sup>1708</sup>

## Length of stay

No information about length of stay in secure before 1979 was found on file.

Following the Johnston report in 1982 the Principal was required to implement a system of review for all residents held in secure for longer than 72 hours. The actual report had recommended reviews after 48 hours. Reviews were to be conducted regularly and if it was considered necessary for a resident to be held in secure care for a period exceeding 14 days Weymouth staff were to notify the office of the Director-General no later than the 14<sup>th</sup> day.<sup>1709</sup>

Between 1979 and 1983 admission to secure ranged between 243 (in 1982) and 394 (1979). The average length of stay was between 2.2 days (in 1982) and 4.1 days (in 1980). These statistics did not include admissions to Hostel 4 but did include overflow residents from Owairaka and Bollard.<sup>1710</sup>

There was some concern in 1984 about a number of girls who were in secure care for an extended period of time.<sup>1711</sup> The Principal, J H Wood, remarked that periodically they sought approval to place girls in secure for "lengthy periods". He commented that these were usually girls who had been through the Hostel 4 programme and failed upon trial discharge. Initially girls were placed on bedrest and medical needs were met, then girls were given "the opportunity to catch up on lost sleep, gain strength with regular meals plus medication." The Principal commented that each girl's situation was monitored daily.<sup>1712</sup>

In 1989 the special needs area of the secure unit was used to accommodate a 14 year old boy who was considered a risk to himself and to others if placed in an open unit. It was considered that his needs could best be met by extended care in this unit

<sup>1704</sup> Annual Report 1983, Weymouth Reports F5000006020997.

<sup>1705</sup> Minutes of Hostel 4 Meeting, 11/2/85, Weymouth Profile F5000006020997.

<sup>1706</sup> Audit Report 1990, Weymouth Reports F500000602099.

<sup>1707</sup> Audit Report 1990, Weymouth Reports F500000602099.

<sup>1708</sup> G McKinstry, Regional Solicitor to Manager, Planning Department Manukau City Council, 5/11/90, Weymouth Profile F5000002388234.

<sup>1709</sup> B M Manchester for Director General to Principal Weymouth, 26/11/82, Weymouth Reports F5000006041345.

<sup>1710</sup> Secure use statistics, source unknown. Weymouth Secure F5000002186500.

<sup>1711</sup> M P Simmonds for Principal to Director Regional Residential Services, 12/7/84, Weymouth Secure F5000002389201.

<sup>1712</sup> J H Wood Principal to Regional Director, 2/8/84, Weymouth Secure F5000002389201.

and that it would be inappropriate to move him "as an academic exercise, from a position of sanctuary to a position of high vulnerability 'to see if he will do better'."<sup>1713</sup>

In 1990 residents could be placed in secure for three days with approval, which could then be extended for up to 14 days.<sup>1714</sup>

## Discipline

In 1974 a journalist from the New Zealand Herald asked for comment from the Assistant Director of Residential Services about an allegation that the discipline in Weymouth was too rigid, and that naughtiness rather than being viewed as a 'cry for help' instead demanded a child be punished, making it impossible to try any therapeutic work.<sup>1715</sup> The Assistant Director responded that of course punishment occurred, but that staff also attempted therapeutic work during or after a crisis and that a counsellor was employed to work with children in distress. He also pointed out that Weymouth used a behaviour modification system based on altering deviant behaviour by giving positive reinforcement for good behaviour.<sup>1716</sup>

In 1977 the discipline system was interwoven with the 'token economy' system. Girls could be placed 'off privileges' for a certain amount of points, and no points were added to their total until they had earned that number of points. Once a girl reached 100 points 'off privileges' she was sent to secure. Points could only be deducted from residents' totals if they were caught loaning and borrowing clothes from each other, or if they were caught smoking when underage or supplying cigarettes to under-age residents.<sup>1717</sup>

Other forms of discipline used in 1977 included the use of time out, demotion, and the use of maximum and medium secure cells. Demotion involved girls being placed back into a unit that offered fewer privileges than that they had previously been in, such as from Hostel 2 back to Hostel 1. The Masters student commented that discipline at Weymouth was rarely consistent.<sup>1718</sup>

In 1977 it was stated that as "Assistant House-Mistresses are unsure of their role they rely heavily on the rule book for guidance. As a result they deal with the girls in terms of rules and prescribed punishment. Girls resent this approach as yet another example of heavy-handed authority preventing them from doing what they want to do."<sup>1719</sup>

Each of the units contained a time-out room which was a small empty room located opposite the duty room. Girls were "confined to this room for a set period of time,

<sup>1713</sup> P W Monk, Residential Social Worker to Assistant Director Arohanui/Awhina Units, 16/1/89, Weymouth Secure F5000002381847.

<sup>1714</sup> M F Lockwood, Senior Residential Social Worker to Director Weymouth Residential Centre, 21/11/90, Weymouth Secure F5000002388234.

<sup>1715</sup> I Macdonald, New Zealand Herald to Assistant Director Residential Services, 12/8/74, Weymouth Reports 33551.

<sup>1716</sup> Assistant Director Residential Services to I Macdonald, New Zealand Herald, 27/8/74 Weymouth Reports 33551.

<sup>1717</sup> "Weymouth Girls' School: A study of what is, with a view to what might be" Nicola Atwool, 1977, Weymouth Reports, p 41.

<sup>1718</sup> "Weymouth Girls' School: A study of what is, with a view to what might be" Nicola Atwool, 1977, Weymouth Reports, p 42.

<sup>1719</sup> "Weymouth Girls' School: A study of what is, with a view to what might be" Nicola Atwool, 1977, Weymouth Reports, page 72.

usually between twenty minutes and half an hour, to give her time to cool off'. The Masters student noted that girls in time out were not locked in and were permitted to leave the door open, but were not allowed to communicate with other residents.<sup>1720</sup> In 1985 residents who required a time out period of longer than what was deemed appropriate to stay in one of these rooms would be placed in secure.<sup>1721</sup>

Following the Johnston report, Weymouth staff were reminded in 1982 that all disciplinary activity was to be fully recorded.<sup>1722</sup>

In 1982 the Code of Practice stated that "restrictive disciplinary measures should be used only in extreme instances to protect an individual from causing harm to him or herself or to others." Time out facilities were to be used to address "confrontation". Physical restraint or punishment procedures were only to be used when absolutely necessary. The Code of Practice stated that "all staff are clear as to when such measures may be used, and records are kept of the use of these measures." Staff were to try to be consistent as to what was acceptable behaviour.<sup>1723</sup>

In 1988 Weymouth staff were informed that a child or young person could only be locked in a room in a secure designated area. An audit report also commented that there needed to be set policy and staff training about the use of time out having discovered that there was 'inconsistent use and understanding of time out, also one unit locks the time out door'.<sup>1724</sup>

In 1990 Weymouth was not operating a punishment book. After an internal audit brought this to light, management instead decided to establish a 'Consequence Book'.<sup>1725</sup>

## Physical punishment

There is no information on file about the use of physical punishment at Weymouth.

## Drugs, alcohol, and tattoos

At a Principal's Conference in 1980 it was reported that a local General Practitioner had been able to arrange an increased number of tattoo removals.<sup>1726</sup>

In 1985 as Weymouth prepared to take boys on remand it was noted by the Regional Director that the increasing frequency of solvent abuse by boys under the age of 14 required sufficiently flexible programmes to cater for those needs.<sup>1727</sup>

<sup>1720</sup> Weymouth Girls' School: A study of what is, with a view to what might be" Nicola Atwool, 1977, Weymouth Reports, page 42.

<sup>1721</sup> Interim Report on the Development Facilities and Programmes at Weymouth, 1985, Weymouth Reports F5000006020997.

<sup>1722</sup> B M Manchester for Director General to Principal Weymouth, 26/11/82, Weymouth Reports F5000006041345.

<sup>1723</sup> Code of Practice for Weymouth Girls School, prepared by Weymouth Staff, 1982, Weymouth Profile F5000006020996.

<sup>1724</sup> Institution Internal Audit Report 1988, Weymouth Reports F5000006020999.

<sup>1725</sup> Audit Report 1990, Weymouth Reports F500000602099.

<sup>1726</sup> Extract from Principals Conference, 1980, Weymouth Health 33551.

There is no additional information on file about the use of drugs, alcohol or tattoos.

## Smoking

In 1975 the Principal of Weymouth sought a legal opinion regarding underage smoking. He stated that Weymouth "stuck to the letter of the law" and had not let those less than 15 years old smoke, but that underage residents were often caught smoking and having penalties imposed. He commented "it would certainly be easier and less frustrating to allow the younger girls to smoke."<sup>1728</sup> The response from the Director General was that although underage smoking was difficult to detect and prevent, the law should still be complied with. He recommended "a positive effort should be made to discourage smoking at all ages on health grounds and it is this positive aspect which should be emphasised rather than the negative approach of detection and punishment of offenders."<sup>1729</sup> The Assistant Principal was of the opinion that provided the underage resident did not purchase the cigarettes or smoke them in a public place the law was not infringed.<sup>1730</sup>

In 1977 only residents over 15 were allowed to smoke, and underage residents caught smoking were disciplined. Smoking was not allowed in the bedroom wings of any of the units. Hostel 1 staff kept their residents' cigarettes in the office and girls in this unit were only allowed to smoke when supervised. In the other units girls were allowed to carry their own cigarettes. All residents were restricted to two packets of cigarettes per week.<sup>1731</sup> Some staff members believed that all girls should be allowed to smoke in order to create opportunities for constructive discussion about the "advisability" of smoking.<sup>1732</sup>

## Contact with field social workers

In the 1970s Weymouth staff noted the lack of district social workers visiting and building constructive relationships with the residents. They also remarked that there was a lack of planning for admission, contact and future plans for child by field social workers.<sup>1733</sup>

In 1977 the Principal stated that one of the benefits of the location of the Residence was increased contact between residents and Social Workers.<sup>1734</sup>

In 1982 case workers were responsible for maintaining continued contact between residents and their home district field social worker.<sup>1735</sup>

<sup>1727</sup> Interim Report on the Development Facilities and Programmes at Weymouth, 1985, Weymouth Reports F5000006020997.

<sup>1728</sup> M Powierza Principal to Director General, 19/11/75, Weymouth Drugs and Smoking 33551.

<sup>1729</sup> R J Wilson for Director General to Principal, 5/12/75, Weymouth Drugs and Smoking 33551.

<sup>1730</sup> Assistant Principal to Principal, 11/12/75, Weymouth Drugs and Smoking 33551.

<sup>1731</sup> Weymouth Girls' School: A study of what is, with a view to what might be" Nicola Atwood, 1977, Weymouth Reports, page 41.

<sup>1732</sup> "Weymouth Girls' School: A study of what is, with a view to what might be" Nicola Atwood, 1977, Weymouth Reports, p 71.

<sup>1733</sup> Questionnaire sent to National Institutions, date unknown circa 1970s, Weymouth Reports 33551.

<sup>1734</sup> Marek Powierza, Principal, to Director General, 15/21/77, Weymouth Profile 33551.

<sup>1735</sup> Code of Practice for Weymouth Girls School, prepared by Weymouth Staff, 1982, Weymouth Profile F5000006020996.

## Contact with community

In the 1970s residents had contact with local churches as they requested it, and church groups also visited the Home. Some girls attended school outside the Home, and there were visits to Weymouth from local and regional high schools. Contact and involvement with the community was welcomed as opportunities arose. Weymouth had teams in local basketball, netball and softball competitions.<sup>1736</sup>

In 1982 and 1983 various organisations used Weymouth facilities such as the gymnasium, swimming pool, tack shed, indoor archery and staff lounge.<sup>1737</sup>

██████████ visited regularly in 1982 and gave all girls being discharged the opportunity for a meal at their home.<sup>1738</sup> They continued to do so in 1983.<sup>1739</sup>

The Senior Residential Social Worker proposed in 1984 that the district social workers of the girls in House 9 identify an "individual from her own community who will develop a supportive relationship with the girl and provide a tangible link between the institution and the home, family, or other placement, but there is nothing on file to confirm this was done."<sup>1740</sup>

In 1985 the Regional Director commented that the Weymouth programmes consistently invited continuing involvement and interest on the part of social workers and significant family members.<sup>1741</sup>

In 1990 the new Weymouth Residential Centre attempted to "mainstream" its residents with local schools but this was not satisfactorily resolved.<sup>1742</sup>

## Visiting committees

In 1983 the Visiting Committee visited twice in the third term and the Chairman spoke with the Principal on several occasions. The Principal noted they were particularly interested in the rehabilitation aspects of Weymouth.<sup>1743</sup>

The visits continued in 1984 but slowed down in last term, although the Principal had periodic contact with the Chairperson.<sup>1744</sup> The Director General responded that a meeting with the Visiting Committee should be arranged "to determine their present

<sup>1736</sup> Questionnaire sent to National Institutions, date unknown circa 1970s, Weymouth Reports 33551.

<sup>1737</sup> Annual Report 1982, Weymouth Reports, F5000006020996; and Annual Report 1983, Weymouth Reports F5000006020997.

<sup>1738</sup> Annual Report 1982, Weymouth Reports F5000006020996.

<sup>1739</sup> Annual Report 1983, Weymouth Reports F5000006020997.

<sup>1740</sup> K K Lindsay, Senior Residential Social Worker to J H Wood, Principal, 8/10/84, Weymouth Education F5000006020995.

<sup>1741</sup> Interim Report on the Development Facilities and Programmes at Weymouth, 1985, Weymouth Reports F5000006020997.

<sup>1742</sup> Audit Report 1990, Weymouth Reports F500000602099.

<sup>1743</sup> Annual Report 1983, Weymouth Reports F5000006020997

<sup>1744</sup> Annual Report 1984, Weymouth Reports F5000006020997.



capacity to fulfil their function" noting that their "monitoring function" was necessary especially in light of the changes occurring at Weymouth.<sup>1745</sup>

The 1986 Visiting Committee noted the local community had been concerned about the mixed genders at Weymouth, and that Police had been concerned about boys absconding. The Committee found it difficult to arrange meetings this year due to the location of the Residence and the "geographical spread" of the committee members.<sup>1746</sup>

The Minister of Social Welfare, Hon Michael Cullen wrote to the Visiting Committee after they did not provide him with an Annual Report for 1987.<sup>1747</sup>

## Contact with families

In 1974 Weymouth management were informed that previous rules which had prevented girls from being granted home leave if they had been in the residence less than four months or if they had seriously offended in the last six months, were abolished.<sup>1748</sup> It is not clear from the records if this was an error as in 1977 after an audit of selected Weymouth files the comments were made that "unless there are exceptional circumstances no trainee should be granted home leave earlier than one full term following admission".<sup>1749</sup>

In 1977 the comment was made that management were granting too much home leave, in particular for weekend trips home, and that Weymouth seemed to have its own home leave policy.<sup>1750</sup> The Principal responded that they followed the Social Workers and Residential Manuals when granting home leave and that weekend trips were a separate matter. Where possible Weymouth organised four- or six-weekly trips home, and weekly trips were attempted as residents neared discharge. He commented that "home contact should be part and parcel of the rehabilitative process"<sup>1751</sup> and that one of the benefits of the location of the home was the increased contact between children and families.<sup>1752</sup>

The Principal noted in 1977 that the Social Work Manuals were not amended after the implementation of the Children and Young Persons Act 1974. He remarked that there had been some very effective work done in re-establishing residents back into their family units that would have been impossible if he had adhered to the instructions in the manual.<sup>1753</sup>

Weymouth staff encouraged mail from girlfriends and boyfriends, social workers and relatives. Incoming and outgoing mail was censored and residents were aware of the censorship. Parcels from home containing "anything reasonable" were permitted.

<sup>1745</sup> B M Manchester to Regional Director, 25/3/85, Weymouth Complaints F5000006020997.

<sup>1746</sup> Visiting Committee Annual Reports 1986, Weymouth Profile F5000006661405.

<sup>1747</sup> Visiting Committee Annual Reports 1986, Weymouth Profile F5000006661405.

<sup>1748</sup> Circular Memorandum 1974/1, author unknown, 1974, Weymouth Reports 33551.

<sup>1749</sup> Handwritten report on Home Leave at National Institutions to Mr Ball, author unknown, 31/10/77, Weymouth Profile 33551.

<sup>1750</sup> Handwritten report on Home Leave at National Institutions to Mr Ball, author unknown, 31/10/77, Weymouth Profile 33551.

<sup>1751</sup> This was reportedly in line with s4(b) Children and Young Persons Act 1974 which required staff to "conserve or promote as far as may be possible a satisfactory relationship between the child or young person and other persons (whether within his family, his domestic environment of the community at large)."

<sup>1752</sup> Marek Powierza, Principal, to Director General, 15/12/77, Weymouth Profile 33551.

<sup>1753</sup> Marek Powierza, Principal, to Director General, 15/12/77, Weymouth Profile 33551.

Residents' parents were able to visit Weymouth and could be met at the airport/train station and provided with overnight accommodation.<sup>1754</sup>

In 1982 case workers were responsible for maintaining continued contact between their allocated residents and their parents and relatives. Family visits were "encouraged and fostered by staff" and staff were to "recognise the rights and interests of parents, next-of-kin, and legal guardians in the planning procedures and, where appropriate, encourage their participation even though separation may make this difficult."<sup>1755</sup>

In 1983 written correspondence between residents and their families was encouraged. Girls were also able to make and receive phone calls from their families. If a girl's family lived close enough to Weymouth, day trips or weekend visits home were allowed occasionally.<sup>1756</sup> The Principal noted that district social workers were responsible for planning frequent contact between residents and their families, and weekend and holiday leave was encouraged with school holidays spent at home or in the home district when possible.<sup>1757</sup> Families were also expected to contribute boarding fees to Weymouth at an amount established after a financial assessment by the field social worker.<sup>1758</sup>

In 1990 the Director of the Northern Residential Centre commented that "contact with family/whanau and the development of interests within the community is to be encouraged through structured programmes."<sup>1759</sup> Family and friends of residents were encouraged to visit, and the Northern Residential Centre was used for Family Group Conferences.<sup>1760</sup>

## Preparation for discharge and after care arrangements

In the 1970s Weymouth staff noted there was poor liaison with field social workers when home leave or discharge was being prepared, and after discharge occurred.<sup>1761</sup>

In 1983 discharge programmes were set up through casework needs by residential and field social workers. Weymouth offered a work skills experience and a flatting situation in House 9 to support residents through the discharge process.<sup>1762</sup>

<sup>1754</sup> Questionnaire sent to National Institutions, date unknown circa 1970s, Weymouth Reports 33551.

<sup>1755</sup> Code of Practice for Weymouth Girls School, prepared by Weymouth Staff, 1982, Weymouth Profile F5000006020996.

<sup>1756</sup> Circular Memorandum 1982/22, 15/2/82, Weymouth Education F5000006021240.

<sup>1757</sup> J H Wood, Principal to Director Residential Services, 22/11/83, Weymouth Education F5000006020996.

<sup>1758</sup> J H Wood, Principal to Director Residential Services, 22/11/83, Weymouth Education F5000006020996.

<sup>1759</sup> April Erutti, Director to Directors of Social Welfare (all districts) 24/7/1990, Weymouth Profile F5000002388234.

<sup>1760</sup> G McKinstry, Regional Solicitor to Manager, Planning Department Manukau City Council, 5/11/90, Weymouth Profile F5000002388234.

<sup>1761</sup> Questionnaire sent to National Institutions, date unknown circa 1970s, Weymouth Reports 33551.

<sup>1762</sup> Annual Report 1983, Weymouth Reports F5000006020997. For more information regarding the House 9 programme, see Programmes and Care section.

# Fareham House

The availability of statistics for Fareham House on matters such as admission, discharge, absconding, resident profile, and length of stay was inconsistent and limited. This was due partly to the fact that there were not Annual Reports from the Principal to Head Office on file for every year that Fareham was open, and only a limited number of Inspection Reports. As a result this profile is unable to provide a complete picture on some aspects of life at Fareham House.

## Physical description

Fareham was on the outskirts of Featherston and was purchased by the Child Welfare Division in 1944 and 1945. The original homestead was built prior to 1900 and the total land was over 28 acres.

By 1980 Fareham consisted of the main building, school, gymnasium, laundry block, swimming pool and five staff houses on campus plus another two in Featherston.<sup>1763</sup> In 1970 the old homestead included sleeping dormitories, a dining room, staff quarters, and an administration area.<sup>1764</sup>

When opened in 1944 Fareham could accommodate 24 girls. This remained consistent through to 1980 although it was noted in 1967 that a 25<sup>th</sup> girl was accommodated in the sick room and 25 girls were held both in 1969 and 1970. Changes to accommodation and configuration over time included a new dormitory of six beds built in 1950, two rooms being used for staff accommodation in 1975 and in 1977 a total of four dormitories each containing 5 or 6 beds.

There was no secure unit in 1964 but by 1969 there was a secure lockable room.<sup>1765</sup> A 1970 newspaper reported that close security was used for newly admitted girls and for short periods for highly disturbed or difficult children who were at risk of harming themselves, others or absconding.<sup>1766</sup> In 1979 a person who facilitated training at Fareham identified considerable physical work needed to be done to the time-out/secure facility.<sup>1767</sup>

Around 1969 the Principal proposed an additional classroom be constructed to cater for very difficult children.<sup>1768</sup> At that time there were two classrooms.<sup>1769</sup> In 1973 AQ

<sup>1763</sup> Background Paper Reviewing Residential Operations, Fareham House, NG Stevens, Senior Residential Advisory Officer, 28/10/80, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p1.

<sup>1764</sup> "Fareham House – Where Love and Care Thrive", *Wairarapa Times Age*, 18/09/70, Fareham Profile 2005035542.

<sup>1765</sup> Memo, CC Chibnall, Principal to Superintendent, 07/06/69, Fareham Profile 2006005603.

<sup>1766</sup> "Fareham House – Where Love and Care Thrive", *Wairarapa Times Age*, 18/09/70, Fareham Profile 2005035542.

<sup>1767</sup> Report on Staff Training Programme held at Fareham House 14/15/16 May 1979, JC Watson, Principal, Girls Home Palmerston North, 20/05/79, Fareham Staffing, p4.

<sup>1768</sup> Proposal, Fareham House Proposed Class Room, R Bell, Principal, Fareham Profile 200605603.

<sup>1769</sup> Proposal, Fareham House Proposed Class Room, R Bell, Principal, Fareham Profile 200605603.

Bruce, Inspector (Special Education), denied the request.<sup>1770</sup> In 1975 Mr Walsh, Inspector Supervising Special Education, did not consider a third classroom to be justified as a third teacher was not likely to be approved for a considerable time.<sup>1771</sup> In 1978 the Principal again recommended the erection of an additional classroom.<sup>1772</sup>

In 1970 the Principal believed that the dormitories should be divided into cubicles, and could not understand why the partitions that were once there were removed.<sup>1773</sup> He believed cubicles gave girls a sense of privacy and possession and that it facilitated control and supervision.<sup>1774</sup>

IG MacArthur, writing on behalf of the Superintendent, informed the Principal that the cubicles were removed for reasons including that supervision and control was more difficult, sharing of beds became a frequent occurrence and dormitories required individual bed lights.<sup>1775</sup>

In 1967 and 1970 the Principal complained about the inadequate staff accommodation and requested its improvement.<sup>1776</sup> In 1970 a prospective staff member turned down a position because of the accommodation offered at Fareham.<sup>1777</sup>

In 1974 a second teacher's house was completed, ready for occupation by the Assistant Principal.<sup>1778</sup> The Inspector noted that the four live in staff had no peace or privacy as their rooms were adjacent to the dormitories, with the Assistant Principal's room opposite the secure room.<sup>1779</sup>

In 1973 an Inspector commented that interior redecoration and furnishing had been done and the Principal, Mr Scahill insisted on girls treating Fareham with respect.<sup>1780</sup> In 1974 and 1977 Inspectors reported positively on Fareham's physical state.<sup>1781</sup> The 1977 Inspector described office accommodation for senior staff as poor, and there was concern about confidentiality as discussions from offices could be overheard.<sup>1782</sup> This problem affected visiting staff including the psychologist, who had to interview girls in the staff lounge, in full view of the school and play area.<sup>1783</sup> As well as this being distracting, there was a flow of interruptions and a lack of privacy.<sup>1784</sup>

<sup>1770</sup> Letter, AQ Bruce Inspector (Special Education) to Director General, 18/07/73, Fareham Profile, 2006005603.

<sup>1771</sup> Minute sheet, Additional Classrooms, AM Dench, 13/06/75, Fareham Profile 2006005604.

<sup>1772</sup> Memo, GA Dawber, Principal to Director General, 12/04/78, Fareham Profile 2006005604.

<sup>1773</sup> Memo, CC Chibnall, Principal to Superintendent, 19/02/70 Fareham Staffing 2006005603.

<sup>1774</sup> Memo, CC Chibnall, Principal to Superintendent, 19/02/70 Fareham Staffing 2006005603.

<sup>1775</sup> Memo, IG MacArthur for Superintendent to Principal, Fareham, 18/03/70, Fareham Staffing 2006005603.

<sup>1776</sup> Memo, CC Chibnall, Principal to Superintendent, 11/03/69, Fareham Staffing 2006005603, pp1-2.

<sup>1777</sup> Memo, CC Chibnall, Principal to Superintendent, 07/07/70, Fareham Staffing 2005005603.

<sup>1778</sup> Inspection Report, A Peek, 8-9 July 1974, Fareham Reports 200503558, p2.

<sup>1779</sup> Inspection Report, A Peek, 8-9 July 1974, Fareham Reports 200503558, p1-2.

<sup>1780</sup> Inspection Report, A Peek, 3-4 December 1973, Fareham Reports 200503558, p1.

<sup>1781</sup> Inspection Report, A Peek, 8-9 July 1974, Fareham Reports 200503558, p1; Inspection Report, JB Frost, A Peek, 9 June 1977, Fareham Reports, 200503558, p1.

<sup>1782</sup> Inspection Report, JB Frost, A Peek, 9 June 1977, Fareham Reports, 200503558, p1.

<sup>1783</sup> Minute Sheet, Re Inspection Report – Fareham, A Frazer to M T Ball, 22/07/77, Fareham Reports 200503558.

<sup>1784</sup> Minute Sheet, Re Inspection Report – Fareham, A Frazer to M T Ball, 22/07/77, Fareham Reports 200503558.

In 1978 the Principal recommended the erection of a specialised room to house a library and a woodwork shop.<sup>1785</sup> Principals made further requests for this room in 1979<sup>1786</sup> and 1980.<sup>1787</sup> In 1980 the Education Department were willing to finance the setting up of a library and a woodwork room if Social Welfare would provide the buildings.<sup>1788</sup>

In 1980 Inspectors noted that Fareham was physically run down and that the Institution was starting to show signs of destructiveness, which was not being repaired immediately – encouraging further destruction.<sup>1789</sup>

In 1980 a Senior Residential Advisory Officer who reviewed Fareham's residential operations raised many questions about the running of Fareham, including whether its continued usage was justified.<sup>1790</sup>

On 11 December 1980 the Minister of Social Welfare approved the closure of Fareham from early 1981.<sup>1791</sup> For some time the Director-General of Social Welfare had been considering a change in approach to the institution type child care programme and considered that the time was opportune to move in this direction.<sup>1792</sup> The Director-General considered that girls eligible to be admitted to Fareham could be better cared for in smaller residential facilities close to their home.<sup>1793</sup> Fareham was closed because of its isolated locality and lack of community acceptance; the lack of readily available professional support and difficulty in retaining suitable residential and teaching staff; the fact there had been eight different principals since 1964; the fact groupings of disturbed and difficult girls resulted in destructive episodes; the fact that removing girls between 12 and 14 from their local community was considered highly undesirable and made for difficulties for returning them to their home environment.<sup>1794</sup>

It was decided that there would be a gradual closing down process with the aim of final closure by the end of the first term 1981 (about 8 May).<sup>1795</sup> Staff were advised on 22 January 1981 and there were to be no more admissions from this date.<sup>1796</sup>

## Resident profile

Fareham opened in 1944 as an institution for difficult Maori Girls, free from venereal diseases, between 14 and 17<sup>1797</sup> who were delinquent and required training in

<sup>1785</sup> Memo, GA Dawber, Principal to Director General, 12/04/78, Fareham Profile 2006005604.

<sup>1786</sup> Memo, Lorraine Pervan, for Director General to Principal, 24/10/79, Fareham Profile 2006005604.

<sup>1787</sup> Memo, Director General to GA Dawber, Fareham Profile 2006005604.

<sup>1788</sup> Memo, Director General to GA Dawber, Fareham Profile 2006005604.

<sup>1789</sup> Report about Residential Inspectors Meeting 25 September 1980, Illegible, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p1.

<sup>1790</sup> Background Paper Reviewing Residential Operations, Fareham House, NG Stevens, Senior Residential Advisory Officer, 28/10/80, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p3.

<sup>1791</sup> Letter, JD Scott, for Director General to the Director-General of Education, Fareham Profile 2005035542.

<sup>1792</sup> Memo, SJ Callahan, Director-General to Minister of Social Welfare, 10/12/80, Fareham Profile 2005035542, p1.

<sup>1793</sup> Memo, SJ Callahan, Director-General to Minister of Social Welfare, 10/12/80, Fareham Profile 2005035542, p1.

<sup>1794</sup> Memo, SJ Callahan, Director-General to Minister of Social Welfare, 10/12/80, Fareham Profile 2005035542, p2.

<sup>1795</sup> Memo, SJ Callahan, Director-General to Minister of Social Welfare, 10/12/80, Fareham Profile 2005035542, p1.

<sup>1796</sup> Message, 22/01/81, Fareham Profile F5000000633723.

domestic work, crafts, gardening and small farming.<sup>1798</sup> In October 1963 Fareham began to provide for difficult primary school girls, not as previously for Maori girls only.<sup>1799</sup>

Between 1965 and the late 1980s the age of girls admitted to Fareham was between 10 and 15. The age range of girls admitted during this time varied from year to year, for example, in 1965<sup>1800</sup> and 1980<sup>1801</sup> Fareham received girls between 11 and 13, while in 1969 and 1973 girls up to 15 were admitted.<sup>1802</sup> In 1970 Fareham was the only Child Welfare Institution for girls between 10 and 14.<sup>1803</sup> In 1980 it was the only institution that catered for girls aged 11-13.<sup>1804</sup>

Girls who could benefit from a period of residential schooling but who were not seriously delinquent were thought to be the most suitable for admission in 1965.<sup>1805</sup>

The information available about the average of residents states that in 1976 when Frazer visited residents were in the 10 to 13 age range in the majority of cases, according to Frazer. In 1980 the average age of residents admitted was 13.<sup>1806</sup> The Principal believed this statistic was misleading as most were slow learners and were still in form two. Because of this the programme was altered to cater for their needs and staff found it difficult to cope with the sophisticated older girl.<sup>1807</sup>

The number in residence at the first of January each year increased from five in 1965 to 26 in 1969.<sup>1808</sup> This had decreased to 13 in 1973<sup>1809</sup> and 1974 (in the latter year all were classed as being disturbed).<sup>1810</sup> The number in residence in 1979 and 1980 averaged 18.<sup>1811</sup> In 1979 the nominal roll daily average was 15, and in 1980 it was 20.<sup>1812</sup> There was at one time in 1980 23 girls in residence.<sup>1813</sup>

The average number of admissions per year was approximately 14 for the period between 1965 and 1974.<sup>1814</sup> The number of admissions for each year ranged from

<sup>1797</sup> Memo, Illegible McClure, Superintendent to All District Child Welfare Officers and Managers of Institutions 07/08/44, Fareham Profile 200503554.

<sup>1798</sup> Background Paper Reviewing Residential Operations, Fareham House, NG Stevens, Senior Residential Advisory Officer, 28/10/80, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p1.

<sup>1799</sup> Circular Memo 1963/66, CE Peek, Superintendent to All DCWOs 18/10/63, Fareham Profile 500000633723.

<sup>1800</sup> Extract from Report of Minutes of Special H.O Staff Conference with DCWOs, 15/06/65, Fareham Admissions 2005035541.

<sup>1801</sup> Inspection Report, JA Blair, M Todd, 1-9 May 1980, Fareham Reports 2005035538, p7.

<sup>1802</sup> Memo, IJD MacKay, Director-General of Social Welfare to Minister of Social Welfare, 12/04/73, Fareham Profile 2005035542, p1.

<sup>1803</sup> "Fareham House – Where Love and Care Thrive", *Wairarapa Times Age*, 18/09/70, Fareham Profile 2005035542.

<sup>1804</sup> Background Paper Reviewing Residential Operations, Fareham House, NG Stevens, Senior Residential Advisory Officer, 28/10/80, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p3.

<sup>1805</sup> Circular Memorandum 1965/22, 17/03/65, Fareham Staff, F5000005774764.

<sup>1806</sup> Background Paper Reviewing Residential Operations, Fareham House, NG Stevens, Senior Residential Advisory Officer, 28/10/80, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p3.

<sup>1807</sup> Annual Report 1980, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p1.

<sup>1808</sup> Memo and table of statistics, R Bell, Principal to Superintendent, 13/11/1967, Fareham Reports 2005035541; Annual Report 1969, Fareham Reports 2005035542.

<sup>1809</sup> Inspection Report, A Peek, 3-4 December 1973, Fareham Reports 2005035558, p4.

<sup>1810</sup> Annual Report 1974, Fareham Reports 2005035542.

<sup>1811</sup> Annual Report 1979, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p3; Inspection Report, JA Blair, M Todd, 1-9 May 1980, Fareham Reports 2005035538, p4.

<sup>1812</sup> Tables of statistics, Fareham Admissions, F500000235541.

<sup>1813</sup> Annual Report 1980, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p1.

<sup>1814</sup> Memo and table of statistics, R Bell, Principal to Superintendent, 13/11/1967, Fareham Reports 2005035541; Annual Report 1969, Fareham Reports 2005035542; Annual Report 1974, Fareham Reports 2005035542.

ten in 1974 to 22 in 1966.<sup>1815</sup> With 72 admissions between 1977 and 1980 the average number of admissions each year was 18.<sup>1816</sup>

In 1980 admissions to Fareham were all approved through Head Office, and their flow was controlled by the Principal.<sup>1817</sup> In the same year the admission procedure was covered well, according to the Inspectors, by a well prepared action sheet and a person being admitted was told what was expected of them while at Fareham.<sup>1818</sup>

Prior to Fareham opening it was proposed that girls at Burwood Girls' Home be admitted first, and later admissions would be received directly from Child Welfare Districts.<sup>1819</sup> In 1976 there were 22 girls in residence.<sup>1820</sup> Admissions came from the whole of the North Island, and the northern, southern central and central South Island. Of the 17 girls admitted during 1977, 1978, 1979 and 1980, 63 came from the North Island, with the largest proportion coming from the upper north.<sup>1821</sup> In 1980 the catchment area for admissions was nationwide.<sup>1822</sup> The Auckland region filled 25% of the admissions.<sup>1823</sup>

In 1977 72% of residents were Maori and the remainder were Pacific Islanders and only four were European.<sup>1824</sup> In 1980 over three quarters of the admissions to Fareham were of Maori descent, 20 percent were European, and the remainder (one admission) was a Pacific Islander.<sup>1825</sup>

Fareham's main purpose was to rehabilitate.<sup>1826</sup> It was noted in 1966 that Fareham was not for seriously disturbed children.<sup>1827</sup> In 1970 T Ball, who reviewed Fareham, reported that the Principal had made considerable efforts to retain extremely disturbed girls with few facilities.<sup>1828</sup> A newspaper reported that Fareham catered for girls who were "educationally retarded, often highly disturbed and in need of remedial schooling".<sup>1829</sup> Girls came from all strata of society.<sup>1830</sup> In 1974 Fareham's function was to supply the right living conditions and training for emotionally disturbed children.<sup>1831</sup>

The Senior Teacher was also concerned with the nature of the disturbance among many of the admissions and staff had to deal with psychiatric cases in a situation

<sup>1815</sup> Memo and table of statistics, R Bell, Principal to Superintendent, 13/11/1967, Fareham Reports 2005035541; Annual Report 1974, Fareham Reports 2005035542;

<sup>1816</sup> Background Paper Reviewing Residential Operations, Fareham House, NG Stevens, Senior Residential Advisory Officer, 28/10/80, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p3.

<sup>1817</sup> Inspection Report, JA Blair, M Todd, 1-9 May 1980, Fareham Reports 2005035538, p4.

<sup>1818</sup> Inspection Report, JA Blair, M Todd, 1-9 May 1980, Fareham Reports 2005035538, p4.

<sup>1819</sup> Memo, Illegible McClure, Superintendent to All District Child Welfare Officers and Managers of Institutions 07/08/44. Fareham Profile 200503554.

<sup>1820</sup> Note for Psychiatric File, AG Frazer, 00/10/76, Fareham Health 2005035542, p1.

<sup>1821</sup><sup>1821</sup> Background Paper Reviewing Residential Operations, Fareham House, NG Stevens, Senior Residential Advisory Officer, 28/10/80, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p3.

<sup>1822</sup> Annual Report 1980, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p1.

<sup>1823</sup> Annual Report 1980, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p1.

<sup>1824</sup> Note for Psychiatric File, AG Frazer, 00/10/76, Fareham Health 2005035542, p1.

<sup>1825</sup> Annual Report 1980, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p1.

<sup>1826</sup> Memo, Illegible McClure, Superintendent to All District Child Welfare Officers and Managers of Institutions 07/08/44. Fareham Profile 200503554.

<sup>1827</sup> Newspaper article, "Fareham House Committee", Fareham Profile 2005035542.

<sup>1828</sup> Note for File, T Ball to Mr Reilly, 07/05/70, Fareham Staffing 2005035542, p1.

<sup>1829</sup> "Fareham House – Where Love and Care Thrive", *Wairarapa Times Age*, 18/09/70, Fareham Profile 2005035542.

<sup>1830</sup> "Fareham House – Where Love and Care Thrive", *Wairarapa Times Age*, 18/09/70, Fareham Profile 2005035542.

<sup>1831</sup> Annual Report 1974, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p1.

neither designed nor equipped to deal with them.<sup>1832</sup> In his opinion Fareham had become a sub-clinical environment, without the facilities, trained staff or "on tap" expert appraisal of developments.<sup>1833</sup> The Senior Teacher reported that there had been incidents of hiding of sharp instruments, potential and actual attacks on staff and children, taking of hoarded overdoses of restricted drugs, other forms of attempted suicide, arson, probable drug addiction and self inflicted injuries.<sup>1834</sup>

The Senior Teacher criticised the fact that staff had to deal with mentally disturbed children with more normal ones in such proximity, and the official recognition of this state of affairs.<sup>1835</sup> The Senior Teacher made recommendations as to how to remedy the problems he identified.<sup>1836</sup>

Around 1971 girls were sent to Fareham to help them get along better with others, to receive help with schooling, and to learn things they needed "to grow up into a good and useful person".<sup>1837</sup>

In 1972 the Principal did not think Fareham should become "an Institution for partly trained girls who should be discharged to make room for a girl deposited in a Girls' Home but recommended for long term training".<sup>1838</sup>

In 1973 all girls admitted had usually been tried in Foster Homes, Family Homes or Girls Homes and were in need for long-term training for their education and social adjustment.<sup>1839</sup> Some were grossly disturbed teenagers, aggressive, without rational restraints, and sometimes violent.<sup>1840</sup> In 1973 Mr Scahill, shortly after becoming Principal, reported his concern regarding the girl's behaviour, their distain for control and that he doubted that he doubted he could bring the Institution under control and rouse the staff into a more positive attitude.<sup>1841</sup>

In 1979 the Principal believed that because Fareham was an open institution the very aggressive child could not be coped with.<sup>1842</sup> In 1980 the Acting Principal reported that a child with a history of past assaults or hypo-aggressiveness was unsuitable for Fareham.<sup>1843</sup>

In 1969 the Principal noted that "it became evident that the girls who had had long periods in the Institution were not benefiting from continued residence, for, although social progress within the group could be measured, coping socially within the community could be seen to be an increasing strain".<sup>1844</sup>

<sup>1832</sup> Annual Report 1969, Fareham Reports 2005035542.

<sup>1833</sup> Annual Report 1969, Fareham Reports 2005035542.

<sup>1834</sup> Annual Report 1969, Fareham Reports 2005035542.

<sup>1835</sup> Annual Report 1969, Fareham Reports 2005035542.

<sup>1836</sup> Annual Report 1969, Fareham Reports 2005035542.

<sup>1837</sup> Fareham Guide for Girls, Fareham Profile 2005035542.

<sup>1838</sup> Memo, RB Kildey, Principal to Acting Director, Hamilton, 31/05/72, Fareham Admissions 2005035541, p1.

<sup>1839</sup> Memo, IJD MacKay, Director-General of Social Welfare to Minister of Social Welfare, 12/04/73, Fareham Profile 2005035542, p1.

<sup>1840</sup> Memo, IJD MacKay, Director-General of Social Welfare to Minister of Social Welfare, 12/04/73, Fareham Profile 2005035542, p1.

<sup>1841</sup> Memo, IJD MacKay, Director-General of Social Welfare to Minister of Social Welfare, 12/04/73, Fareham Profile 2005035542, p1.

<sup>1842</sup> Annual Report 1979, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p1.

<sup>1843</sup> Memo, JM Hough, Acting Principal to Director-General, 09/04/79, Fareham Secure, 2005035542.

<sup>1844</sup> Annual Report 1969, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p1.



In 1973 an Inspector commented that a number of girls in residence had become aggressive and unmanageable, and that the staff were afraid of them.<sup>1845</sup> In this year there were only 13 girls in residence, all of whom were disturbed and required concentrated attention by staff.<sup>1846</sup>

The Principal reported that in early 1974 the behaviour of some girls was destructive, abusive and defiant and that after a course of discipline they had become a constant problem.<sup>1847</sup> They were damaged to the extent that they lost hope on any incentive to progress.<sup>1848</sup>

AG Frazer reported that some residents were emotionally disturbed, while another group of girls were "determined by socio-economic factors".<sup>1849</sup> Within the later group there were girls who suffered from "an unsocialise aggressive behaviour disorder" and girls who were socially deprived and suffered difficulties associated with deprivation, such as under achievement. These girls were frequently unmotivated and disinterested in hobbies.<sup>1850</sup>

Despite the fact that Fareham girls had a history of disturbance and that one or two of the present inmates had spent time in psychiatric hospital, the Inspectors in 1977 found Fareham to have a pleasant, ordered atmosphere<sup>1851</sup> and by 1980 Inspectors noted that Fareham was providing a positive environment for girls who required residential care in an open setting.<sup>1852</sup>

## Length of stay

At the time of opening in 1944 it was not proposed that Fareham would provide for any lengthy period of training.<sup>1853</sup> By 1967 the Principal anticipated that the average period of training would be reduced to ten or twelve months<sup>1854</sup> and in 1969 the Principal commented that most girls reached a peak of behaviour and general conformity within 3 to 5 school terms and that girls who stayed in residence after this often showed regression.<sup>1855</sup> In this year the Senior Teacher recommended that a maximum desirable period of stay at Fareham be recognised but remain dependent on individual circumstances.<sup>1856</sup>

Throughout the 1970s and into 1980 the average length of stay ranged from 9 to 18 months.

<sup>1845</sup> Inspection Report, A Peek, 3-4 December 1973, Fareham Reports 200503558, p1.

<sup>1846</sup> Inspection Report, A Peek, 3-4 December 1973, Fareham Reports 200503558, p4.

<sup>1847</sup> Annual Report 1974, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p2.

<sup>1848</sup> Annual Report 1974, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p2.

<sup>1849</sup> Note for Psychiatric File, AG Frazer, 00/10/76, Fareham Health 2005035542, p1.

<sup>1850</sup> Note for Psychiatric File, AG Frazer, 00/10/76, Fareham Health 2005035542, p1.

<sup>1851</sup> Inspection Report, JB Frost, A Peek, 9 June 1977, Fareham Reports 200503558, p3.

<sup>1852</sup> Inspection Report, JA Blair, M Todd, 1-9 May 1980, Fareham Reports 2005035538, p7.

<sup>1853</sup> Memo, Illegible McClure, Superintendent to All District Child Welfare Officers and Managers of Institutions 07/08/44, Fareham Profile 200503554.

<sup>1854</sup> Memo, R Bell, Principal to the Superintendent 13/11/67, Fareham Reports 2005035542.

<sup>1855</sup> Annual Report 1969, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p1.

<sup>1856</sup> Annual Report 1969, Fareham Reports 2005035542.

## Programmes and care

### Activities

When opened, it was anticipated that Fareham's programme would include training in habits of personal hygiene, domestic work, gardening, small farm work, hand work, and sewing, with suitable provision for recreation and leisure time activities.<sup>1857</sup>

Little detail is available from files on the specific nature of programmes offered to the girls in the early years, although one source noted that girls took monthly turns in the kitchen, dining-room, doing milking, laundry and general household tasks. According to a newspaper report girls learned these tasks thoroughly and were competent housekeepers by the time they left.<sup>1858</sup> A newspaper article reported that many girls were in demand as entertainers.<sup>1859</sup>

In 1966 the Principal saw Fareham's function as offering a secure environment in which to stabilise and re-orientate a child before returning them to a family setting for the affection and more personal security which Institutions could not give.<sup>1860</sup>

A visiting psychologist in 1969 reported that he felt that Fareham "was based on negatives and that there was very little in the way of constructive positives offered to the girls".<sup>1861</sup>

In 1969 the Senior Teacher expressed his concern over comparatively untrained and inexperienced staff and the blanket use of drug therapy. The Principal disagreed, believing that "the use of 'Nydrane' as a control for Temporal Lobe Epilepsy as diagnosed in so many of our girls, is extremely beneficial in helping re-adjustment"<sup>1862</sup>, but did agree that prior Psychiatric investigation would give a fuller understanding of new admissions.<sup>1863</sup>

In 1970 the emphasis was on social retraining, remedial teaching and individual group counselling, which was supported by a range of recreational hobbies.<sup>1864</sup> Teamwork was encouraged.<sup>1865</sup> Throughout the 1970s a range of domestic, arts and craft and sporting activities were available for the residents. These included needlework, dressmaking, cooking, gardening, hairdressing, pottery, soft toy making, singing, swimming, softball and athletics. Other specialist programmes were also offered, including Maori language and Maori culture and residents participated in various sporting activities with local clubs and attended outdoor activity camps at Castlepoint and Camp Peek.

<sup>1857</sup> Memo, Illegible McClure, Superintendent to All District Child Welfare Officers and Managers of Institutions 07/08/44, Fareham Profile 200503554.

<sup>1858</sup> "Homestead Where the Great Once Relaxed", F5000000633723.

<sup>1859</sup> "Homestead Where the Great Once Relaxed", F5000000633723.

<sup>1860</sup> Annual Report 1969, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p1.

<sup>1861</sup> Report, JG Elliott, DCWO to Superintendent, 09/03/70, Fareham Incidents 2005035542, p2.

<sup>1862</sup> Annual Report 1969, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p4.

<sup>1863</sup> Annual Report 1969, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p4.

<sup>1864</sup> "Fareham House – Where Love and Care Thrive", *Wairarapa Times Age*, 18/09/70, Fareham Profile 2005035542.

<sup>1865</sup> "Fareham House – Where Love and Care Thrive", *Wairarapa Times Age*, 18/09/70, Fareham Profile 2005035542.

## Resident Management

In 1970 the Psychologist reported that the children left school happy but were glum when they reached the Institution, in his opinion because of the rigid rules and absolute conformity required there.<sup>1866</sup> A SCWO also expressed apprehensions about the Fareham regime and lack of individual work that the children got.<sup>1867</sup>

According to the matron in 1970 residents were damaging clothing and property and stealing.<sup>1868</sup> The Matron reported that there was not enough organised activity, partly because the Principal allowed girls too much "free time".<sup>1869</sup> It was also reported that girls enjoyed too much freedom to go to the Principal's house.<sup>1870</sup>

Around 1971 a resident's individual progress was reviewed monthly, but a resident could discuss it with the Principal at any time.<sup>1871</sup>

In 1973 the Inspector reported that the Principal had drawn up an excellent staff manual covering all aspects of work in the institution.<sup>1872</sup> Daily jobs and other routines for both staff and girls were clearly laid down.<sup>1873</sup> According to the Inspector residents had routine housekeeping duties to perform before and after school and on Saturdays.<sup>1874</sup>

In 1970 reward and punishment were methods of discipline.<sup>1875</sup> A misbehaving girl could lose all privileges by being kept separate from other girls.<sup>1876</sup> There was also a grading system that worked on the "ABC principal" of excellent behaviour down to not very good.<sup>1877</sup> On this system the girls received money weekly depending on what grade they were on.<sup>1878</sup>

To motivate improved behaviour the Principal instituted a points system in 1973 in which girls accumulated points according to their behaviour and job performance.<sup>1879</sup> This was still operating in 1977.<sup>1880</sup> According to the number of points a girl earned she could move through a series of groups. The higher groups were entitled to more pocket money and a number of other privileges.<sup>1881</sup> According to the Inspector the girls were very keen to earn points and tried hard not to lose any.<sup>1882</sup>

<sup>1866</sup> Report, JG Elliott, DCWO to Superintendent, 09/03/70, Fareham Incidents 2005035542, p2.

<sup>1867</sup> Report, JG Elliott, DCWO to Superintendent, 09/03/70, Fareham Incidents 2005035542, p3.

<sup>1868</sup> Minute sheet, Feist, 26/08/71, Fareham Staffing 2005035542.

<sup>1869</sup> Minute sheet, Feist, 26/08/71, Fareham Staffing 2005035542.

<sup>1870</sup> Minute sheet, Feist, 26/08/71, Fareham Staffing 2005035542.

<sup>1871</sup> Fareham Guide for Girls, Fareham Profile 2005035542.

<sup>1872</sup> Inspection Report, A Peek, 3-4 December 1973, Fareham Reports 200503558, p2.

<sup>1873</sup> Inspection Report, A Peek, 3-4 December 1973, Fareham Reports 200503558, p2.

<sup>1874</sup> Inspection Report, A Peek, 3-4 December 1973, Fareham Reports 200503558, p2.

<sup>1875</sup> "Fareham House – Where Love and Care Thrive", *Wairarapa Times Age*, 18/09/70, Fareham Profile 2005035542.

<sup>1876</sup> "Fareham House – Where Love and Care Thrive", *Wairarapa Times Age*, 18/09/70, Fareham Profile 2005035542.

<sup>1877</sup> "Fareham House – Where Love and Care Thrive", *Wairarapa Times Age*, 18/09/70, Fareham Profile 2005035542.

<sup>1878</sup> "Fareham House – Where Love and Care Thrive", *Wairarapa Times Age*, 18/09/70, Fareham Profile 2005035542.

<sup>1879</sup> Inspection Report, A Peek, 3-4 December 1973, Fareham Reports 200503558, p2.

<sup>1880</sup> Inspection Report, JB Frost, A Peek, 9 June 1977, Fareham Reports 200503558, p3.

<sup>1881</sup> Inspection Report, A Peek, 3-4 December 1973, Fareham Reports 200503558, p2.

<sup>1882</sup> Inspection Report, A Peek, 3-4 December 1973, Fareham Reports 200503558, p2.

A girl could only move upwards in this system and the speed at which she moved was dependent on her behaviour and attitudes.<sup>1883</sup> Serious misbehaviour however would result in a loss of points.<sup>1884</sup> Staff decided at their weekly meeting if this would happen.<sup>1885</sup> If a girl reached a Grand Total of 100 points she would go on to an "Off Mark" status, meaning she would no longer have a Mark Card.<sup>1886</sup> How much pocket money a girl got depended on what privilege group she was in.<sup>1887</sup>

The 1974 Inspector reported that a fines system operated as a disciplinary measure, with the money saved used to buy recreational items. The Inspector discussed this with the Principal and Assistant Principal who were unaware they were not permitted to do this, and suggested alternative systems.<sup>1888</sup>

In 1977 Dr Frazer doubted that the Principal was fully aware of the theoretical background of the Token Economy system used in Fareham.<sup>1889</sup> Frazer said it was never intended to be a total system of control, and was meant to be a temporary system to improve surface behaviour and that once this was achieved other methods could be used.<sup>1890</sup> In 1979 residents complained that staff were not consistent in how they applied the privilege programme.<sup>1891</sup>

In the late 1970s girls were provided with pocket money some of which was banked for them.<sup>1892</sup>

In the late 1970s one staff member was assigned to take a special interest in an individual resident.<sup>1893</sup>

In 1980 the Principal reported that a progressive programme had been introduced.<sup>1894</sup> He stated that Fareham tried to provide through programmes an atmosphere that encouraged self growth, social skills and a basic education.<sup>1895</sup> There was no vocational training in 1980 except for day work placement.<sup>1896</sup>

According to the Director of Residential Services in 1980 there was general dissatisfaction with the programme Fareham offered.<sup>1897</sup> The Principal reported in this year that as the length of stay was extending, the programme changed to cater

<sup>1883</sup> Marking Assessment System guide, GA Dawber, Principal, March 1977, Fareham Profile F5000002388341, p2.

<sup>1884</sup> Marking Assessment System guide, GA Dawber, Principal, March 1977, Fareham Profile F5000002388341, p2.

<sup>1885</sup> Marking Assessment System guide, GA Dawber, Principal, March 1977, Fareham Profile F5000002388341, p2.

<sup>1886</sup> Marking Assessment System guide, GA Dawber, Principal, March 1977, Fareham Profile F5000002388341, p2.

<sup>1887</sup> Marking Assessment System guide, GA Dawber, Principal, March 1977, Fareham Profile F5000002388341, p3.

<sup>1888</sup> Inspection Report, A Peek, 8-9 July 1974, Fareham Reports 200503558, p3.

<sup>1889</sup> Minute Sheet, Re Inspection Report – Fareham, A Frazer to M T Ball, 22/07/77, Fareham Reports 200503558.

<sup>1890</sup> Minute Sheet, Re Inspection Report – Fareham, A Frazer to M T Ball, 22/07/77, Fareham Reports 200503558.

<sup>1891</sup> Memo, illegible to Mr Lucas, 26/02/79, Fareham Incidents 2005035542, p5.

<sup>1892</sup> Letter, from Mr G Dawber, Principal to Parents, Fareham Profile F5000002388341, p1.

<sup>1893</sup> Letter, from Mr G Dawber, Principal to Parents, Fareham Profile F5000002388341, p2.

<sup>1894</sup> Memo, J Norfolk, Principal to Director-General, 23/01/80, Fareham Programmes, 2005035542, p1.

<sup>1895</sup> Annual Report 1980, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p1.

<sup>1896</sup> Annual Report 1980, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p2.

<sup>1897</sup> Memo, illegible, Director Residential Services to Mr Lucas, D.D.SW (ops), 05/11/80, Fareham Staffing 2005035542.

for a four to six term stay, which would bring most girls near to school leaving age.<sup>1898</sup>

## Administration

The 1980 Inspectors said generally the correct procedure in terms of manual instructions were being followed.<sup>1899</sup> A diary was kept in the duty room, in which all movements, admissions and appointments were appropriately actioned.<sup>1900</sup> Separate day and night occurrence books were kept. The Inspectors noted that night entries followed a very regular pattern and felt night checks should be made on a more informal and irregular basis.<sup>1901</sup>

No punishment register was kept.<sup>1902</sup>

## Work and training

In 1962 the Senior Clerk at Masterton reported that on a number of occasions during May a number of inmates worked at potato picking or sorting, for which there was no record of wages being paid to them.<sup>1903</sup> The clerk was told by the Principal, Mrs Te Tau, that in place of wages the Institution received tonnes of potatoes.<sup>1904</sup> The DCWO considered that since the girls did not receive payment their recreation fund should benefit to the value of the potatoes.<sup>1905</sup>

In 1973 some girls spent time doing community work without pay.<sup>1906</sup> According to the Inspector this was regarded as a learning experience and a means of encouraging ideals of service.<sup>1907</sup>

In 1974 the Principal reported that work placement for most girls continued satisfactorily and that the experience gained from the social contact was helpful.<sup>1908</sup> Most girls worked two half days each week at a variety of locations, including factories, Kindergarten, Schools, Reception Centre, and with gardeners and a grocer.<sup>1909</sup>

The School Report of 1979 noted that work experience was offered to those approaching 15,<sup>1910</sup> but the 1980 School Report noted that work placements did not build into a cohesive programme.<sup>1911</sup> Only two girls qualified in 1980 so the Senior Teacher decided to let the programme lapse until more girls qualified.<sup>1912</sup>

<sup>1898</sup> Annual Report 1980, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p4.

<sup>1899</sup> Inspection Report, JA Blair, M Todd, 1-9 May 1980, Fareham Reports 2005035538, p5.

<sup>1900</sup> Inspection Report, JA Blair, M Todd, 1-9 May 1980, Fareham Reports 2005035538, p5.

<sup>1901</sup> Inspection Report, JA Blair, M Todd, 1-9 May 1980, Fareham Reports 2005035538, p5.

<sup>1902</sup> Inspection Report, JA Blair, M Todd, 1-9 May 1980, Fareham Reports 2005035538, p5.

<sup>1903</sup> Memo, MLL Wilson, Senior Clerk to DCWO, 09/08/62, Fareham Programmes 200412833.

<sup>1904</sup> Memo, MLL Wilson, Senior Clerk to DCWO, 09/08/62, Fareham Programmes 200412833.

<sup>1905</sup> Addition on memo, JJ Hercock, DCWO to Superintendent, 20/08/62 on memo, MLL Wilson, Senior Clerk to DCWO, 09/08/62, Fareham Programmes 200412833.

<sup>1906</sup> Inspection Report, A Peek, 3-4 December 1973, Fareham Reports 200503558, p4.

<sup>1907</sup> Inspection Report, A Peek, 3-4 December 1973, Fareham Reports 200503558, p4.

<sup>1908</sup> Annual Report 1974, Fareham Reports, 2005035542, p4.

<sup>1909</sup> Annual Report 1974, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p4.

<sup>1910</sup> Annual Report 1979, Fareham Reports 2005035542.

<sup>1911</sup> Annual Report 1980, Fareham Reports 2005035542.

<sup>1912</sup> Annual Report 1980, Fareham Reports 2005035542.

At an unknown time girls worked outside Fareham, mainly doing housework, which they were paid for.<sup>1913</sup> Others worked on farms, as waitresses or hospital aides.<sup>1914</sup> A few made a career of nursing.<sup>1915</sup>

## Resident-to-resident issues

Little is recorded in the files about abusive behaviour between residents, although in early 1979 the Principal reported that a few problems were being experienced amongst the "heavy group" to sort out their leader<sup>1916</sup> and within ten days of assuming the position of Principal, Janet Worfolk reported that three girls, "under the influence of the unofficial "king pin", were consistently knocking other newer and "weaker" girls around.<sup>1917</sup> All girls were warned about the seriousness of the assaults".<sup>1918</sup> The Principal reported that the "king pin" was spoken to individually.<sup>1919</sup> Worfolk gathered that "the punching of new girls has ... been going on since the first term, and they seem to take it as a matter of right".<sup>1920</sup>

Not prepared to accept behaviour of that kind, Worfolk ensured considerable time was put into working on the problem.<sup>1921</sup> One girl received facial injuries, and the two girls concerned were placed "off privileges" and were warned that next time they would be removed from Fareham.<sup>1922</sup> A resident who assaulted another was placed in the Secure Unit at Miramar and was to be discharged, but was sent to Weymouth for 10 days.<sup>1923</sup>

According to the Principal some girls took exception to staff running Fareham instead of them and planned to wait until the night staff arrived and then set fire to the van and the bedrooms. One girl could not wait that long so threw a tantrum which took the Residential Social Worker away from the group, leaving only one staff member to cope. While this was happening three girls set light to bedroom curtains. According to the Principal due to the swift reaction of staff only minimal damage was done and the fire was extinguished.<sup>1924</sup>

The three girls who lit the fire were transferred to Miramar Girls Home Secure Unit, and two of them were discharged.<sup>1925</sup> The majority of girls settled back into routine after the incident. The Principal believed the fire could have been avoided if the staff coverage was greater.<sup>1926</sup>

<sup>1913</sup> Extra Accommodation, to Mr Reilly, 31/01/67, Fareham Profile 2005035541

<sup>1914</sup> "Homestead Where the Great Once Relaxed", F5000000633723.

<sup>1915</sup> "Homestead Where the Great Once Relaxed", F5000000633723.

<sup>1916</sup> Additon to memo, JA Dawber, Principal t Director General on memo, M Bannister, Assistant RSW, to Principal, 25/02/1979, Fareham Drugs and Smoking, 2005035542, p3.

<sup>1917</sup> Memo, J Worfolk, Principal to Director-General, 25/09/79, Fareham Profile 2005035542, p1.

<sup>1918</sup> Memo, J Worfolk, Principal to Director-General, 25/09/79, Fareham Profile 2005035542, p1.

<sup>1919</sup> Memo, J Worfolk, Principal to Director-General, 25/09/79, Fareham Profile 2005035542, p1.

<sup>1920</sup> Memo, J Worfolk, Principal to Director-General, 25/09/79, Fareham Profile 2005035542, p1.

<sup>1921</sup> Memo, J Worfolk, Principal to Director-General, 25/09/79, Fareham Profile 2005035542, p1.

<sup>1922</sup> Memo, J Worfolk, Principal to Director-General, 25/09/79, Fareham Profile 2005035542, p1.

<sup>1923</sup> Memo, J Worfolk, Principal to Director-General, 25/09/79, Fareham Profile 2005035542, p2.

<sup>1924</sup> Memo, J Worfolk, Principal to Director-General, 25/09/79, Fareham Profile 2005035542, p2. This incident and a number of other 'riots' are documented in Dalley, B, 1998, *Family Matters, Child Welfare in Twentieth-Century New Zealand*, Auckland University Press, Auckland

<sup>1925</sup> Memo, J Worfolk, Principal to Director-General, 25/09/79, Fareham Profile 2005035542, p2.

<sup>1926</sup> Memo, J Worfolk, Principal to Director-General, 25/09/79, Fareham Profile 2005035542, p2.

## Health and medication

In 1956 the Principal reported that girls had been admitted hurriedly, without being medically examined prior to admission and requested that this change.<sup>1927</sup> The Superintendent stated he would issue a request to this effect and that girls arrive with reports of their medical and dental examinations.<sup>1928</sup>

In 1957 new admissions were asked to be "dentally fit" because of the difficulty of releasing staff to escort girls to the dentist.<sup>1929</sup>

In 1974 the Principal reported that the bed in the medical room was not used that year and that no girl was hospitalised.<sup>1930</sup> In 1976 AG Frazer inspected the medical room and found that there was insufficient first aid equipment to cope with emergencies.<sup>1931</sup> But by 1977 the medical room suitably housed basic first aid materials and had a lockable drug cabinet.<sup>1932</sup>

In the late 1970s it was normal for a girl to have been medically examined by the Girls' Home from where she was admitted or in her home district.<sup>1933</sup> Medical, dental and specialist treatment was available if necessary.<sup>1934</sup>

The 1980 Inspection Report noted that an entrance medical examination was carried out soon after admission by a local GP.<sup>1935</sup> No smear tests were taken and if concern was felt in this area (after discussion with the GP) the girl had to be taken to the VD Clinic at Wellington Public Hospital.<sup>1936</sup> The Inspectors noted that this was not a satisfactory arrangement but that due to the age group of girls at Fareham this procedure did not happen often.<sup>1937</sup>

In 1980 the Principal told Inspectors that the medical service provided by the GP was unsatisfactory as the doctor was reluctant to visit Fareham unless there was a real emergency.<sup>1938</sup> The Inspectors noted that this would be discussed with Dr Frazer.<sup>1939</sup> A supplementary medical service was provided by the District Nurse who visited weekly.<sup>1940</sup>

In 1980 the Inspectors said the dental service provided to Fareham was adequate.<sup>1941</sup>

<sup>1927</sup> Memo, M Hopkinson, Principal to Superintendent, 11/04/56, Fareham Health 2008035541.

<sup>1928</sup> Reply on memo, CE Peek to Principal, Fareham, 15/04/56(?) Fareham Health 2005035541.

<sup>1929</sup> Memo, M Hopkinson to Superintendent, 22/11/57, Fareham Admissions 2005035541.

<sup>1930</sup> Annual Report 1974, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p4.

<sup>1931</sup> Memo, AG Frazer to Mr Te Punga, 07/10/76, Fareham Health 205035542.

<sup>1932</sup> Minute Sheet, Fareham House, illegible to Mr Ball, visit 21 September 1977, Fareham Reports 2005035542.

<sup>1933</sup> Letter, from Mr G Dawber, Principal to Parents, Fareham Profile F5000002388341, p1.

<sup>1934</sup> Letter, from Mr G Dawber, Principal to Parents, Fareham Profile F5000002388341, p1.

<sup>1935</sup> Inspection Report, JA Blair, M Todd, 1-9 May 1980, Fareham Reports 2005035538, p4.

<sup>1936</sup> Inspection Report, JA Blair, M Todd, 1-9 May 1980, Fareham Reports 2005035538, p4.

<sup>1937</sup> Inspection Report, JA Blair, M Todd, 1-9 May 1980, Fareham Reports 2005035538, p4.

<sup>1938</sup> Inspection Report, JA Blair, M Todd, 1-9 May 1980, Fareham Reports 2005035538, p5.

<sup>1939</sup> Inspection Report, JA Blair, M Todd, 1-9 May 1980, Fareham Reports 2005035538, p5.

<sup>1940</sup> Inspection Report, JA Blair, M Todd, 1-9 May 1980, Fareham Reports 2005035538, p5.

<sup>1941</sup> Inspection Report, JA Blair, M Todd, 1-9 May 1980, Fareham Reports 2005035538, p5.

## Psychological care

In 1965 psychological assessments were supposed to accompany applications for admission.<sup>1942</sup> In 1966 a psychologist<sup>1943</sup> and doctor provided services to Fareham<sup>1944</sup> and by 1970 the Psychological Service visited Fareham regularly.<sup>1945</sup>

In 1974 the Inspector reported that there was a lack of psychiatric and psychological services. Urgent cases could be dealt with in Masterton by arrangement but there was no continuing service.

In 1976 it was reported that psychiatric help at Fareham required taking girls to Miramar Girls' Home to be seen as an outpatient, and in selected cases for girls to be admitted to the girls' home for psychiatric assessment.<sup>1946</sup> AG Frazer reported that this was unnecessary and that there had never been a visiting psychiatric service on a regular basis. General medical services came from the local practitioner who could supervise any necessary psychiatric medication.<sup>1947</sup>

Frazer reported that the education psychologist used to visit Fareham on an informal basis to provide a considerable degree of support to the staff where necessary.<sup>1948</sup> This stopped because of financial restrictions and Fareham had not been visited by a psychologist for many months when Frazer visited. Frazer outlined reasons why a proper service was needed.<sup>1949</sup>

In 1977 the Psychologist visited regularly<sup>1950</sup> but the Principal described the psychiatric and psychological services as very limited.<sup>1951</sup>

In 1979 there was approval for visits from a psychologist for one half day a fortnight, however they had only seen her three times in six months. Therefore the Principal believed that any child needing long term psychological service should not be admitted.<sup>1952</sup> However another commentator believed that because of the type of girl "we are having to recommend for admission to our institutions for long term training it would not be practical to exclude girls" on these grounds.<sup>1953</sup>

In 1980 the Principal reported that the visiting psychologist, Pru Vincent, visited one half day a month and that Fareham could utilise a lot more of her time with intensive counselling.<sup>1954</sup> The 1980 Inspectors noted that Vincent, had been visiting Fareham for three and a half years and that because of pressures caused by the "sinking lid" she was no longer able to visit on a full half day or more per fortnight.<sup>1955</sup> She could provide reasonably adequate service with a full afternoon on one fortnight and two hours the following fortnight, according to the Inspectors.<sup>1956</sup> Vincent commented

<sup>1942</sup> Circular Memorandum 1965/22, 17/03/65, Fareham Staff, F5000005774764.

<sup>1943</sup> Report, K Hayes (for Superintendent) to the Superintendent, 02/03/66, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p1.

<sup>1944</sup> Memo, R Bell, Principal to the Superintendent 13/11/67, Fareham Reports 2005035542.

<sup>1945</sup> Report, JG Elliott, DCWO to Superintendent, 09/03/70, Fareham Incidents 2005035542, p2.

<sup>1946</sup> Note for Psychiatric File, AG Frazer, 00/10/76, Fareham Health 2005035542, p2.

<sup>1947</sup> Note for Psychiatric File, AG Frazer, 00/10/76, Fareham Health 2005035542, p1.

<sup>1948</sup> Note for Psychiatric File, AG Frazer, 00/10/76, Fareham Health 2005035542, p2.

<sup>1949</sup> Note for Psychiatric File, AG Frazer, 00/10/76, Fareham Health 2005035542, p2.

<sup>1950</sup> Minute Sheet, Re Inspection Report – Fareham, A Frazer to M T Ball, 22/07/77, Fareham Reports 200503558.

<sup>1951</sup> Questionnaire to Principal, Fareham House, 01/09/77, Fareham Profile, 2005035541, p4.

<sup>1952</sup> Annual Report 1979, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p1.

<sup>1953</sup> Minute sheet, illegible, Fareham House 1979 Annual Report, 05/02/80, Fareham Reports 2005035542.

<sup>1954</sup> Annual Report 1980, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p3.

<sup>1955</sup> Inspection Report, JA Blair, M Todd, 1-9 May 1980, Fareham Reports 2005035538, p6.

<sup>1956</sup> Inspection Report, JA Blair, M Todd, 1-9 May 1980, Fareham Reports 2005035538, p6.



that the atmosphere at Fareham was the best it had been in three and a half years.<sup>1957</sup>

A psychiatrist was always available for consultations in 1980.<sup>1958</sup> In the same year medical and dental visits were a "fairly long process" according to the Principal. There was no visiting doctor.<sup>1959</sup> According to the Principal there were seldom swab tests done as girls came directly from short term institutions, or were "dealt" with by them in the case of absconders before they returned to Fareham.<sup>1960</sup>

## Psychiatric hospital placement

There is very limited information on this topic in the Fareham files.

The Principal reported in 1966 that at times when extreme emotional difficulties were experienced and behaviour indicated the possibility of psychotic factors he always arranged for observation of children at the Psychiatric Ward, Wellington Hospital. Committal was always made from this point. In 1966 there were three committals.<sup>1961</sup>

In 1969 the Senior Teacher reported that over the previous four years, regularly and annually "between 20% and 30% of our 'graduates', graduate to mental hospital".<sup>1962</sup>

## Staffing

### Staff numbers

In 1955 there were periods of staff shortages during which time no admissions could be made. Staffing numbers had improved by September.<sup>1963</sup>

In March 1965 Fareham was not fully staffed.<sup>1964</sup> In 1966 the Principal believed that staffing numbers should be increased as it was not possible to give adequate supervision without using the matron's staff.<sup>1965</sup> In 1966 after months of advertising only one, unsatisfactory, application was received for the position of House Mistress.<sup>1966</sup>

In 1966 the Assistant Principal and Instructress were prepared to live in at least three nights per week for "on call" coverage.<sup>1967</sup> This provided adequate coverage where at least one supervisory officer covered the day from 7am to 9am according to someone in the name of the Superintendent.<sup>1968</sup>

<sup>1957</sup> Inspection Report, JA Blair, M Todd, 1-9 May 1980, Fareham Reports 2005035538, p6.

<sup>1958</sup> Annual Report 1980, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p3.

<sup>1959</sup> Annual Report 1980, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p3.

<sup>1960</sup> Annual Report 1980, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p3.

<sup>1961</sup> Memo, R Bell, Principal to the Superintendent 13/11/67, Fareham Reports 2005035542.

<sup>1962</sup> Annual Report 1969, Fareham Reports 2005035542.

<sup>1963</sup> Memo, E Naylor to Superintendent, 08/09/55, Fareham Admissions 2005035541.

<sup>1964</sup> Circular Memorandum 1965/22, 17/03/65, Fareham Staff, F5000005774764.

<sup>1965</sup> Letter, R Bell, Principal to the Superintendent 18/02/66, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p2.

<sup>1966</sup> Letter, R Bell, Principal to the Superintendent 18/02/66, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p3.

<sup>1967</sup> Letter, R Bell, Principal to the Superintendent 18/02/66, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p3.

<sup>1968</sup> Letter, R Bell, Principal to the Superintendent 18/02/66, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p3.

When K Haynes, for Superintendent visited early in 1966 he believed the staff seemed a stronger team and more confident, due in part to the staff and administrative changes that had occurred.<sup>1969</sup> There was a full staffing team in 1969 but by the following year there was a shortage of staff.<sup>1970</sup> In 1973, 1974 and 1977, 1979 and 1980 there were between fifteen and 16 staff.<sup>1971</sup>

In January 1969 Mr C C Chibnall was appointed Principal. He complimented Mr Bell, the previous Principal, on the well defined systems and policies he had established.<sup>1972</sup> There was no matron from May to October 1969 and the Assistant Principal was away from May until mid-July.<sup>1973</sup> Chibnall complimented staff who relieved these people as no break in routine or loss of efficiency was experienced.<sup>1974</sup>

█ the Matrons reportedly had no sense of housekeeping and stored food poorly.<sup>1975</sup> There had been a succession of matrons.<sup>1976</sup>

In █ the Inspector reported that █, Assistant Principal had worked for fourteen days without a day off.<sup>1977</sup> He arranged for Matron of Miramar to help for three days, for the Miramar Principal to talk with her, and insisted she take time off.<sup>1978</sup>

In █ complained that during his time as Principal he was short staffed and personally did not have one day off over a period of 22 weeks.<sup>1979</sup> He further complained that that when he was Principal he asked Head Office for permission to employ night staff as he believed that the system in operation, whereby two staff would be on call, but would sleep behind closed doors, was unsatisfactory.<sup>1980</sup> He reported that incidents involving leaving the property, "indulgence in sex play", wilful damage and smoking occurred because of the lack of supervision during this period.<sup>1981</sup>

During the time Fareham was closed in 1973 wage worker staff were not employed, and vacancies on the permanent staff were not filled. This reduced the normal staff numbers to fifty percent.<sup>1982</sup>

<sup>1969</sup> Report, K Hayes (for Superintendent) to the Superintendent, 02/03/66, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p1.

<sup>1970</sup> Note for File, T Ball to Mr Reilly, 07/05/70, Fareham Staffing 2005035542, p1.

<sup>1971</sup> Inspection Report, A Peek, 3-4 December 1973, Fareham Reports 200503558, p1; Inspection Report, A Peek, 8-9 July 1974, Fareham Reports 200503558, p1; Inspection Report, JB Frost, A Peek, 9 June 1977, Fareham Reports 200503558, p1; Annual Report 1979, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p1; Background Paper Reviewing Residential Operations, Fareham House, NG Stevens, Senior Residential Advisory Officer, 28/10/80, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p1.

<sup>1972</sup> Annual Report 1969, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p2.

<sup>1973</sup> Annual Report 1969, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p2.

<sup>1974</sup> Annual Report 1969, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p2.

<sup>1977</sup> Note for file, P Bygate, Inspector to Mr Anderson, Mr Reilly, Miss Feist, Miss Goldsbury, 08/03/72, Fareham Staffing 2005035542, p3.

<sup>1978</sup> Note for file, P Bygate, Inspector to Mr Anderson, Mr Reilly, Miss Feist, Miss Goldsbury, 08/03/72, Fareham Staffing 2005035542, p3.

p3.

<sup>1982</sup> Report to the Minister of Social Welfare, Fareham House, 15/06/73, Fareham Profile 2005035542.

In 1974 Mr Goldsbury, Principal, reported that all the staff shared added responsibilities when staffing was not at full strength.<sup>1983</sup> According to him the extra strain proved a trial for some senior women, but he expected 1975's coverage to be improved by working as possible to the established timetable.<sup>1984</sup>

In 1977 approval was given for the installation of an alarm system<sup>1985</sup> as at night Fareham was only staffed with one night supervisor, and although there may have been a staff member sleeping in the building the system was needed to enable the night supervisor to summon aid and help in emergencies.<sup>1986</sup> In 1978 the Principal called for this system to be upgraded as it was unsatisfactory.<sup>1987</sup> It was noted that in 1978 there was one staff member only on duty at night and up to 24 girls in residence.<sup>1988</sup>

In 1979 The Principal, Miss Worfolk, was concerned about poor senior staff coverage.<sup>1989</sup> Worfolk believed Fareham could operate better if the Principal was taken off the roster, as this would allow for administration and staff training.<sup>1990</sup> She also suggested two Senior Residential Social Workers be appointed, to give a coverage of three staff on every day shift, that a night attendant be appointed and that the present part-timers be made full time, to give a cover of two during the night.<sup>1991</sup> To keep within the present staff ceiling the Principal suggested disestablishing the relieving Assistant Residential Social worker, seamstress/laundress, and Matrons Assistant positions.<sup>1992</sup> Another commentator believed that Principals and Assistant Principals at all institutions should be non-rostered but recognised the obstacles to this.<sup>1993</sup>

The 1980 inspectors visit to Fareham identified four staff vacancies, including that of the Assistant Principal.<sup>1994</sup> Only three staff members were employed at Fareham when the previous Inspectors visited in mid 1977.<sup>1995</sup> In March Principal Mr Dawber went on leave then left Fareham several months later and was replaced by Miss J Worfolk in August.<sup>1996</sup> Until Worfolk arrived there had only been one senior staff member since Dawber left.<sup>1997</sup>

Still concerned about the shortage of senior staff the Principal in 1980 was awaiting the results of a submission written to head Office 14 months ago asking that two junior positions be disestablished and replaced by two senior residential social workers.<sup>1998</sup> This, together with the assistant principal on a three week roster would give a cover of senior staff at all times.

<sup>1983</sup> Annual Report 1974, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p1.

<sup>1984</sup> Annual Report 1974, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p1.

<sup>1985</sup> Memo, Adrienne M Dench, for Director General to Principal, 01/06/77, Fareham Profile, 2006005604.

<sup>1986</sup> Letter, Director General to GA Dawber, Principal, 18/05/77, Fareham Profile 2006005604.

<sup>1987</sup> Letter, Director General to GA Dawber, Principal, 10/11/78, Fareham Profile 2006005604.

<sup>1988</sup> Memo, GA Dawber, Principal to District Engineer, 04/04/78, Fareham Profile, 2006005604.

<sup>1989</sup> Annual Report 1979, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p3.

<sup>1990</sup> Annual Report 1979, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p1.

<sup>1991</sup> Annual Report 1979, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p1.

<sup>1992</sup> Annual Report 1979, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p1.

<sup>1993</sup> Minute sheet, illegible, Fareham House 1979 Annual Report, 05/02/80, Fareham Reports 2005035542.

<sup>1994</sup> Inspection Report, JA Blair, M Todd, 1-9 May 1980, Fareham Reports 2005035538, p1.

<sup>1995</sup> Inspection Report, JA Blair, M Todd, 1-9 May 1980, Fareham Reports 2005035538, p2.

<sup>1996</sup> Inspection Report, JA Blair, M Todd, 1-9 May 1980, Fareham Reports 2005035538, p2.

<sup>1997</sup> Annual Report 1979, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p2.

<sup>1998</sup> Annual Report 1980, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p2.

A review of whether Fareham served a useful purpose was proposed in 1980.<sup>1999</sup>

In 1980 there was night staff cover of one and sleepovers were reinstated so that there were two staff in the building.<sup>2000</sup>

A Senior Residential Advisory Officer stated in 1980 that the retention of suitable staff had always been difficult.<sup>2001</sup> Reasons provided for this included lack of professional and specialist support, difficulty in retaining suitable teacher staff, its locality, for promotional reasons Fareham's grading is at the bottom of the residential social work ladder, the local community never really accepted Fareham.<sup>2002</sup>

In 1980 the Principal noted that it was difficult to attract the right people to teach special skills like piano because they often had to travel a long way and were paid little.<sup>2003</sup>

### General issues

The Principal, [REDACTED] was very unhappy in [REDACTED] that he had to cover from 7am to 11am as well as doing administration work.<sup>2004</sup> He did not believe that the Principal should be required to supervise girls' duties, and was not prepared to supervise the dressing and ablutions of the girls.<sup>2005</sup> While he was on duty at showering and bed time, direct supervision was performed by the Assistant Principal and House Mistress.<sup>2006</sup> DG Reilly believed that the Principal must know that such duties were not expected of him.<sup>2007</sup> On [REDACTED] K Hayes, for Superintendent spent the day at Fareham in a response because the Principal was unhappy and was considering resigning.<sup>2008</sup> Hayes suggested ways to remedy these problems.<sup>2009</sup>

In [REDACTED] T Ball visited Fareham to conduct a general review.<sup>2010</sup> He reported that [REDACTED] tended to withdraw into the institution, that more attention appeared to be paid to staff and their views<sup>2011</sup> and that [REDACTED] was in need of support and suggested he be visited more.<sup>2012</sup>

In [REDACTED] the Senior Teacher complained about the Principal, [REDACTED].<sup>2013</sup> Allegations included a "surprising ineptitude in management",<sup>2014</sup> that staff relations were poor,<sup>2015</sup> and that girls were transferred, discharged or enrolled at Kuranui

<sup>1999</sup> Minute sheet, illegible to Mr Lucas, Fareham House 1979 Annual Report, 11/02/80, Fareham Reports 2005035542.

<sup>2000</sup> Annual Report 1980, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p2.

<sup>2001</sup> Background Paper Reviewing Residential Operations, Fareham House, NG Stevens, Senior Residential Advisory Officer, 28/10/80, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p2.

<sup>2002</sup> Background Paper Reviewing Residential Operations, Fareham House, NG Stevens, Senior Residential Advisory Officer, 28/10/80, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p2.

<sup>2003</sup> Annual Report 1980, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p3.

College without any consultation with the Senior Teacher.<sup>2016</sup> A Head Office visit to the home revealed that [REDACTED] was demonstrating mismanagement and identified a number of incidents none in themselves gravely serious, but which added up to "a Principal some of whose weaknesses we know, abrasive in staff and public relations, clumsy in management and far too ready to align himself alongside the girls and 'against the rest'"<sup>2017</sup>.

In August [REDACTED] the Matron advised that staff were unhappy with the conditions at Fareham and were not confident in the Principal.<sup>2018</sup> Anderson, the Assistant Director of Social Work reported that in mid [REDACTED] a Featherston doctor complained about [REDACTED]'s regime.<sup>2019</sup> Anderson reported that [REDACTED] was hired because he was the best of a poor selection of applicants.<sup>2020</sup> He believed that [REDACTED] would "come right" and when it became clear he never would, [REDACTED] was "eased out of the place".<sup>2021</sup> Anderson said the Head office influence on a Principal was designedly minimal.<sup>2022</sup>

According to the Matron the loss of [REDACTED] the Assistant Principal and the fact that the position was still unfilled had a big effect.<sup>2023</sup> The matron reported that there would be no women living in for a period and that when women were on duty they slept in, and that the principal did too.<sup>2024</sup> Feist was unhappy about this.<sup>2025</sup> According to the Matron any attempt by staff to discuss matters with the Principals was rejected.<sup>2026</sup> Staff would not record incidents in the day book because they were scared that they would be blamed for anything that happened, and that no notice was taken.<sup>2027</sup> Feist reported that these matters were discussed with Mr Anderson and Mr Reilly and that Mr Bygate would inspect Fareham in late [REDACTED].<sup>2028</sup>

1972 the Inspector stated that [REDACTED] administered Fareham in a "big rough mannish way" and that the girls responded to this.<sup>2029</sup> He criticised [REDACTED] for implementing a new timetable without prior approval before he left as staff were contending with some radical changes.<sup>2030</sup>

The Inspector commented in [REDACTED] that in his opinion the new Assistant Principal, [REDACTED] did not have the experience to take over the running of an institution for six weeks and he had been left too long on her own by the Principal.<sup>2031</sup> When [REDACTED] was away junior staff became confused and the

2016	[REDACTED]
2017	[REDACTED]
2018	[REDACTED]
2019	[REDACTED]
2020	[REDACTED]
2021	[REDACTED]
2022	[REDACTED]
2023	[REDACTED]
2024	[REDACTED]
2025	[REDACTED]
2026	[REDACTED]
2027	[REDACTED]
2028	[REDACTED]
2029	[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]	[REDACTED]
2030	[REDACTED]
[REDACTED]	[REDACTED]
2031	[REDACTED]

residents gained an increasing amount of control.<sup>2032</sup> Some residents absconded and burgled a house.<sup>2033</sup>

The Inspector reported that when he arrived windows were smashed. He also reported an instance where [REDACTED] put five girls in the bus without letting any of the other staff know where she was going. The Matron became concerned because some of the girls seemed dangerous and notified the police. On another occasion [REDACTED] put three girls in the bus to remove them from a crisis situation and took them to Miramar without prior arrangements to have them admitted.<sup>2034</sup> They were not received.<sup>2035</sup>

In [REDACTED] the Miramar matron helped the Assistant Principal tighten up discipline and organise activities which were met with a positive response from the residents, according to the Inspector.<sup>2036</sup>

Discussions with residents, Somerville and Principal Miramar suggested a prime motive for the absconding was boredom and insecurity resulting from the lack of organised activity and lack of unity and confidence amongst staff.<sup>2037</sup>

In [REDACTED] the Inspector reported that the Principal felt that Fareham was running extremely smoothly and rejected the idea that care of the staff would help the girls ultimately.<sup>2038</sup> The inspector organised a meeting to address these issues.<sup>2039</sup>

In [REDACTED] the Inspector asked the Principal to ensure that either the Principal, the Assistant Principal or House mistress was on duty all the time.<sup>2040</sup>

In [REDACTED] DG Reilly, Assistant Director (Institutional Services) expressed negative views about [REDACTED]'s performance as Principal and reported that the institution had been virtually administered by his office until six months ago. An Inspector told [REDACTED] too many day to day running matters of Fareham were going to Head Office and that he should be able to deal with them.<sup>2041</sup> Reilly believed [REDACTED] was an unsuitable controlling officer of an institution.<sup>2042</sup>

In [REDACTED] the Director-General reported that women staff were in a state of inertia and fear after being alienated by the Principal.<sup>2043</sup> One night residents left Fareham at night, after threatening the staff who were too afraid to go out after them or to ring the

<sup>2036</sup> Note for file, P Bygate, Inspector to Mr Anderson, Mr Reilly, Miss Feist, Miss Goldsbury, [REDACTED] Fareham Staffing 2005035542, p3.

<sup>2037</sup> Note for file, P Bygate, Inspector to Mr Anderson, Mr Reilly, Miss Feist, Miss Goldsbury [REDACTED] Fareham Staffing 2005035542, p3.

<sup>2038</sup> Minute sheet, P Bygate, Inspector to Mr Reilly, [REDACTED], Fareham Staffing 2005035542, p9

<sup>2039</sup> Minute sheet, P Bygate, Inspector to Mr Reilly, [REDACTED], Fareham Staffing 2005035542, p10.

<sup>2040</sup> Minute sheet, P Bygate, Inspector to Mr Reilly, [REDACTED], Fareham Staffing 2005035542, p4.

<sup>2041</sup> Minute sheet, P Bygate, Inspector to Mr Reilly, [REDACTED], Fareham Staffing 2005035542, p9.

<sup>2042</sup> Notes for File, DG Reilly, Assistant Director (Institutional Services), [REDACTED], Fareham Staffing 2005035542, p1.

<sup>2043</sup> Memo, IJD MacKay, Director-General of Social Welfare to Minister of Social Welfare, [REDACTED] Fareham Profile 2005035542, p1.

Principal.<sup>2044</sup> The Assistant Director (Institutional Services) reported that the women staff were never likely to rise above mediocre.<sup>2045</sup>

In 1973 Mr PE Scahill took over the institution at the beginning of that year and found it in a "parlous state". The Inspector reported that beds were wrecked, curtains and linen torn, and walls and furniture damaged.<sup>2046</sup> According to the Inspector Fareham had to be cleared of inmates and because it had been impossible to find a second teacher the numbers in residence had to be kept to 13.<sup>2047</sup> Soon after being appointed Principal, Mr Scahill, expressed concern about staff relationships, the disdain which the residents had for control, staff apathy, the fact the girls were in control of the institution, Fareham's physical condition<sup>2048</sup> and that he doubted that he could bring the Institution under control and rouse staff into a positive attitude.<sup>2049</sup>

The Director-General reported that a visit was made immediately by one of his senior officers who confirmed that the girls were really in charge and that considerable damage had been done to the institution prior to the appointment of the new Principal.<sup>2050</sup> The Director-General believed that in the last few months of the previous Principal's occupancy he must have lost grip as a controlling officer, have alienated the women staff more than suspected and that his control of the girls had dissolved to an extent he had to bribe them to maintain it.<sup>2051</sup>

According to the Director General, the Department knew the previous Principal "was by no means a very good one but it was surprising to learn that his management had slipped so badly".<sup>2052</sup> He believed that the deterioration occurred within the previous six months because prior to that time visits had been made by Inspectors, which ceased only because the Principal had been in the position for nearly two years and it was decided it was time he learned to stand on his own feet.<sup>2053</sup> The Assistant Director General (Social Work) expressed regret that a full inspection service had been unable to operate in recent years but noted that Fareham did receive an untoward share of the Inspectors' time.<sup>2054</sup>

The Director-General knew from experience that when an Institution was reduced to a stage where inmates dictated policy, defied authority and where staff morale was gone, the only way to deal with the situation was to move every inmate out of the Institution.<sup>2055</sup> For this reason all girls were discharged in March 1973 and the work

<sup>2044</sup> Notes for File, DG Reilly, Assistant Director (Institutional Services), 15/03/73, Fareham Staffing 2005035542, p2.

<sup>2045</sup> Notes for File, DG Reilly, Assistant Director (Institutional Services), 15/03/73, Fareham Staffing 2005035542, p2.

<sup>2046</sup> Inspection Report, A Peek, 3-4 December 1973, Fareham Reports 200503558, p1.

<sup>2047</sup> Inspection Report, A Peek, 3-4 December 1973, Fareham Reports 200503558, p1.

<sup>2048</sup> Notes for File, DG Reilly, Assistant Director (Institutional Services), 15/03/73, Fareham Staffing 2005035542, p1.

<sup>2049</sup> Memo, IJD MacKay, Director-General of Social Welfare to Minister of Social Welfare, 12/04/73, Fareham Profile 2005035542, p1.

<sup>2050</sup> Memo, IJD MacKay, Director-General of Social Welfare to Minister of Social Welfare, 12/04/73, Fareham Profile 2005035542, p1.

<sup>2051</sup> Memo, IJD MacKay, Director-General of Social Welfare to Minister of Social Welfare, 12/04/73, Fareham Profile 2005035542, p1.

<sup>2052</sup> Memo, IJD MacKay, Director-General of Social Welfare to Minister of Social Welfare, 12/04/73, Fareham Profile 2005035542, p1.

<sup>2053</sup> Memo, IJD MacKay, Director-General of Social Welfare to Minister of Social Welfare, 12/04/73, Fareham Profile 2005035542, p1.

<sup>2054</sup> Minute Sheet, Illegible Anderson, ADG(SW) to Mr Healy, 01/05/73, Fareham Staffing 2005035542, p1.

<sup>2055</sup> Memo, IJD MacKay, Director-General of Social Welfare to Minister of Social Welfare, 12/04/73, Fareham Profile 2005035542, p1.

of repair and refurbishing began.<sup>2056</sup> This cost thousands of dollars, and [REDACTED] was asked to explain the damage.<sup>2057</sup> The Institution was to re-open on 18 June 1973.<sup>2058</sup>

In 1973 the Inspector reported that staff were happy and relaxed, with the exception of the Matron.<sup>2059</sup> He complimented Mr Scahill on bringing Fareham into smooth running order, repairing the extensive damage to it, and welding staff into an effective team.<sup>2060</sup> Scahill set high but not unrealistic standards of personal behaviour, and had engendered in the girls a respect for institution property.<sup>2061</sup>

In 1973 the Inspector reported that the Principal was pleased with the effects of appointing night supervisors. Prior to this, girls were slipping out at night and coming home before staff woke in the mornings.<sup>2062</sup>

The [REDACTED] Inspector commented that operating on a reduced roll for a considerable time affected the normal routine and staff morale.<sup>2063</sup> That same year [REDACTED] was recently appointed Principal. At [REDACTED] was embarking on his first major position of responsibility.<sup>2064</sup> The Inspector thought [REDACTED] could be much firmer in his dealings with staff.<sup>2065</sup> Despite their reputation of being "difficult" staff had a pleasant approach to their jobs.<sup>2066</sup> According to [REDACTED], once staff duties were more clearly defined there would be better supervision coverage and more co-operation from all.<sup>2067</sup>

In 1975 it was felt by the Director, the Principal, the Assistant Principal and the Director's Administration Officer that there should be a re-look at management to improve communication and organisation.<sup>2068</sup> It was decided all staff matters would be referred to the Masterton office.<sup>2069</sup>

In 1977 the Inspectors found most of the staff to be of good calibre and interested in their work.<sup>2070</sup> They reported that in the past Fareham had often had to rely on local workers who had not always been up to standard.<sup>2071</sup> The Inspector believed a feature of a small institution like Fareham was that there was little difference in function between professional and domestic staff - all had contact with the residents and played a part in training and supervising them.<sup>2072</sup>

In 1978 the Visiting Committee described the staff as "excellent".<sup>2073</sup>

<sup>2056</sup> Memo, IJD MacKay, Director-General of Social Welfare to Minister of Social Welfare, 12/04/73, Fareham Profile 2005035542, p2

<sup>2058</sup> Report to the Minister of Social Welfare, Fareham House, 15/06/73, Fareham Profile 2005035542.

<sup>2059</sup> Inspection Report, A Peek, 3-4 December 1973, Fareham Reports 200503558, p3.

<sup>2060</sup> Inspection Report, A Peek, 3-4 December 1973, Fareham Reports 200503558, p3.

<sup>2061</sup> Inspection Report, A Peek, 3-4 December 1973, Fareham Reports 200503558, p4.

<sup>2062</sup> Inspection Report, A Peek, 3-4 December 1973, Fareham Reports 200503558, p3.

<sup>2063</sup>

<sup>2067</sup> Annual Report [REDACTED] Fareham Reports, 2005035542, p1.

<sup>2068</sup> Memo, JG Elliott, Director of Department of Social Welfare to Director-General of Social Welfare, 01/05/75, Fareham Staffing 2005035542, p1.

<sup>2069</sup> Memo, MJD Rogers, Senior Executive Officer, Fareham Staffing 2005035542, p1.

<sup>2070</sup> Inspection Report, JB Frost, A Peek, 9 June 1977, Fareham Reports 200503558, p2.

<sup>2071</sup> Inspection Report, JB Frost, A Peek, 9 June 1977, Fareham Reports 200503558, p2.

<sup>2072</sup> Inspection Report, JB Frost, A Peek, 9 June 1977, Fareham Reports 200503558, p2.

<sup>2073</sup> Memo, K Yule to Director-General, 12/09/78, Fareham Contact with Social Workers 2005035542.



The facilitator of training in 1979 remarked that a big problems experienced by staff at Fareham was their insecurity due to lack of back up by senior staff and that due to the Acting Principal while there were signs it was improving, the general tone of the institution was dejected.<sup>2074</sup>

Two major staffing needs were identified by the facilitator.<sup>2075</sup> Firstly, there was a need for a roster of three female Assistant Residential Social Workers.<sup>2076</sup> At that time there were three RSWs and three ARSWs. Of the six three were male and three were female.<sup>2077</sup> This meant that on every shift there was only one female on the roster, who accordingly was under a lot of pressure.<sup>2078</sup> Further staffing was also considered essential as the Principal and Assistant Principal had to work rostered hours to provide backup for staff.<sup>2079</sup> The facilitator believed the single cover night staff roster was inadequate.<sup>2080</sup> He made suggestions of how this could be improved.<sup>2081</sup> The facilitator believed there was a need for an experienced Principal to take over Fareham.<sup>2082</sup>

In [REDACTED] an Inspector reported that [REDACTED]'s administration had deteriorated so much that even the school was having difficulty functioning.<sup>2083</sup> The Inspector reported that teachers each day had to calm and advise the girls over the succession of "incidents" that took place in the home before school work could begin.<sup>2084</sup> According to the Inspector the situation was continuing to deteriorate into a possibly dangerous state.<sup>2085</sup>

In [REDACTED] the Head Teacher, [REDACTED] complained that staff relationships were poor and that the Principal had been "rubbishing" the school and school staff to institution staff.<sup>2086</sup> [REDACTED] was insistent that girls should come back to the house "mentally exhausted from doing school work".<sup>2087</sup>

[REDACTED] and [REDACTED] a Fareham staff member (position unknown) were in a relationship.<sup>2088</sup>

<sup>2074</sup> Report on Staff Training Programme held at Fareham House 14/15/16 May 1979, JC Watson, Principal, Girls Home Palmerston North, 20/05/79, Fareham Staffing, p3.

<sup>2075</sup> Report on Staff Training Programme held at Fareham House 14/15/16 May 1979, JC Watson, Principal, Girls Home Palmerston North, 20/05/79, Fareham Staffing, p3.

<sup>2076</sup> Report on Staff Training Programme held at Fareham House 14/15/16 May 1979, JC Watson, Principal, Girls Home Palmerston North, 20/05/79, Fareham Staffing, p3.

<sup>2077</sup> Report on Staff Training Programme held at Fareham House 14/15/16 May 1979, JC Watson, Principal, Girls Home Palmerston North, 20/05/79, Fareham Staffing, p3.

<sup>2078</sup> Report on Staff Training Programme held at Fareham House 14/15/16 May 1979, JC Watson, Principal, Girls Home Palmerston North, 20/05/79, Fareham Staffing, p3.

<sup>2079</sup> Report on Staff Training Programme held at Fareham House 14/15/16 May 1979, JC Watson, Principal, Girls Home Palmerston North, 20/05/79, Fareham Staffing, p3.

<sup>2080</sup> Report on Staff Training Programme held at Fareham House 14/15/16 May 1979, JC Watson, Principal, Girls Home Palmerston North, 20/05/79, Fareham Staffing, p3.

<sup>2081</sup> Report on Staff Training Programme held at Fareham House 14/15/16 May 1979, JC Watson, Principal, Girls Home Palmerston North, 20/05/79, Fareham Staffing, p3.

<sup>2082</sup> Report on Staff Training Programme held at Fareham House 14/15/16 May 1979, JC Watson, Principal, Girls Home Palmerston North, 20/05/79, Fareham Staffing, p4.

<sup>2083</sup> Memo, L R Silcock (Inspector Supervising Special Education) to District Senior Inspector of Schools, [REDACTED] Fareham Staffing, 2005035542.

<sup>2084</sup> Memo, L R Silcock (Inspector Supervising Special Education) to District Senior Inspector of Schools, [REDACTED] Fareham Staffing, 2005035542.

<sup>2085</sup> Memo, L R Silcock (Inspector Supervising Special Education) to District Senior Inspector of Schools, [REDACTED] Fareham Staffing, 2005035542.

<sup>2086</sup>

<sup>2087</sup>

<sup>2088</sup>

██████████ reported that on 18/02/79 the girls rioted and that it took Police presence to restore order.<sup>2089</sup> ██████████ stated that "██████████, according to a reliable source, was not in control of the situation – he hit girls and banged their heads against the wall."<sup>2090</sup> ██████████ reportedly asked a junior staff member which three girls should be taken to the Masterton Police cells, ignored the recommendation that three of the "heavies" go, and sent three of the "babies" off in the Paddy Wagon to the cells.<sup>2091</sup> They returned the next day.<sup>2092</sup> It was noted that in future girls were not to be placed in Police cells as it was contrary to the instructions in a circular memorandum.<sup>2093</sup>

██████████ was concerned that no mention of the night's events had been written in the Official Day book, and believed it should have been.<sup>2094</sup> Staff were informed that if there was any more trouble the Police were to be called and to let them "take over".<sup>2095</sup>

██████████ believed ██████████ had lost the respect of the girls and had "lost" the Institution months ago when Graham Booth, Housemaster, left.<sup>2096</sup> ██████████ described the girls as very unsettled and despite cautioning them, was fearful there would be more trouble, including assaults on certain staff and a fire (as the girls had access to petrol).<sup>2097</sup>

On ██████████ there was a fire and ten girls were taken to the Masterton Police Station.<sup>2098</sup> ██████████ believed that the spate of trouble was directed solely at ██████████.<sup>2099</sup>

In ██████████ recognised that making use of the Police offer to use their custody was against a previous Director General instruction, however in a crisis where he had no secure facility or no immediate access to one he was apt to use what was offered at the time". He stated that Fareham staff stayed with the girls in custody on the second occasion and on both times the minimum time was spent by girls in the cells.<sup>2100</sup>

██████████ it was agreed that he would cease duty in March 1979.<sup>2102</sup>

In ██████████ the Principal recommended Fareham close for three weeks at Christmas and the two weeks in May and August so that the majority of the annual leave may be taken then.<sup>2103</sup>

2089  
2090  
2091  
2092  
2093  
2094  
2095  
2096  
2097  
2098  
2099

### Individual staff members

In [REDACTED], Principal reported that there was only one girl who he had ever needed to physically man-handle and had to do so three times.<sup>2104</sup> On one of these occasions [REDACTED] had to physically carry her to the secure room.<sup>2105</sup> He reported that some workmen saw him doing this and it was believed that there was nothing else he could have done.<sup>2106</sup> [REDACTED] also reported to A Blumer (position unknown) that a resident told other residents that [REDACTED] loved her as he did his wife and that he told her all about sex. Blumer told him this kind of talk was inevitable with adolescent girls and advised him to ignore it as much as possible.<sup>2107</sup>

In [REDACTED] a JG Elliott, DCWO informed the Superintendent that some foster parents mentioned that a friend who had been painting at Fareham had seen a girl being pulled by the hair up the stairway.<sup>2108</sup> Elliott approached the painter about the incident but he did not wish to talk about it because, in Elliott's opinion he did not want to be involved in a full scale inquiry.<sup>2109</sup> The painter believed that the girls would be "safe" because there were many tradesmen around the institution and said "anyway, no man should hit a woman prior to terminating the interview..."<sup>2110</sup> The DCWO did not support any suggestion that the Principal pulled girls hair as a disciplinary measure or at all acted improperly.<sup>2111</sup> Another document makes reference to staff, not just one person, allegedly pulling girls around by the hair.<sup>2112</sup>

In 1972 [REDACTED] and [REDACTED] Matron's Assistants were asked for their resignation by Miss Somerville, Acting Principal after refusing to walk to Featherston with girls to do shopping as they felt the request was unreasonable.<sup>2113</sup> They resigned and left immediately.<sup>2114</sup> The Inspector stated [REDACTED] as not having been a strong member of staff.<sup>2115</sup>

The Principal told the Inspector Mrs [REDACTED] Matron was his one staff problem as she had a negative attitude to the girls, which they sensed, and which undermined her work with them. According to the Inspector [REDACTED] was responsible, contrary to instructions, for putting a girl in security without the Principal's prior permission.<sup>2116</sup>

The 1977 Inspection report noted that the Principal, Mr G Dawber was not satisfied with [REDACTED], who he believed lacked initiative.<sup>2117</sup> The Inspectors also reported that [REDACTED] Housemaster, was proving a problem. He was officially reprimanded for speeding in Fareham's minibus and for allegedly speaking rudely to a member of the public who confronted him about this. According to the Inspectors

<sup>2108</sup> Report, JG Elliott, DCWO to Superintendent, [REDACTED], Fareham Incidents 2005035542, p1.

<sup>2109</sup> Report, JG Elliott, DCWO to Superintendent, [REDACTED], Fareham Incidents 2005035542, p3.

<sup>2110</sup> Report, JG Elliott, DCWO to Superintendent, [REDACTED], Fareham Incidents 2005035542, p2.

<sup>2111</sup> Minute Sheet, illegible to Mr Reilly, [REDACTED], Fareham Incidents 2005035542.

<sup>2112</sup> Minute Sheet, E Feist, [REDACTED] Fareham Incidents 2035542.

<sup>2113</sup> Note for file, P Bygate, Inspector to Mr Anderson, Mr Reilly, Miss Feist, Miss Goldsbury, Fareham Staffing 2005035542, p1.

<sup>2114</sup> Note for file, P Bygate, Inspector to Mr Anderson, Mr Reilly, Miss Feist, Miss Goldsbury, Fareham Staffing 2005035542, p1.

<sup>2115</sup> Note for file, P Bygate, Inspector to Mr Anderson, Mr Reilly, Miss Feist, Miss Goldsbury, Fareham Staffing 2005035542, p1.

<sup>2116</sup> Inspection Report, A Peek, 3-4 December 1977, Fareham Reports 200503558, p3.

<sup>2117</sup> Inspection Report, JB Frost, A Peek, 9 June 1977, Fareham Reports 200503558, p2.

█ had a brusque manner and was short-tempered at times.<sup>2118</sup> On the day the Inspectors visited █ had pushed one of the girls, which the Principal had to talk to him seriously about.<sup>2119</sup> Dawber was to ensure this incident was recorded on █'s file, and Assistant Director Residential Services and Senior Institutions Officer were made aware of the incident.<sup>2120</sup>

In █ █ told DGB of a "show-down" he had with the Assistant Teacher of a joint libel action he and a staff member had instructed their solicitors to take against the other".<sup>2121</sup> █ later dropped this action.<sup>2122</sup>

## Meetings

At an unknown time a psychologist proposed the staff training programme involve staff meetings of all available staff.<sup>2123</sup> The psychologist believed that Fareham ought to provide adequate training of the non-professional staff alongside the professional staff.<sup>2124</sup> He believed non-professional staff had a lot of opportunity to operate therapeutically on the children in their day to day contact and that they played an important role in the development of the girls.<sup>2125</sup>

In 1966 staff meetings were attended by Matron's staff and supervisory staff.<sup>2126</sup> The Principal said this was the one opportunity available to train staff towards a better understanding of the children.<sup>2127</sup>

In 1973 the Inspector reported that there was weekly meeting, attended by all staff, including teachers.<sup>2128</sup> Weekly staff meetings also took place in 1980 and there was a case conference once a month.<sup>2129</sup> Staff supervision happened irregularly because of the absence of an Assistant Principal.<sup>2130</sup>

## Casework

In 1977 each girl was assigned to a caseworker who was responsible for "loco-parental" involvement and report work, among other things.<sup>2131</sup>

The 1977 Inspection Report noted that the institution was running smoothly and that both the Principal and Assistant Principal were keen to develop regular casework supervision of staff, which although it had begun, was hampered by the problem of finding a room in which conversations could not be overheard.<sup>2132</sup>

The 1980 Inspection Report stated that on admission a girl was assigned to a staff member who became responsible for casework with her.<sup>2133</sup> Because of low staff

<sup>2118</sup> Inspection Report, JB Frost, A Peek, 9 June █, Fareham Reports 200503558, p2.

<sup>2119</sup> Inspection Report, JB Frost, A Peek, 9 June █, Fareham Reports 200503558, p2.

<sup>2120</sup> Inspection Report, JB Frost, A Peek, 9 June █, Fareham Reports 200503558, p2.

<sup>2121</sup> Minute sheet, DGR to Mr Anderson, █, Fareham Staffing 2005035542.

<sup>2122</sup> Minute sheet, DGR to Mr Anderson, █, Fareham Staffing 2005035542.

<sup>2123</sup> Report, Staff Training at Fareham House, D Brown, Psychologist, Fareham Staffing 2005035542, p1.

<sup>2124</sup> Report, Staff Training at Fareham House, D Brown, Psychologist, Fareham Staffing 2005035542, p1.

<sup>2125</sup> Report, Staff Training at Fareham House, D Brown, Psychologist, Fareham Staffing 2005035542, p1.

<sup>2126</sup> Letter, R Bell, Principal to the Superintendent 18/02/66, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p2.

<sup>2127</sup> Letter, R Bell, Principal to the Superintendent 18/02/66, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p2.

<sup>2128</sup> Inspection Report, A Peek, 3-4 December 1973, Fareham Reports 200503558, p2.

<sup>2129</sup> Annual Report 1980, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p2.

<sup>2130</sup> Annual Report 1980, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p2.

<sup>2131</sup> Questionnaire to Principal, Fareham House, 01/09/77, Fareham Profile, 2005035541, p4.

<sup>2132</sup> Inspection Report, JB Frost, A Peek, 9 June 1977, Fareham Reports 200503558, p2.

<sup>2133</sup> Inspection Report, JA Blair, M Todd, 1-9 May 1980, Fareham Reports 2005035538, p4.

numbers Resident Social Workers, Assistant Residential Social Workers and the cook were given this responsibility.<sup>2134</sup> There was no fixed routine about how regularly a girl was seen by her caseworker, but it was approximately once a week.<sup>2135</sup> It was the Assistant Principal's responsibility to supervise the casework of staff, but while this position was vacant the Principal attempted to do this.<sup>2136</sup> The Inspectors found varying standards of casework and recording.<sup>2137</sup> The Principal planned to hold a session on report writing during the annual staff training week.<sup>2138</sup>

In 1980 an unknown author stated that background support of visiting staff including psychologists and him/herself was inadequate to provide support on staff management and training aspects.<sup>2139</sup> This writer also believed there should be a case conference system on each girl every six to eight weeks which should involve themselves, the psychologist, Fareham staff and Mr Hooykaas (position unknown).<sup>2140</sup>

## Training

In 1970 a newspaper suggested that one of Fareham's strengths was that its staff were "not trained professional social workers as such and therefore are not clouded in their approach by professionalism or institutionalism".<sup>2141</sup>

After the residents were discharged from the institution in 1973 a training programme was run by the Principal, assisted by the Director and Tutor from the Residential Staff Training School at Kohitere.<sup>2142</sup>

In 1974 the Inspector reported that internal staff training was under the supervision of the Assistant Principal.<sup>2143</sup> In the May holidays some Fareham staff visited Kohitere, the RSTS, Hokio and the Palmerston North Girls' Home.<sup>2144</sup> The Inspector said that this was very valuable as few of the staff had any idea about the other institutions.<sup>2145</sup> A similar visit was planned to Miramar Girls' Home and Epuni Boys Home. The Inspector suggested that combined training be undertaken with staff at the Greytown Reception Centre.<sup>2146</sup> Some staff attended courses at the RSTS.<sup>2147</sup>

The Assistant Principal and the Housemistress attended staff training courses in 1974.<sup>2148</sup> According to Goldsbury strong emphasis was put on the importance of staff training during this year.<sup>2149</sup> Goldsbury believed the organised tour of Social

<sup>2134</sup> Inspection Report, JA Blair, M Todd, 1-9 May 1980, Fareham Reports 2005035538, p4.

<sup>2135</sup> Inspection Report, JA Blair, M Todd, 1-9 May 1980, Fareham Reports 2005035538, p4.

<sup>2136</sup> Inspection Report, JA Blair, M Todd, 1-9 May 1980, Fareham Reports 2005035538, p4.

<sup>2137</sup> Inspection Report, JA Blair, M Todd, 1-9 May 1980, Fareham Reports 2005035538, p4.

<sup>2138</sup> Inspection Report, JA Blair, M Todd, 1-9 May 1980, Fareham Reports 2005035538, p4.

<sup>2139</sup> Report about Residential Inspectors Meeting 25 September 1980, Illegible, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p2.

<sup>2140</sup> Report about Residential Inspectors Meeting 25 September 1980, Illegible, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p2.

<sup>2141</sup> "Fareham House – Where Love and Care Thrive", *Wairarapa Times Age*, 18/09/70, Fareham Profile 2005035542.

<sup>2142</sup> Report to the Minister of Social Welfare, Fareham House, 15/06/73, Fareham Profile 2005035542.

<sup>2143</sup> Inspection Report, A Peek, 8-9 July 1974, Fareham Reports 200503558, p3.

<sup>2144</sup> Inspection Report, A Peek, 8-9 July 1974, Fareham Reports 200503558, p3.

<sup>2145</sup> Inspection Report, A Peek, 8-9 July 1974, Fareham Reports 200503558, p3.

<sup>2146</sup> Inspection Report, A Peek, 8-9 July 1974, Fareham Reports 200503558, p3.

<sup>2147</sup> Inspection Report, A Peek, 8-9 July 1974, Fareham Reports 200503558, p3.

<sup>2148</sup> Annual Report 1974, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p2.

<sup>2149</sup> Annual Report 1974, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p2.

Welfare Institutions in May was a valuable experience.<sup>2150</sup> On another occasion a group were taken to Wellington Institutions and to see Head Office.<sup>2151</sup>

In 1979 there was a three day staff training programme held at Fareham.<sup>2152</sup> One of the things it focused on was the liaison with local schools and community groups.<sup>2153</sup> It also focused on the "Teaching Parent" role for institution staff, the Wechsler Intelligence for children, the criteria and rationale of the behaviour categories used in the behaviour programme at the Girls' Home, with emphasis placed on the analysis of behaviour problems, and methods of teaching alternative pro-social and adaptive behaviours.<sup>2154</sup> Alternative "systems" in institutions were discussed.<sup>2155</sup> Training also focused on behavioural intervention which involved examination of issues relating to the withdrawal of basic rights of children.<sup>2156</sup> Personality testing, the nature of emotional disturbance, classifying "disturbed" behaviour, report writing, and the use of time out and secure facilities.<sup>2157</sup>

In 1980 there was no regular staff training at Fareham, but the Principal who recently attended a "Training for Trainers" course, was planning to institute a block programme for five days.<sup>2158</sup> This programme was to receive "input" by R.S.T.S staff and staff were to spend two days in the Masterton office accompanying Social Workers in their visiting.<sup>2159</sup> According to the Inspectors Miss Worfolk was committed to training and was encouraging staff to attend in-service training courses, which several had done.<sup>2160</sup>

In 1980 the Inspectors noted that there were no staff training record cards and suggested to the Principal that these be set up and that they should show a record of each staff member's academic qualifications and of all courses attended.<sup>2161</sup>

## Manuals

In 1975 the Principal, Assistant Principal and Clerk were given desk files to help them with day to day procedures. A visit revealed the files were barely referred to.<sup>2162</sup>

According to the 1980 Inspection Report copies of the Residential Social Workers Manual were held at Fareham but there were no copies of the Public Service Manual

<sup>2150</sup> Annual Report 1974, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p2.

<sup>2151</sup> Annual Report 1974, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p2.

<sup>2152</sup> Report on Staff Training Programme held at Fareham House 14/15/16 May 1979, JC Watson, Principal, Girls Home Palmerston North, 20/05/79, Fareham Staffing, p1.

<sup>2153</sup> Report on Staff Training Programme held at Fareham House 14/15/16 May 1979, JC Watson, Principal, Girls Home Palmerston North, 20/05/79, Fareham Staffing, p1.

<sup>2154</sup> Report on Staff Training Programme held at Fareham House 14/15/16 May 1979, JC Watson, Principal, Girls Home Palmerston North, 20/05/79, Fareham Staffing, p1.

<sup>2155</sup> Report on Staff Training Programme held at Fareham House 14/15/16 May 1979, JC Watson, Principal, Girls Home Palmerston North, 20/05/79, Fareham Staffing, p1.

<sup>2156</sup> Report on Staff Training Programme held at Fareham House 14/15/16 May 1979, JC Watson, Principal, Girls Home Palmerston North, 20/05/79, Fareham Staffing, p2.

<sup>2157</sup> Report on Staff Training Programme held at Fareham House 14/15/16 May 1979, JC Watson, Principal, Girls Home Palmerston North, 20/05/79, Fareham Staffing, p2.

<sup>2158</sup> Inspection Report, JA Blair, M Todd, 1-9 May 1980, Fareham Reports 2005035538, p2.

<sup>2159</sup> Inspection Report, JA Blair, M Todd, 1-9 May 1980, Fareham Reports 2005035538, p2.

<sup>2160</sup> Inspection Report, JA Blair, M Todd, 1-9 May 1980, Fareham Reports 2005035538, p2.

<sup>2161</sup> Inspection Report, JA Blair, M Todd, 1-9 May 1980, Fareham Reports 2005035538, p2.

<sup>2162</sup> Memo, JG Elliott, Director of Department of Social Welfare to Director-General of Social Welfare, 07/08/75, Fareham Staffing 2005035542, p1.

or the Code of Working Conditions. The Inspectors believed it was desirable that these were held at Fareham too.<sup>2163</sup>

The 1980 Inspectors noted that the Fareham Manual, while useful, needed to be updated.<sup>2164</sup> The Principal was unsatisfied with the internal staff training.<sup>2165</sup> There was a week of staff training which was attended by RSTS staff.<sup>2166</sup> Some staff attended departmental courses.<sup>2167</sup>

## Schooling

At an unknown date, possibly in the mid 1960s, it was reported that originally children who attended the school were of Primary School ability level, however many of the children attending when the report was written were capable of working at a secondary school level.<sup>2168</sup> The Senior Teacher recommended the use of Correspondence School for all third and fourth form pupils, as well as some others,<sup>2169</sup> believing that this, together with allowing children to attend an outside college would lighten the burden regarding catering for a full programme.<sup>2170</sup> Sutherland identified benefits in favour of sending suitable children to Kuranui College.<sup>2171</sup>

In 1966 the Principal reported that school hours were extended to 3.30pm to incorporate a one hour rest period at lunch time.<sup>2172</sup> During this period teachers gave individual tutoring.<sup>2173</sup> It was ensured that a child missed only one rest period in a week to participate in this programme.<sup>2174</sup>

The Senior Teacher said in 1969 that "we are committed by policy to a continual turnover, which fluctuates between 60% and 80% per year, causing conflict with regard to total purpose".<sup>2175</sup> He believed if Fareham was to operate as a home substitute situation, it was unnatural to remove children from this setting soon after they have begun to appreciate it and stabilised.<sup>2176</sup> The Principal believed the school was running efficiently.<sup>2177</sup>

In 1970 the Principal believed that the school was equipped to take girls through to a high degree of academic achievement.<sup>2178</sup> Girls wore uniforms.<sup>2179</sup>

<sup>2163</sup> Inspection Report, JA Blair, M Todd, 1-9 May 1980, Fareham Reports 2005035538, p6.

<sup>2164</sup> Inspection Report, JA Blair, M Todd, 1-9 May 1980, Fareham Reports 2005035538, p6.

<sup>2165</sup> Annual Report 1980, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p2.

<sup>2166</sup> Annual Report 1980, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p2.

<sup>2167</sup> Annual Report 1980, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p3.

<sup>2168</sup> Report, EG Sutherland(?), Fareham Health 2005035542.

<sup>2169</sup> Report, EG Sutherland(?), Fareham Health 2005035542.

<sup>2170</sup> Report, EG Sutherland(?), Fareham Health 2005035542.

<sup>2171</sup> Report, EG Sutherland(?), Fareham Health 2005035542.

<sup>2172</sup> Letter, R Bell, Principal to the Superintendent 18/02/66, Fareham Reports 2005035542.

<sup>2173</sup> Letter, R Bell, Principal to the Superintendent 18/02/66, Fareham Reports 2005035542.

<sup>2174</sup> Letter, R Bell, Principal to the Superintendent 18/02/66, Fareham Reports 2005035542.

<sup>2175</sup> Annual Report 1969, Fareham Reports 2005035542.

<sup>2176</sup> Annual Report 1969, Fareham Reports 2005035542.

<sup>2177</sup> Annual Report 1969, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p4.

<sup>2178</sup> "Fareham House – Where Love and Care Thrive", *Wairarapa Times Age*, 18/09/70, Fareham Profile 2005035542.

<sup>2179</sup> "Fareham House – Where Love and Care Thrive", *Wairarapa Times Age*, 18/09/70, Fareham Profile 2005035542.

Around 1971 all girls at Fareham attended school full time.<sup>2180</sup> Classes were small and there was a manual training room for cooking and sewing classes.<sup>2181</sup>

In 1971 programmes of work were thoughtfully devised and routines were in operation which gave security to disturbed girls, according to the Principal.<sup>2182</sup> The 1971 Inspector Supervising Special Education felt that it was an appropriate time to review the school scheme and to restate aims, policy statements and programmes suitable to present requirements and conditions at the school.<sup>2183</sup> The Inspector suggested alterations to the reading and language programmes.<sup>2184</sup> The school asked the DCWO to purchase reading material in response.<sup>2185</sup>

In 1971 an Inspector noted that under the guidance of Mr K J Munro, Senior Teacher, the school was fulfilling an important role in the rehabilitation of delinquent girls and the tone of the school was satisfactory.<sup>2186</sup>

In 1975 the Senior Teacher supported a teacher's request for funding to run an Outdoor Education programme for a class of twelve which he believed would benefit the girls in many ways which he outlined.

In 1976 Doctor AG Frazer believed that a considerable number of Fareham children were several years retarded in their reading and other subjects and that this was "a function of the social depravation rather than in their basic intelligence".<sup>2187</sup>

In 1977 the Senior Teacher asked the Director General for authority to take his class on an eleven day educational trip to a marae in Northland.<sup>2188</sup> The Principal recommended approval be given.<sup>2189</sup>

The 1977 Inspectors noted that there was a close relationship between school and institution and were impressed by the resident's enthusiasm towards their homework.<sup>2190</sup>

In 1977 Fareham made applications for school exemptions if there were exceptional circumstances justifying it.<sup>2191</sup> There was a sex education programme that ran in conjunction with the visiting district nurse.<sup>2192</sup>

In 1979 the Head Teacher reported that learning and teaching were difficult because of distractions provided by the domestic upheavals of the time, and that school programmes appeared to break down.<sup>2193</sup> Despite this the school provided a stable environment for the girls, according to him.<sup>2194</sup>

<sup>2180</sup> Fareham Guide for Girls, Fareham Profile 2005035542.

<sup>2181</sup> Fareham Guide for Girls, Fareham Profile 2005035542.

<sup>2182</sup> Report on Fareham House School, AQ Bruce, Inspector, 28/06/71, Fareham Reports 2005035542.

<sup>2183</sup> Report on Fareham House School, AQ Bruce, Inspector, 28/06/71, Fareham Reports 2005035542.

<sup>2184</sup> Letter, Illegible, Senior Teacher, R B Kildey, Principal to District Child Welfare Officer, Fareham School, 2005005603.

<sup>2185</sup> Letter, Illegible, Senior Teacher, R B Kildey, Principal to District Child Welfare Officer, Fareham School, 2005005603.

<sup>2186</sup> Report on Fareham House School, AQ Bruce, Inspector, 28/06/71, Fareham Reports 2005035542.

<sup>2187</sup> Note for Psychiatric File, AG Frazer, 00/10/76, Fareham Health 2005035542, p2.

<sup>2188</sup> Letter, PP Heath, Senior Teacher to G Dawber, Principal, 17/03/77, Fareham School 5005035542.

<sup>2189</sup> Memo, GA Dawber, Principal to Director General, 17/03/77, Fareham School 5005035542.

<sup>2190</sup> Inspection Report, JB Frost, A Peek, 9 June 1977, Fareham Reports 2005035558, p3.

<sup>2191</sup> Questionnaire to Principal, Fareham House, 01/09/77, Fareham Profile, 2005035541, p3.

<sup>2192</sup> Questionnaire to Principal, Fareham House, 01/09/77, Fareham Profile, 2005035541, p3.

<sup>2193</sup> Annual Report 1979, Fareham Reports 2005035542.

<sup>2194</sup> Annual Report 1979, Fareham Reports 2005035542.



There was a radical change in the school programme in 1979. It was individualised because of the different levels of ability in the school.<sup>2195</sup> It became very structured but with enough fluidity of choice for independent students not to feel restricted. A system of points leading to incentives was introduced.<sup>2196</sup> The aim of the programme was that each student would come to value their studies, and to some extent the Head Teacher believed this was occurring.<sup>2197</sup> There were no exams or tests unless requested, except for assessment testing.<sup>2198</sup> Emphasis was on effort made rather than cleverness.<sup>2199</sup>

There was a Domestic Science programme in 1979 that included cooking and sewing.<sup>2200</sup> A system of 5 off-site outings was organised which related to schoolwork, including Kokiri Marae and Parliament.<sup>2201</sup> Three visitors, including an actress visited the school.<sup>2202</sup> A study group went to Kokiri Marae weekly, and many girls voluntarily attended daily Maori language classes.<sup>2203</sup>

One person thought in 1980 that the school was unable to cope with bright children.<sup>2204</sup> The school situation was geared for the primary and intermediate level only and the commentator thought there should be a definitive cut off point in ages of children being accepted for Fareham.<sup>2205</sup>

In 1980 the daily programme was that of a normal school for average students and remedial for slow students - with the difference being a slower pace and more individual counselling for remedial students.<sup>2206</sup> The Head Teacher believed that as a result there was a notable increase in the standard of study and commented that a large group of girls was returning in 1981 because they want to rather than because they had to.<sup>2207</sup>

By combining a set programme with a freedom of presentation and expression of study any girls discovered a new strength, for example cartooning, poetry, craftwork and artwork – according to the Head Teacher.<sup>2208</sup> Language, maths, science, home economics and art were taught in 1980.<sup>2209</sup>

## School Staffing

In March 1965 there was one assistant teacher but no Head Teacher.<sup>2210</sup>

Because of the continuous staff shortage in 1966 DG Reilly considered it more important that the two teachers should work after school each taking a group of children, rather than with individuals in the middle of the day, during the rest period

<sup>2195</sup> Annual Report 1979, Fareham Reports 2005035542.

<sup>2196</sup> Annual Report 1979, Fareham Reports 2005035542.

<sup>2197</sup> Annual Report 1979, Fareham Reports 2005035542.

<sup>2198</sup> Annual Report 1979, Fareham Reports 2005035542.

<sup>2199</sup> Annual Report 1979, Fareham Reports 2005035542.

<sup>2200</sup> Annual Report 1979, Fareham Reports 2005035542.

<sup>2201</sup> Annual Report 1979, Fareham Reports 2005035542.

<sup>2202</sup> Annual Report 1979, Fareham Reports 2005035542.

<sup>2203</sup> Annual Report 1979, Fareham Reports 2005035542.

<sup>2204</sup> Report about Residential Inspectors Meeting 25 September 1980, Illegible, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p2.

<sup>2205</sup> Report about Residential Inspectors Meeting 25 September 1980, Illegible, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p2.

<sup>2206</sup> Annual Report 1980, Fareham Reports 2005035542.

<sup>2207</sup> Annual Report 1980, Fareham Reports 2005035542.

<sup>2208</sup> Annual Report 1980, Fareham Reports 2005035542.

<sup>2209</sup> Annual Report 1980, Fareham Reports 2005035542.

<sup>2210</sup> Circular Memorandum 1965/22, 17/03/65, Fareham Staff, F5000005774764.

as this would relieve the Principal and Assistant Principal of some of their burdens.<sup>2211</sup>

In 1969 the Senior Teacher said that staffing was stable,<sup>2212</sup> although a reliever was filling a position which, although advertised, had not been filled since 1968.<sup>2213</sup> The Principal believed it was likely that a new school house would attract a permanent Assistant Master.<sup>2214</sup>

Because of the large proportion of Fareham "graduates" that were committed to mental hospital a strong case was made for an additional full-time assistant in 1968, according to the Senior Teacher, who in late 1969 was waiting on official recognition of this.<sup>2215</sup> According to the Senior Teacher, data about the proportion of "graduates" committed to mental hospital was not permitted to be included in the case made for the extra teacher, because the Principal regarded it as "classified information".<sup>2216</sup> The Senior Teacher believed that if Fareham was to continue in its present capacity, "adequate provision including staffing, staff training and direct expert professional oversight" was necessary.<sup>2217</sup>

The Senior Teacher believed that if the criticisms he made concerning the degree of disturbance of admissions, the programme and staff and expert oversight issues were not rectified the continual stress on staff could not fail to take its toll.<sup>2218</sup>

In 1970 there were two experienced teachers.<sup>2219</sup>

In 1971 the Inspector reported that it was not possible to fill the permanent assistant's position for considerable time and that an uncertified teacher, who was soon to resign, had given good service for over two years.<sup>2220</sup>

In 1971 the school was an integral part of the institution, according to the Inspector, who believed full co-operation and communication between both sides of it was essential. Thus he recommended that staff meeting minutes be supplied to the school; that progress reviews of pupils would be more effective when the school was represented in the discussion, that decisions regarding school placement to Kuranui College or other schools or institutions always be the subject of consultation between the Principal and Senior Teacher; that regular time each week, separate from the meetings with all institution staff, for Principal and Senior Teacher to discuss policy and administrative matters.<sup>2221</sup>

In 1972 the Director General gave approval for the teachers to be employed for extra supervisory duties for up to six hours per week.<sup>2222</sup> The same year an Inspector stated that two new teachers including the senior teachers started and that they found it difficult to gain control.<sup>2223</sup> There were three teachers in total – one was

<sup>2211</sup> Memo, DG Reilly to Mr Anderson, 10/03/66, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p1.

<sup>2212</sup> Annual Report 1969, Fareham Reports 2005035542.

<sup>2213</sup> Annual Report 1969, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p4.

<sup>2214</sup> Annual Report 1969, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p4.

<sup>2215</sup> Annual Report 1969, Fareham Reports 2005035542.

<sup>2216</sup> Annual Report 1969, Fareham Reports 2005035542.

<sup>2217</sup> Annual Report 1969, Fareham Reports 2005035542.

<sup>2218</sup> Annual Report 1969, Fareham Reports 2005035542.

<sup>2219</sup> "Fareham House – Where Love and Care Thrive", *Wairarapa Times Age*, 18/09/70, Fareham Profile 2005035542.

<sup>2220</sup> Report on Fareham House School, AQ Bruce, Inspector, 28/06/71, Fareham Reports 2005035542.

<sup>2221</sup> Report on Fareham House School, AQ Bruce, Inspector, 28/06/71, Fareham Reports 2005035542.

<sup>2222</sup> Memo, P Bygate, for Director-General to Principal, Fareham, 12/04/72, Fareham Staffing 2006005603.

<sup>2223</sup> Note for file, P Bygate, Inspector to Mr Anderson, Mr Reilly, Miss Feist, Miss Goldsbury, 08/03/72, Fareham Staffing 2005035542, p3.

there mistakenly and was to leave soon.<sup>2224</sup> That year the Principal invited a teacher to do extra supervisory duties, which would involve him taking pottery classes, which the Inspector believed would be very helpful to the girls.<sup>2225</sup>

In 1973 the Inspector reported that all girls attended school, and that because of the absence of a second teacher, the roll was kept to 12 students.<sup>2226</sup> According to the Inspector the Senior Teacher was very dissatisfied with what he was able to achieve in this year.<sup>2227</sup> It was hoped that a second teacher would start in the third term.<sup>2228</sup>

The 1973 Inspector said Mr Murdock, Senior Teacher, was an experienced teacher of disturbed children and a social worker and got the impression he was well in command of his job.<sup>2229</sup> In this year there was one teacher at the school.<sup>2230</sup>

While the Institution was closed during 1973 both teaching positions were vacant.<sup>2231</sup> Difficulty was encountered in trying to fill one of these positions.<sup>2232</sup>

In 1974 there was a part time Home Science Teacher, and approval was received to extend the time given to cooking and sewing.<sup>2233</sup> In 1974 it was necessary to restrict admissions because trouble was being experienced finding a teaching vacancy.<sup>2234</sup> A second teacher was hired that year.<sup>2235</sup>

Staffing ratio was 1:12 in 1975 and a third teacher was unlikely to be approved for a considerable amount of time.<sup>2236</sup> The Principal requested authority to hire a second reliever as staff had accumulated a lot of annual leave which could lead to a shortage of staff if they chose to take it at once.<sup>2237</sup>

In 1975 the Senior Teacher recommended that it would be best for everyone if the roll was limited to 18 first term for the benefit of the recently appointed Assistant Teacher. This would also enable both teachers to visit other institutions and would allow them to develop the programme in light of the work being done in other institutions.<sup>2238</sup>

In 1976 Doctor AG Frazer noted that the teachers were under pressure to provide remedial schooling and believed there was an urgent need to employ a part-time remedial teacher.<sup>2239</sup> A visitor who visited Fareham on 21/09/77 reported that the senior teacher and the Principal felt an extra teacher was needed.<sup>2240</sup>

<sup>2224</sup> Note for file, P Bygate, Inspector to Mr Anderson, Mr Reilly, Miss Feist, Miss Goldsbury, 08/03/72, Fareham Staffing 2005035542, p3.

<sup>2225</sup> Minute sheet, P Bygate, Inspector to Mr Reilly, 30/03/72, Fareham Staffing 2005035542, p3.

<sup>2226</sup> Inspection Report, A Peek, 8-9 July 1974, Fareham Reports 200503558, p2.

<sup>2227</sup> Inspection Report, A Peek, 8-9 July 1974, Fareham Reports 200503558, p2.

<sup>2228</sup> Inspection Report, A Peek, 8-9 July 1974, Fareham Reports 200503558, p2.

<sup>2229</sup> Inspection Report, A Peek, 3-4 December 1973, Fareham Reports 200503558, p3.

<sup>2230</sup> Letter, AQ Bruce, Inspector (Special Education) to Director General, 18/07/73, Fareham Profile

<sup>2231</sup> Report to the Minister of Social Welfare, Fareham House, 15/06/73, Fareham Profile 2005035542.

<sup>2232</sup> Minute sheet, A Peek, Inspector to Mr Reilly, Fareham Staffing 2005035542.

<sup>2233</sup> Annual Report 1974, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p4.

<sup>2234</sup> Memo, PJ Scahill, Principal to Director General, 01/02/74, Fareham School 2005035542.

<sup>2235</sup> Annual Report 1974, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p4.

<sup>2236</sup> Minute sheet, Additional Classrooms, 13/06/76, Fareham Profile 2006005604.

<sup>2237</sup> Letter, GA Dawber, Principal to Director, 21/02/78, Fareham Staffing 2005035542.

<sup>2238</sup> Memo, WT Murdock, Senior Teacher to Principal, Fareham, Fareham Admissions 2005035541.

<sup>2239</sup> Note for Psychiatric File, AG Frazer, 00/10/76, Fareham Health 2005035542, p2.

<sup>2240</sup> Minute Sheet, Fareham House, illegible to Mr Ball, visit 21 September 1977, Fareham Reports 2005035542.

Doctor Frazer expressed concern in 1977 that the school was not catering for the girls remedial education needs and believed the school needed a part time remedial teacher.<sup>2241</sup> “However, the Principal had been told by Len Silcock that Fareham would not get any more hours. A staff member suggested “we” should pursue this and do something “ourselves” in terms of after school coaching who wish it under CAA.<sup>2242</sup>

In 1977 there were two teachers and between eight and 12 students in each class.<sup>2243</sup>

In 1980 two staff left the senior teacher position after experiencing difficulty with it, resulting in there being a shortage of staff for a portion of the year.<sup>2244</sup> According to the 1980 Inspection report, the Senior Teacher position was vacant for six months and because no other teaching staff were available, it was necessary for house staff to assist in the classroom.<sup>2245</sup> In the School Report for 1980 it was noted that this, combined with problems experienced in terms one and two disrupted many girls’ daily programme.<sup>2246</sup>

During 1980 staffing changed by almost 25 percent, which had little effect on the residents, according to the Principal.<sup>2247</sup> Appointments took at least four months to fill which meant relievers had to be hired.<sup>2248</sup>

According to staff in 1980 liaison between home and school improved with the recent senior staff changes.<sup>2249</sup> The Senior Teacher met regularly with the Principal each morning, and afternoon if necessary.<sup>2250</sup> Casework plans for a girl’s schooling, prepared 6 weeks after admission by teaching staff, were shared with House staff.<sup>2251</sup>

In this year the Director of Residential services said that Fareham had been “dogged” by inadequate teaching staff.<sup>2252</sup> It was commented in 1980 that none of the teaching staff at Fareham had additional qualifications or training in specialised education<sup>2253</sup> and that the history of teaching at Fareham was an absolute disgrace.<sup>2254</sup>

Both teaching positions were expected to be vacant from the beginning of 1981.<sup>2255</sup>

<sup>2241</sup> Minute Sheet, Re Inspection Report – Fareham, A Frazer to M T Ball, 22/07/77, Fareham Reports 200503558.

<sup>2242</sup> Minute Sheet, Fareham House, illegible to Mr Ball, visit 21 September 1977, Fareham Reports 2005035542.

<sup>2243</sup> Questionnaire to Principal, Fareham House, 01/09/77, Fareham Profile, 2005035541, p2.

<sup>2244</sup> Annual Report 1980, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p2.

<sup>2245</sup> Inspection Report, JA Blair, M Todd, 1-9 May 1980, Fareham Reports 2005035538, p2.

<sup>2246</sup> Annual Report 1980, Fareham Reports 2005035542.

<sup>2247</sup> Annual Report 1980, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p2.

<sup>2248</sup> Annual Report 1980, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p2.

<sup>2249</sup> Inspection Report, JA Blair, M Todd, 1-9 May 1980, Fareham Reports 2005035538, p2.

<sup>2250</sup> Inspection Report, JA Blair, M Todd, 1-9 May 1980, Fareham Reports 2005035538, p2.

<sup>2251</sup> Inspection Report, JA Blair, M Todd, 1-9 May 1980, Fareham Reports 2005035538, p3.

<sup>2252</sup> Memo, Illegible, Director Residential Services to Mr Lucas, D.D.SW (ops), 05/11/80, Fareham Staffing 2005035542.

<sup>2253</sup> Report about Residential Inspectors Meeting 25 September 1980, Illegible, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p2.

<sup>2254</sup> Report about Residential Inspectors Meeting 25 September 1980, Illegible, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p2.

<sup>2255</sup> Memo, SJ Callahan, Director-General to Minister of Social Welfare, 10/12/80, Fareham Profile 2005035542, p2.

## Local Schools

In 1969 some residents were sent to the local college for their schooling as an intermediate step to final discharge,<sup>2256</sup> remaining there until their discharge with some continuing to attend from the Carterton Family Home.<sup>2257</sup> The Principal reported that these girls made considerable gains because of this and that it helped them readjust to the community.<sup>2258</sup>

In 1970 some girls attended Kuranui College and fitted in very well, according to the Principal.<sup>2259</sup> He believed a major advantage of this was the social experience that girls gained.<sup>2260</sup> In 1977 inmates went to outside schools if it was felt necessary as part of their training and rehabilitation.<sup>2261</sup>

In 1980 after a long break two girls were successfully placed in other schools, according to the School Report.<sup>2262</sup> The 1980 Inspection Report noted that there were no girls attending school in the Community.<sup>2263</sup> This was because the local secondary school, Kuranui College was not considered suitable for Fareham girls, and because there were negative attitudes to Fareham Girls there and because of gang activity there.<sup>2264</sup>

## Absconding

In contrast to other institutions, there is little on file about absconding from Fareham.

In 1969 there were two overnight abscondings.<sup>2265</sup> One incident involved three girls and the other involved five.<sup>2266</sup>

In 1974 Principal Goldsbury reported that "the influence of the hard core contributed largely to abscondings".<sup>2267</sup> In 1974 there were six incidents of abscondings involving eight girls.<sup>2268</sup>

In 1979 there were 45 absconders, and in 1980 there were 17.<sup>2269</sup>

In 1980 the Principal reported that abscondings did not pose much of a problem and that during this year there were eight abscondings involving three girls. The Principal found it problematic that on seven occasions girls did not return from home leave.<sup>2270</sup>

<sup>2256</sup> Annual Report 1969, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p1.

<sup>2257</sup> Annual Report 1969, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p1.

<sup>2258</sup> Annual Report 1969, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p4.

<sup>2259</sup> "Fareham House – Where Love and Care Thrive", *Wairarapa Times Age*, 18/09/70, Fareham Profile 2005035542.

<sup>2260</sup> "Fareham House – Where Love and Care Thrive", *Wairarapa Times Age*, 18/09/70, Fareham Profile 2005035542.

<sup>2261</sup> Questionnaire to Principal, Fareham House, 01/09/77, Fareham Profile, 2005035541, p2.

<sup>2262</sup> Annual Report 1980, Fareham Reports 2005035542.

<sup>2263</sup> Inspection Report, JA Blair, M Todd, 1-9 May 1980, Fareham Reports 2005035538, p3.

<sup>2264</sup> Inspection Report, JA Blair, M Todd, 1-9 May 1980, Fareham Reports 2005035538, p2.

<sup>2265</sup> Annual Report 1969, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p4.

<sup>2266</sup> Annual Report 1969, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p4.

<sup>2267</sup> Annual Report 1974, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p2.

<sup>2268</sup> Annual Report 1974, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p2.

<sup>2269</sup> Table of Absconders, Fareham Absconding F500000238841.

<sup>2270</sup> Annual Report 1980, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p1.

## Secure care

There was no secure unit in 1964 but by 1969 there was a secure lockable room. In 1969 the provision of a second secure room was not approved because of safety concerns.<sup>2271</sup> The Principal was not especially concerned as he was finding less need for a second lockable room, and although the present isolation room was expected to be lost, he did not feel its loss would have any effect.<sup>2272</sup>

In 1969 there is reference to a girl being placed in the secure room more than once as punishment, and of being placed in the isolation room.<sup>2273</sup>

In 1973 an Inspector reported that the Principal said he rarely used the main secure room and had turned a room formerly used as a lock-up into a single bedroom for a girl in the highest privilege group.<sup>2274</sup>

In 1978 the Principal reported that although officially there were no secure or time-out facilities at Fareham, there was a room which was designed for that purpose.<sup>2275</sup> He reported that occasionally the room had to be used as a "time-out" facility for girls who had lost control of their emotions temporarily or whose behaviour towards other members of the group was unacceptable, or who had been picked up after absconding and no other means of immediate control had been successful.<sup>2276</sup> Girls spent between fifteen minutes to four hours in this facility.<sup>2277</sup> A national office staff member visited Fareham in late 1978 to discuss the use of secure care.<sup>2278</sup>

Standard rules for using the time-out room were that the door was not to be locked if there was only one staff member in the building, that the Principal or Assistant Principal be notified immediately, that all items that a girl could use to cause harm be removed from her before entry, that the girl be checked every 15 to 30 minutes with an entry made in the Daily operations book.<sup>2279</sup> Another rule was that the girl was to be seen as soon as practical by an experienced officer to try and work through the incident.<sup>2280</sup>

In late 1978 the services of the time out room were put to greater use than usual. In response to this the Principal brought on an extra staff member.<sup>2281</sup> The Principal felt this was a more applicable punishment in these cases than being placed in Miramar secure and it appeared to have the desired effect.<sup>2282</sup>

In late 1978, an unknown commentator told the Principal that he had seen a Head Office direction in writing that girls were not to be held in the secure room, and had sent a copy of it to a previous principal.<sup>2283</sup>

<sup>2271</sup> Letter, HW Sayers, Regional Superintendent of Education, Fareham Profile 2006005603.

<sup>2272</sup> Memo, CC Chibnall, Principal to Superintendent, 07/11/69, Fareham Profile 2006005603, p1.

<sup>2273</sup> Memo, CC Chibnall, Principal to Superintendent, 10/12/69, Fareham Incidents 2005035542, p1.

<sup>2274</sup> Inspection Report, A Peek, 3-4 December 1973, Fareham Reports 2005035558, p3.

<sup>2275</sup> Memo, GA Dawber, Principal to Director General, 25/10/78, Fareham Secure 2005035542.

<sup>2276</sup> Memo, GA Dawber, Principal to Director General, 25/10/78, Fareham Secure 2005035542.

<sup>2277</sup> Memo, GA Dawber, Principal to Director General, 25/10/78, Fareham Secure 2005035542.

<sup>2278</sup> Note, Illegible for Director General to Principal, Fareham, 24/11/78 on memo, GA Dawber, Principal to Director General, 25/10/78, Fareham Secure 2005035542.

<sup>2279</sup> Memo, GA Dawber, Principal to Director General, 25/10/78, Fareham Secure 2005035542.

<sup>2280</sup> Memo, GA Dawber, Principal to Director General, 25/10/78, Fareham Secure 2005035542.

<sup>2281</sup> Memo, GA Dawber, Principal to Director General, 25/10/78, Fareham Secure 2005035542.

<sup>2282</sup> Memo, GA Dawber, Principal to Director General, 25/10/78, Fareham Secure 2005035542.

<sup>2283</sup> Memo, illegible to Mr Ball, 03/11/78, Fareham Secure 2005035542.

In 1979 the Acting Principal reported that "the lack of 'timeout' facilities at Fareham has always been detrimental to carrying out the task for caring for our type of disturbed girl".<sup>2284</sup>

In 1979 it was proposed that where a girl from Fareham was transferred to Miramar for "time out" (which would normally be in the secure unit) the period was not normally to exceed four days.<sup>2285</sup> If the girl was still at Miramar after four days the Principals would discuss the matter and decide on return. It was proposed that if there was a good reason why the girl should not return to Fareham there was a procedure that the Principals needed to follow.<sup>2286</sup> In response to the proposals the Director commented that he would expect to be consulted before any "time out" transfer was made.<sup>2287</sup>

In 1979 the use of secure was far more extensive than expected.<sup>2288</sup> One girl complained that she had been in the secure room for one week, and another girl complained she had been there for three days.<sup>2289</sup>

In 1980 there was no secure area, but there was a time out room.<sup>2290</sup> According to the Principal, children were seldom locked in the room, rather were placed there on trust.<sup>2291</sup> Children so disturbed that they needed to be locked were checked quarter hourly and were unlocked as soon as they were settled.<sup>2292</sup> In 1980 Fareham used the secure unit at Miramar twice.<sup>2293</sup> The Principal reported that a new time out room was desperately needed.<sup>2294</sup>

## Discipline

The clearance of a build up of long staying inmates in 1969 gave greater opportunity to others and weakened the static nature of the group, which gave rise to some control and discipline problems, according to the Principal.<sup>2295</sup>

In 1970 the Matron was concerned at the lack of discipline, and that as a result residents verbally abused female staff, which the Principal told staff they were paid to take.<sup>2296</sup> A newspaper reported that as a method of correction misbehaving girls could be put on extra duties around the home, such as polishing or scrubbing the

<sup>2284</sup> Memo, JM Hough, Acting Principal to Director-General, 09/04/79, Fareham Secure 2005035542.

<sup>2285</sup> Memo, JD Scott, for Director-General to The Director and Principal, Fareham, 15/05/79, Fareham Secure 205035542, p1.

<sup>2286</sup> Memo, JD Scott, for Director-General to The Director and Principal, Fareham, 15/05/79, Fareham Secure 205035542, p1.

<sup>2287</sup> Memo, JB Gourley, Director to Director-General, 25/05/79, Fareham Secure 2005035542.

<sup>2288</sup> Memo, illegible to Mr Lucas, 26/02/79, Fareham Incidents 2005035542, p5.

<sup>2289</sup> Memo, illegible to Mr Lucas, 26/02/79, Fareham Incidents 2005035542, p5.

<sup>2290</sup> Annual Report 1980, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p1.

<sup>2291</sup> Annual Report 1980, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p1.

<sup>2292</sup> Annual Report 1980, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p1.

<sup>2293</sup> Annual Report 1980, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p1.

<sup>2294</sup> Annual Report 1980, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p1.

<sup>2295</sup> Annual Report 1969, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p4.

<sup>2296</sup> Minute sheet, Feist, 26/08/71, Fareham Staffing 2005035542.

floors or not allowing them to watch television.<sup>2297</sup> On the other hand, a girl deserving extra privileges could be given a special type of job.<sup>2298</sup>

In 1970 a DCWO reported that when girls from Fareham entered a Family Home they seemed unable to appreciate the relative leniency that they received in the Home following misdemeanours compared with the expected punishments they received at Fareham.<sup>2299</sup>

In [redacted] some money belonging to a teacher went missing. [redacted] cancelled a camp and other privileges in response.<sup>2300</sup> The Inspector believed this contributed to a state of unrest which precipitated an absconding and the trouble encountered by [redacted].<sup>2301</sup>

In 1974 Goldsbury stated that the system of punishment in operation concerned him and that the Progress Board, though helpful to those who conformed and desired to make progress, was not meaningful to other residents.<sup>2302</sup> He believed that the needs of each girl must be considered more and staff encouraged to regard each girl as an individual needing special help.<sup>2303</sup>

In [redacted] the Principal stated that "shut your mouth" was a common form of speech used by staff.<sup>2304</sup>

## Physical punishment

In [redacted] girls alleged that staff hit them, and that the Principal, [redacted] was an "important offender in this respect".<sup>2305</sup>

The Inspection Report of 1980 noted that corporal punishment was not administered.<sup>2306</sup>

## Drugs, alcohol, and tattoos

In 1969 the Senior Teacher expressed his concern over comparatively untrained and inexperienced staff and the blanket use of drug therapy. The Principal disagreed, believing that "the use of 'Nydrane' as a control for Temporal Lobe Epilepsy as diagnosed in so many of our girls, is extremely beneficial in helping re-

<sup>2297</sup> "Fareham House – Where Love and Care Thrive", *Wairarapa Times Age*, 18/09/70, Fareham Profile 2005035542.

<sup>2298</sup> "Fareham House – Where Love and Care Thrive", *Wairarapa Times Age*, 18/09/70, Fareham Profile 2005035542.

<sup>2299</sup> Report, JG Elliott, DCWO to Superintendent, 09/03/70, Fareham Incidents 2005035542, p3.

<sup>2302</sup> Annual Report 1974, Fareham Reports, 2005035542, p2.

<sup>2303</sup> Annual Report 1974, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p2.

<sup>2306</sup> Inspection Report, JA Blair, M Todd, 1-9 May 1980, Fareham Reports 2005035538, p5.



adjustment<sup>2307</sup>, but did agree that prior Psychiatric investigation would give a fuller understanding of new admissions.<sup>2308</sup>

In 1979 a group of girls were caught sniffing petrol.<sup>2309</sup> A locking petrol cap was ordered to stop girls from getting access to the car they got the petrol from.<sup>2310</sup>

An unknown author commented in 1980 that a number of girls had tattoos.<sup>2311</sup> It is not recorded whether there was an active policy of discouraging tattooing or instant removal and had seen a girl with multiple tattoos on her face and arms which had been placed on her while she was at Fareham.<sup>2312</sup>

## Smoking

In 1972 the Matron reported that girls were frequently found smoking and that staff did not know how they got cigarettes.<sup>2313</sup> In 1973 the Inspector reported that the Principal had forbidden smoking, which residents were doing openly when he arrived.<sup>2314</sup>

In 1973 Mr Scahill, shortly after becoming Principal expressed concern about the amount of smoking residents indulged in.<sup>2315</sup> He believed that the girls were so bored from the lack of a constructive programme that they smoked and that this was regarded as a normal part of daily living, despite the fact most were under 15.<sup>2316</sup> They obtained cigarettes by leaving Fareham at night and collecting butts from the railway station.<sup>2317</sup>

In 1973 Mr Kildey reported that while he was Principal most girls smoked heavily prior to admission, and he found it impossible to stop them.<sup>2318</sup>

In 1977 smoking was not allowed<sup>2319</sup>

<sup>2307</sup> Annual Report 1969, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p4.

<sup>2308</sup> Annual Report 1969, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p4.

<sup>2309</sup> Memo, M Bannister, Assistant RSW, to Principal, 25/02/1979, Fareham Drugs and Smoking, 2005035542, p2.

<sup>2310</sup> Memo, M Bannister, Assistant RSW, to Principal, 25/02/1979, Fareham Drugs and Smoking, 2005035542, p2.

<sup>2311</sup> Report about Residential Inspectors Meeting 25 September 1980, Illegible, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p1.

<sup>2312</sup> Report about Residential Inspectors Meeting 25 September 1980, Illegible, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p1.

<sup>2313</sup> Minute sheet, Feist, 26/08/71, Fareham Staffing 2005035542.

<sup>2314</sup> Inspection Report, A Peek, 3-4 December 1973, Fareham Reports 200503558, p3.

<sup>2315</sup> Notes for File, DG Reilly, Assistant Director (Institutional Services), 15/03/73, Fareham Staffing 2005035542, p1.

<sup>2316</sup> Notes for File, DG Reilly, Assistant Director (Institutional Services), 15/03/73, Fareham Staffing 2005035542, p1.

<sup>2317</sup> Notes for File, DG Reilly, Assistant Director (Institutional Services), 15/03/73, Fareham Staffing 2005035542, p1.

<sup>2318</sup> Letter, RB Kildey, Senior Social Worker to Director General, 27/04/73, Fareham Staffing 2005035542, p3.

<sup>2319</sup> Questionnaire to Principal, Fareham House, 01/09/77, Fareham Profile, 2005035541, p2.

## Contact with field social workers

In 1966 the Principal told K Hayes (for Superintendent) that there were difficulties with the lines of communication between Fareham, the District Office and Head Office.<sup>2320</sup>

DG Reilly stated that the Principal was encouraged to work with the DCWO, Masterton, and with Mr Hayes, Inspector, over other matters that the Principal thought were serious enough to be reported personally to Mr Reilly.<sup>2321</sup>

In 1969 the Principal commented that the fact of divided administrative control provided opportunity for friction, but that the most cordial relationships were maintained with the Masterton District Officer, who continually gave his support and help, and his staff.<sup>2322</sup> The Principal was grateful for the guidance and counselling of senior Head Office Staff.<sup>2323</sup>

In a circular memo in [REDACTED] (position unknown) reported that in his first Annual Report to him [REDACTED] said that since assuming the role of Principal he had been appalled at the lack of knowledge and appreciation of Fareham that was evident among field staff, including senior officers.<sup>2324</sup> [REDACTED] believed this was inexcusable.<sup>2325</sup> [REDACTED] noted that a previous Fareham principal commented that girls were entering Fareham believing it was a farm where they could ride horses.<sup>2326</sup> A circular instruction was sent out to ensure children were not given an unduly rosy picture of what they were going to.<sup>2327</sup> [REDACTED] asked that there be no further grounds for complaint.<sup>2328</sup>

In 1974 there were visits from Institutional Officers.<sup>2329</sup>

The 1980 Inspection Report noted that District liaison with Fareham was variable.<sup>2330</sup> Of concern to the Principal was the lack of personal communications received by girls from their district Social Workers and advice being sent to them about who their Social Worker would be in the district on their discharge.<sup>2331</sup> The Principal noted that several social workers had visited and was pleased that they had remembered their girls.<sup>2332</sup>

<sup>2320</sup> Report, K Hayes (for Superintendent) to the Superintendent, 02/03/66, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p2.

<sup>2321</sup> Memo, DG Reilly to Mr Anderson, 10/03/66, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p1.

<sup>2322</sup> Annual Report 1969, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p2.

<sup>2323</sup> Annual Report 1969, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p3.

<sup>2329</sup> Annual Report 1974, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p2.

<sup>2330</sup> Inspection Report, JA Blair, M Todd, 1-9 May 1980, Fareham Reports 2005035538, p3.

<sup>2331</sup> Inspection Report, JA Blair, M Todd, 1-9 May 1980, Fareham Reports 2005035538, p3.

<sup>2332</sup> Annual Report 1980, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p4.

## Contact with community

In 1966 the Principal suggested to the Superintendent that a local Citizens' Committee (comprised of local citizens) be formed.<sup>2333</sup> He envisaged that the Committee would meet every six months with the Principal to discuss the activities of Fareham and that support from the community could be solicited where necessary. He imagined that the Community would be free to make recommendations.<sup>2334</sup> A meeting of representatives of the church, Borough Council, business and sports bodies convened at an unknown time, approximately around 1966 by Mr Bell, Principal considered setting up a committee to act as liaison between the house and public.<sup>2335</sup>

In 1966 the Principal was working with church groups towards having locals take girls to church.<sup>2336</sup>

Fareham held Visitors Days every year between 1967 and 1970 which district officers and community members were invited to.<sup>2337</sup>

In 1969 residents participated in the Featherston Athletic and Basketball Clubs.<sup>2338</sup> The Principal reported that girls made regular church attendances each Sunday at their own churches, and that Ministers attended Fareham for weekly religious instruction.<sup>2339</sup> According to the Principal "local women folk as "Birthday Mothers" have continued to visit girls assigned to them and with some, have taken them home for meals".<sup>2340</sup> The Principal reported that the much admired concert party had to go into recess "because of the more talented members' graduation, and the fact that there was some 'over exposure' in the district". The Principal reported that Fareham entertained a convention at the Tauherenikau Racecourse one weekend and that the Saint Johns Ambulance Brigade continued to instruct the girls.<sup>2341</sup>

In 1970 staff members reported a gradual withdrawal of the residents from the community as pictures and Church services were held within the Institution, which was possibly having an effect on their attitude, according to a DCWO.<sup>2342</sup>

Around 1971 if a girl's progress was good enough it was sometimes possible for girls to be transferred to the Family Home at Carterton.<sup>2343</sup> Sometimes girls spent time at the Home depending on their progress before returning to their own district for placement.<sup>2344</sup> While in the Family Home girls were under the charge of the District Child Welfare Officer.<sup>2345</sup>

<sup>2333</sup> Letter, R Bell, Principal to the Superintendent 18/02/66, Fareham Reports 2005035542.

<sup>2334</sup> Letter, R Bell, Principal to the Superintendent 18/02/66, Fareham Reports 2005035542.

<sup>2335</sup> Newspaper article, "Fareham House Committee", Fareham Profile 2005035542.

<sup>2336</sup> Letter, R Bell, Principal to the Superintendent 18/02/66, Fareham Reports 2005035542.

<sup>2337</sup> Memo, R Bell, Principal to the Superintendent 03/11/67, Fareham Contact with Community 2005035542; Memo, R Bell, Principal to DCWOs, 19/11/68, Fareham Contact with Community F500000633723; Memo, RB Kildey to DCWOs, 09/11/70, Fareham Contact with Social Workers F500000633723.

<sup>2338</sup> Annual Report 1969, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p4.

<sup>2339</sup> Annual Report 1969, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p4.

<sup>2340</sup> Annual Report 1969, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p4.

<sup>2341</sup> Annual Report 1969, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p4.

<sup>2342</sup> Report, JG Elliott, DCWO to Superintendent, 09/03/70, Fareham Incidents 2005035542, p3.

<sup>2343</sup> Fareham Guide for Girls, Fareham Profile 2005035542.

<sup>2344</sup> Fareham Guide for Girls, Fareham Profile 2005035542.

<sup>2345</sup> Fareham Guide for Girls, Fareham Profile 2005035542.

In 1973 the Inspector reported that the Principal had been trying to encourage people from the community to take an interest in the residents.<sup>2346</sup> A Minister had become a regular visitor, and one girl was taken out by a family belonging to her church.<sup>2347</sup> Girls attended their own churches on Sunday.<sup>2348</sup>

The Inspector reported that in 1974 the most was made of every opportunity to participate in activities away from the institution and that the new minibus enabled more children to be taken out.<sup>2349</sup>

In 1974 student nurses visited, and elderly people from Wharekaka Home were entertained at Fareham for afternoon tea.<sup>2350</sup> Residents had earlier visited this Home as a community project.<sup>2351</sup> Kindergarten children, their teachers and a number of mothers, and a class from a local school also visited.<sup>2352</sup> Most Sundays all girls attended church, according to the Principal.<sup>2353</sup> A Maori singing group visited twice, and every quarter an Anglican Maori service was conducted.<sup>2354</sup> For the end of year social evening local people who had made worthwhile contact with the school during the year were invited.<sup>2355</sup>

In 1977 the Principal reported that relations with the community had been both good and bad and that he aimed to improve the relationship. To do this Dawber proposed to hold a Garden Fete to fundraise for the building of the Featherston sports stadium.<sup>2356</sup>

In 1977 girls played netball with local teams, and attended "Youth for Christ" activities. Some local groups used Fareham for their meetings and involved the girls in some of these activities, for example, craftwork.<sup>2357</sup> Some girls were members of local gymnastic and swimming clubs, while others were involved with the local business community through the work placement scheme.<sup>2358</sup>

In 1978 the Principal was asked by the local organiser of Community Volunteers whether Fareham could use the services of a volunteer. The Principal believed the service would be valuable and sought the approval of the Director General to give the volunteer free board and lodgings.<sup>2359</sup>

In the late 1970s Fareham was to be part of community action programme.<sup>2360</sup>

In 1980 the relationship between Fareham and the country Teachers Association was re-established.<sup>2361</sup> They included Fareham in their swimming sports and were willing to include Fareham girls from three and below in activities.<sup>2362</sup>

<sup>2346</sup> Inspection Report, A Peek, 3-4 December 1973, Fareham Reports 200503558, p2.

<sup>2347</sup> Inspection Report, A Peek, 3-4 December 1973, Fareham Reports 200503558, p2.

<sup>2348</sup> Inspection Report, A Peek, 3-4 December 1973, Fareham Reports 200503558, p2.

<sup>2349</sup> Inspection Report, A Peek, 8-9 July 1974, Fareham Reports 200503558, p2.

<sup>2350</sup> Annual Report 1974, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p2.

<sup>2351</sup> Annual Report 1974, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p2.

<sup>2352</sup> Annual Report 1974, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p2.

<sup>2353</sup> Annual Report 1974, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p4.

<sup>2354</sup> Annual Report 1974, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p4.

<sup>2355</sup> Annual Report 1974, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p4.

<sup>2356</sup> Memo, GA Dawber, Principal to Director General, Head Office, 23/06/77, Fareham Contact with Community 2005035542.

<sup>2357</sup> Inspection Report, JB Frost, A Peek, 9 June 1977, Fareham Reports 200503558, p1.

<sup>2358</sup> Questionnaire to Principal, Fareham House, 01/09/77, Fareham Profile, 2005035541, p3.

<sup>2359</sup> Memo, GA Dawber, Principal to Director General, Head Office, 22/03/78, Fareham Contact with Community 2005035542.

<sup>2360</sup> Memo, T Ball, Assistant Director Residential Senior, Fareham Staffing 2005035542.

<sup>2361</sup> Annual Report 1980, Fareham Reports 2005035542.

The Inspectors of 1980 noted that although relationships with the local community were unsatisfactory because of the girls' past misdemeanours in the district, the situation was improving with the efforts being made to re-kindle community support and participation in Fareham.<sup>2363</sup>

In 1980 Police would often "pop in" to Fareham. The Principal noted that being serviced by a country station sometimes posed difficult, but if the Police were unavailable, the local Traffic Officer was willing to do what he could.<sup>2364</sup>

In 1980 community involvement was limited as Featherston and Fareham had little to offer each other, in the Principal's opinion.<sup>2365</sup> Some girls took part in the monthly meeting of the Country and Western Club.<sup>2366</sup> One girl was in the tennis club and a netball team took part in local competitions.<sup>2367</sup> Most local organisations held at least one meeting at Fareham.<sup>2368</sup>

In 1980 girls attended discos with Epuni, had a talent quest, and invited the local Country and Western club and had a fancy dress dance.<sup>2369</sup> Local citizens took several girls over the year for weekend leave.<sup>2370</sup>

In 1980 a couple was recommended to care for Fareham girls on some weekends.<sup>2371</sup>

## Visiting committees

In August 1966 the first meeting of the Fareham House visiting Committee was held. The committee comprised of community representatives.<sup>2372</sup>

In 1978 the Masterton Visiting Committee visited Fareham and found the inspection favourable.<sup>2373</sup>

The 1980 Inspection Report noted that the Visiting Committee showed little interest in Fareham.<sup>2374</sup> Two members had visited since August 1979.<sup>2375</sup> The Principal believed the committee had not fulfilled their obligations.<sup>2376</sup> The Principal hoped that when a new committee was formed Fareham would have a separate committee to Arbour House and that it consisted of all Featherston citizens.<sup>2377</sup>

<sup>2362</sup> Annual Report 1980, Fareham Reports 2005035542.

<sup>2363</sup> Inspection Report, JA Blair, M Todd, 1-9 May 1980, Fareham Reports 2005035538, p3.

<sup>2364</sup> Annual Report 1980, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p1.

<sup>2365</sup> Annual Report 1980, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p3.

<sup>2366</sup> Annual Report 1980, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p3.

<sup>2367</sup> Annual Report 1980, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p3.

<sup>2368</sup> Annual Report 1980, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p3.

<sup>2369</sup> Annual Report 1980, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p3.

<sup>2370</sup> Annual Report 1980, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p4.

<sup>2371</sup> Memo, Hilary Beard, Social Worker to Principal, Fareham, 15/10/80, Fareham Contact with Community F5000003771116.

<sup>2372</sup> R Bell, Principal to Superintendent, 07/09/66, Fareham Reports 2005035542.

<sup>2373</sup> Memo, K Yule to Director-General, 12/09/78, Fareham Contact with Social Workers 2005035542.

<sup>2374</sup> Inspection Report, JA Blair, M Todd, 1-9 May 1980, Fareham Reports 2005035538, p3.

<sup>2375</sup> Inspection Report, JA Blair, M Todd, 1-9 May 1980, Fareham Reports 2005035538, p3.

<sup>2376</sup> Annual Report 1980, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p4.

<sup>2377</sup> Annual Report 1980, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p4.

## Contact with families

A record of mail was kept in 1970.<sup>2378</sup> Around 1971 residents could write to family as they pleased, but had to ask about writing to anyone else. Incoming and outgoing letters were looked at by staff.<sup>2379</sup> Censorship of mail happened in 1977 which inmates were aware of.<sup>2380</sup> At an unknown date Dawber sent a sample of the type of mail sent by girls to Head Office and asked if mail should be censored.<sup>2381</sup> In the late 1970s girls were generally not allowed to use the telephone but were encouraged to write as often as possible.<sup>2382</sup>

Around 1971 family were welcome to visit if they had made arrangements beforehand, and the resident family member was allowed to go out with them if their progress was satisfactory.<sup>2383</sup> Friends were only allowed to visit with the Principal's approval.<sup>2384</sup> In the late 1970s parents and close relations were welcome to visit Fareham<sup>2385</sup> and there was accommodation available for visiting parents.<sup>2386</sup> Other visitors were advised to gain permission before arriving.<sup>2387</sup> In 1980 there were few visits from parents.<sup>2388</sup>

In 1960 it was decided that all wards in Training Centres may have "home leave" subject to certain conditions and could be for up to seven days.<sup>2389</sup> Institutions were to have discretion to withhold or delay home leave depending on the ward's progress.<sup>2390</sup>

In 1969 Fareham residents were given an extra two weeks holiday in August each year.<sup>2391</sup> Previously inmates were permitted to visit home during the Christmas and May vacations only. Various reasons in favour of the extended leave were outlined by the Superintendent.<sup>2392</sup> A circular memo announced that home leave would be arranged during August only and that the former alternative of arranging home leave in May no longer applied.<sup>2393</sup>

Dawber thought only deserving girls should go home for holidays.<sup>2394</sup> There was staff resistance to this.<sup>2395</sup>

<sup>2378</sup> "Fareham House – Where Love and Care Thrive", *Wairarapa Times Age*, 18/09/70, Fareham Profile 2005035542.

<sup>2379</sup> Fareham Guide for Girls, Fareham Profile 2005035542.

<sup>2380</sup> Questionnaire to Principal, Fareham House, 01/09/77, Fareham Profile, 2005035541, p2.

<sup>2381</sup> Memo, GA Dawber, Principal to J Scott, Head Office, Fareham Contact with Family 2005035542.

<sup>2382</sup> Letter, from Mr G Dawber, Principal to Parents, Fareham Profile F5000002388341, p1.

<sup>2383</sup> Fareham Guide for Girls, Fareham Profile 2005035542.

<sup>2384</sup> Fareham Guide for Girls, Fareham Profile 2005035542.

<sup>2385</sup> Letter, from Mr G Dawber, Principal to Parents, Fareham Profile F5000002388341, p2.

<sup>2386</sup> Memo, T Ball, Assistant Director Residential Senior, Fareham Staffing 2005035542.

<sup>2387</sup> Letter, from Mr G Dawber, Principal to Parents, Fareham Profile F5000002388341, p2.

<sup>2388</sup> Annual Report 1980, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p4.

<sup>2389</sup> Circular Memo 1960/9, Illegible, Superintendent to Principals of Burwood and Fareham, Manager Levin, 21/10/60, Fareham Contact with Family F500000634501, p1.

<sup>2390</sup> Circular Memo 1960/9, Illegible, Superintendent to Principals of Burwood and Fareham, Manager Levin, 21/10/60, Fareham Contact with Family F500000634501, p1.

<sup>2391</sup> Memo, PT Moody, for Superintendent to DCWO, Masterton, 11/07/69, Fareham Contact with Family, 2005035542.

<sup>2392</sup> Memo, L G Anderson, Superintendent to Director-General of Education, 27/06/69, Fareham Contact with Family 2005035542, p1.

<sup>2393</sup> Circular Memo 1969/21, JWK, Contact with Family F500000633723.

<sup>2394</sup> Memo, T Ball, Assistant Director Residential Senior, Fareham Staffing 2005035542.

<sup>2395</sup> Memo, T Ball, Assistant Director Residential Senior, Fareham Staffing 2005035542.

In 1980 Home leave was a very successful and important venture, according to the Principal and was built into the privilege system.<sup>2396</sup>

In 1974 the Principal believed that contact with home and holiday reports from the girls' home districts were very important.<sup>2397</sup>

In 1977 the Principal reported that the subject of a Senior Staff member visiting the girls while they were at home on holiday had been discussed with people at Head Office, and with Social Workers and Directors, with the general consensus of opinion that it is a good idea providing it was done in conjunction with the Social Workers concerned.<sup>2398</sup> Dawber proposed that the Assistant Principal do visitation work during the Christmas vacation and sought the approval of the Director General.<sup>2399</sup> Approval was not given because of the costs involved and because in terms of social worker and institutional liaison the proposal was seen likely to bring confusion and be regarded as an intrusion on the role of the social worker.<sup>2400</sup> The Director General also stated that while it was permissible within defined limits for escorting officers to make contact, with social worker involvement it was not policy for institution staff what Dawber proposed they do.<sup>2401</sup>

In 1977 the Principal reported that Fareham was beginning to look at the "area of Institution/Home involvement during school holiday time".<sup>2402</sup> He said it must be done in conjunction with the social worker concerned.<sup>2403</sup>

Mr Dawber's approach to sending children home for holidays was that Fareham was not a boarding school that observed school holidays, rather, holidays were an earned privilege whereby a girl did not necessarily go home for the holidays or remain there for the full period if there was a breakdown.<sup>2404</sup> In the late 1970s holiday periods were generally spent at home or where the resident would be living on discharge.<sup>2405</sup>

An unknown author commented in 1980 that the Principal had visited some of the home areas of residents and was in constant contact with home districts.<sup>2406</sup>

In 1980 a Senior Residential Advisory Officer believed that from a social work casework viewpoint the removal of girls from their local community was highly undesirable and made it impossible to carry out family therapy and endeavour to integrate the girls back into their local communities.<sup>2407</sup>

<sup>2396</sup> Annual Report 1980, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p4.

<sup>2397</sup> Annual Report 1974, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p4.

<sup>2398</sup> Memo, GA Dawber, Principal to Director General, Fareham Contact with Family, 2005035542.

<sup>2399</sup> Memo, GA Dawber, Principal to Director General, Fareham Contact with Family, 2005035542.

<sup>2400</sup> Note on memo by Illegible for Director General to Principal, Fareham on memo, GA Dawber, Principal to Director General, Fareham Contact with Family, 2005035542.

<sup>2401</sup> Note on memo by Illegible for Director General to Principal, Fareham on memo, GA Dawber, Principal to Director General, Fareham Contact with Family, 2005035542.

<sup>2402</sup> Questionnaire to Principal, Fareham House, 01/09/77, Fareham Profile, 2005035541, p4.

<sup>2403</sup> Questionnaire to Principal, Fareham House, 01/09/77, Fareham Profile, 2005035541, p4.

<sup>2404</sup> Minute Sheet, Fareham House, illegible to Mr Ball, visit 21 September 1977, Fareham Reports 2005035542.

<sup>2405</sup> Letter, from Mr G Dawber, Principal to Parents, Fareham Profile F5000002388341, p2.

<sup>2406</sup> Report about Residential Inspectors Meeting 25 September 1980, Illegible, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p2.

<sup>2407</sup> Background Paper Reviewing Residential Operations, Fareham House, NG Stevens, Senior Residential Advisory Officer, 28/10/80, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p3.

## Preparation for discharge and after care arrangements

In 1970 it was felt by an Inspector that more attention should be given to planning for the girls release to the Fareham Family Home.<sup>2408</sup> A DCWO felt that there were many times when residents were insufficiently prepared towards a Family Home placement.<sup>2409</sup> The Inspector believed girls needed to be aware of what was required and the changes that she may need to make in adjusting to the new environment.<sup>2410</sup> Mr Kildey, Principal, intended to be more liberal in allowing girls more community activity, thus preparing them for the more permissive attitude in the Family Home.<sup>2411</sup> It was suggested that a trial weekend before placement might be of value.<sup>2412</sup>

In 1976 AG Frazer reported that psychiatrically disturbed children were prematurely discharged from Fareham and were wrongly placed at Fareham.<sup>2413</sup>

In 1980 the Principal reported that pre-discharge programmes had never been started and that with individual girls Fareham endeavoured to provide them with experiences that would equip them to cope with a return to the community, and that this was difficult because of Fareham's location.<sup>2414</sup>

<sup>2408</sup> Note for File, T Ball, Inspector, 04/11/70, Fareham Staffing 2005035542, p2.

<sup>2409</sup> Report, JG Elliott, DCWO to Superintendent, 09/03/70, Fareham Incidents 2005035542, p4.

<sup>2410</sup> Note for File, T Ball, Inspector, 04/11/70, Fareham Staffing 2005035542, p2.

<sup>2411</sup> Note for File, T Ball, Inspector, 04/11/70, Fareham Staffing 2005035542, p2.

<sup>2412</sup> Note for File, T Ball, Inspector, 04/11/70, Fareham Staffing 2005035542, p2.

<sup>2413</sup> Note for Psychiatric File, AG Frazer, 00/10/76, Fareham Health 2005035542, p1.

<sup>2414</sup> Annual Report 1980, Fareham Reports 2005035542, p4.



## Chapter 7

# Kingslea

### Physical description

Kingslea was a national institution located in the Christchurch suburb of Shirley, approximately five kilometres from the city centre.<sup>2415</sup> It was bordered on one side by the Shirley Golf Club, and on the other by Burwood Park.<sup>2416</sup> The land was first used for residential care in 1904 when Te Oranga Home opened as New Zealand's first State Reformatory for girls. The nine acres of land and 42 acres of swamp land were initially leased by the Department of Education. Te Oranga Home closed in 1918 and following renovations, in 1928 the Residence reopened as Girls' Home, Burwood.<sup>2417</sup>

In 1930 a reception cottage, a hall and a clinic were built.<sup>2418</sup> The Slessor wing, a school, the Nightingale unit and a cottage were already on the site, having been used previously.<sup>2419</sup> Helen Keller House was built in 1944.<sup>2420</sup>

In 1945 the name was changed again, to Girls' Training Centre, Christchurch.<sup>2421</sup> Despite the official name change, the Residence continued to be referred to as 'Burwood'.

Mabel Howard House opened in 1947 and was used as a hostel for girls nearing discharge. In 1952 five cells were added to the clinic in recognition of the need for a secure wing.<sup>2422</sup>

The Principal contacted the Superintendent in 1956 to inquire about a lease arrangement for a campsite with possible future purchase rights. The Superintendent agreed to the lease of the camp, but stated that its purchase would

<sup>2415</sup> Care and Protection Unit document, untitled, author and date unknown, circa early 1990s, Kingslea Reports F5000003759606.

<sup>2416</sup> "Information about Kingslea", author unknown, date unknown circa 1980s, Kingslea Staffing F5000005628256.

<sup>2417</sup> "Historical Notes on the Kingslea Residential Centre, Shirley, Christchurch" author unknown, October 1995, Kingslea Reports F5000005628254, p 3.

<sup>2418</sup> "Historical Notes on the Kingslea Residential Centre, Shirley, Christchurch" author unknown, October 1995, Kingslea Reports F5000005628254, p 4.

<sup>2419</sup> "Historical Notes on the Kingslea Residential Centre, Shirley, Christchurch" author unknown, October 1995, Kingslea Reports F5000005628254, pp 1-2.

<sup>2420</sup> A review of some of the changes in the Centre in the period 1942-1970, Mrs K J Ford (Principal), 1970, Kingslea Annual Reports 2005013670, p 10.

<sup>2421</sup> "Historical Notes on the Kingslea Residential Centre, Shirley, Christchurch" author unknown, October 1995, Kingslea Reports F5000005628254, p 5.

<sup>2422</sup> "Historical Notes on the Kingslea Residential Centre, Shirley, Christchurch" author unknown, October 1995, Kingslea Reports F5000005628254, p 5.

depend on what the costs were.<sup>2423</sup> By 1964 the camp was still privately owned but continued to be used by Burwood residents.<sup>2424</sup>

The dormitories in Slessor and Nightingale Houses were divided into cubicles in 1960 to give girls more privacy.<sup>2425</sup> A newspaper article later described these buildings as "prison-like".<sup>2426</sup>

Scottford House opened in 1963.<sup>2427</sup> Initially intended to provide accommodation for 15 girls, the unit was later extended to provide a further three rooms for girls and some additional staff accommodation.<sup>2428</sup> A Technical Arts Unit also opened in 1963 which provided two sewing rooms, a home science room, a handcraft room, a hairdressing room and a canteen.<sup>2429</sup> There was a swimming pool and a trampoline on the grounds by 1965.<sup>2430</sup>

In 1965 the residence was officially named Kingslea. Around this time buildings were moved out to the periphery of the property to create "a central park-like open area". The family home was constructed in 1967, and in 1968 an additional eight cells were added to the secure unit. A new gymnasium was also completed at this time.<sup>2431</sup>

Slessor House and Nightingale House were demolished in 1976. Two new eight-bed hostels, Ida Pedder House and Rene Pedder House, were built in 1980.<sup>2432</sup>

In the 1970s staff member M E Judge wrote of Kingslea: "The buildings, architecturally varied, settle unobtrusively into 27 acres of parkland. Tree fringed lawns sweep from the stepping stone boundary fence up beside the main driveways to the garden beds of the administration building and tennis court, combining a feeling of beauty and spaciousness. Ornamental trees of many origins beautify key points.<sup>2433</sup>" As the grounds were open, there were no high walls or fences around the institution.<sup>2434</sup>

By the late 1970s there were tennis courts and a playing field on the grounds.<sup>2435</sup>

<sup>2423</sup> Memo from Superintendent to Principal, 25/5/56, Kingslea Programmes Archives W5048/376 2006/8589.

<sup>2424</sup> Memo from K J Ford, Principal to Superintendent, 20/3/64, Kingslea Programmes Archives W5048/376 2006/8589.

<sup>2425</sup> A review of some of the changes in the Centre in the period 1942-1970, Mrs K J Ford (Principal), 1970, Kingslea Annual Reports 2005013670, p 10.

<sup>2426</sup> "Kingslea – where girls unfairly get a bad name", writer unknown, publication unknown, date unknown circa 1980s, Kingslea Profile, F5000005628256.

<sup>2427</sup> "Historical Notes on the Kingslea Residential Centre, Shirley, Christchurch" author unknown, October 1995, Kingslea Reports F5000005628254, p 5.

<sup>2428</sup> A review of some of the changes in the Centre in the period 1942-1970, Mrs K J Ford (Principal), 1970, Kingslea Annual Reports 2005013670, p 10.

<sup>2429</sup> A review of some of the changes in the Centre in the period 1942-1970, Mrs K J Ford (Principal), 1970, Kingslea Annual Reports 2005013670, p 11.

<sup>2430</sup> "Sport is part of their training", *The Press*, 4/12/65, Kingslea Programmes Archives W5048/376 2006/8588.

<sup>2431</sup> "Historical Notes on the Kingslea Residential Centre, Shirley, Christchurch" author unknown, October 1995, Kingslea Reports F5000005628254, p 6.

<sup>2432</sup> "Historical Notes on the Kingslea Residential Centre, Shirley, Christchurch" author unknown, October 1995, Kingslea Reports F5000005628254, p 8.

<sup>2433</sup> "An Approach to Treatment", M E Judge, date unknown circa 1970s, Kingslea Profile 2005013475.

<sup>2434</sup> Kingslea", author unknown, date unknown circa 1979, Kingslea Profile 2005013475, p

<sup>2435</sup> Map of Kingslea, date unknown circa late 1970s, Kingslea Profile F021059.

In 1980 Kingslea consisted of Pedder House which had two eight-bed units; Howard House, Scottford House, and Keller House which each had 18 beds; the Family Home which had four beds; and the secure unit which had 13 beds.<sup>2436</sup>

Residents from Strathmore House transferred to Kingslea on 1 April 1980.<sup>2437</sup> (Strathmore House was also known as Christchurch Girls' Home, and was located on Ferry Road, Christchurch.) Alterations and renovations were carried out at this time to prepare the Mabel Howard building for use by its new remand and assessment residents.<sup>2438</sup>

The Kingslea grounds were extended in 1984 with the purchase of an adjacent property.<sup>2439</sup>

Kingslea reopened as the "Kingslea Resource centre" for both boys and girls on 12 September 1988.<sup>2440</sup> At this stage there were 52 beds in the open units and 16 secure beds.<sup>2441</sup> During this year the Christchurch Boys' Home closed and its residents moved to Kingslea. They were housed in Mabel Howard House.<sup>2442</sup>

In the early 1990s the Kingslea campus had a gymnasium, basketball court, swimming pool, tennis court, obstacle course and a sports field.<sup>2443</sup>

Due to reduced numbers of residents from 1988 onwards Kingslea began to lease its buildings to outside organisations.<sup>2444</sup> In 1992 these included agencies such as IHC, Maori Women's Welfare League and YWCA. The Southern Regional Office of NZCYPs was also situated at Kingslea.<sup>2445</sup>

## Resident profile

In 1956 most residents were 17 or 18 although the Principal noted that some younger girls were also admitted.<sup>2446</sup>

Prior to 1957 most girls were admitted to the Residence under the care of the Superintendent as 'not under proper control'. After 1957, however, the Principal

<sup>2436</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1980, Kingslea Annual Reports F5000004606486, pp 3-4.

<sup>2437</sup> J D Scott for Director General to Regional Superintendent of Education, 7/12/79, Kingslea Education 2005013475. Strathmore House was also known as Christchurch Girls' Home, and was located in Ferry Road, Christchurch.

<sup>2438</sup> Memo from G A Grainger, S.E.O (Buildings) to Divisional Director, Administration, 8/11/79, Kingslea Profile Archive 2005033549. Following the transfer, Mabel Howard House became known as Strathmore House for a short while, but the by 1982 the name was changed back to Mabel Howard in order to maintain the tradition of naming the buildings after prominent women.

<sup>2439</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1984, Kingslea Annual Reports F5000004606486, p 5.

<sup>2440</sup> Institution Internal Audit Report, November 1988, Kingslea Reports F007702, p 1.

<sup>2441</sup> "Proposed Study by Human Rights Commission of Department of Social Welfare residential facilities" date unknown circa 1989, Kingslea Admissions F5000004516500, appendix 1.

<sup>2442</sup> J R Rowe for District Commissioner of Works to Building Supervisor, 13/2/87, Kingslea Profile F5000005133876. The Christchurch Boys' Home was also referred to as the Stanmore Road Home.

<sup>2443</sup> Care and Protection Unit document, untitled, author and date unknown, circa early 1990s, Kingslea Reports F5000003759606.

<sup>2444</sup> "Historical Notes on the Kingslea Residential Centre, Shirley, Christchurch" author unknown, October 1995, Kingslea Reports F5000005628254, p 9.

<sup>2445</sup> Report to the Hon Roger McClay, Associate Minister of Social Welfare, 22/7/92, Kingslea Reports F5000004081321, p 3.

<sup>2446</sup> "Girls' Training Centre – Interesting Address" writer unknown, newspaper unknown, 17/2/56, Kingslea Profile 2005013472.

remarked that increasing proportions of residents were admitted after appearing before the court for theft, burglary, breaking and entering, and car conversion.<sup>2447</sup>

Following problems that had reportedly occurred with a group of Maori girls in 1962, staff sought advice from a Maori doctor from Ngawhatu Hospital. The Doctor advised that Maori delinquency was no different to any other delinquency but that in institutions where Maori residents amounted to more than six percent "there is a tendency to observe or blame the Maori group more." She explained some cultural problems that could arise, and recommended a Maori club should be formed in order to teach all residents about Maori culture.<sup>2448</sup>

Between 1959 and 1962 there are many references made to the fact that a small percentage of the residents exhibited excessively violent and disturbed behaviour. It was suggested that they were unsuitable for the training offered at Burwood and would have been better catered for elsewhere, such as borstal. A newspaper article at the time stated: "It is easy to sympathise with Mrs Ford and her staff when the ordinary problems of a training centre are aggravated through the activities of unsuitable inmates."<sup>2449</sup>

There were high numbers of Maori residents in 1961.<sup>2450</sup>

In 1963 there was a sharp increase in the number of younger residents admitted with almost half of the girls admitted under the age of 15.<sup>2451</sup>

In 1965 staff were "deeply concerned about the number of extremely difficult and disturbed girls" resident at Kingslea. The Principal stated "tensions are high and the atmosphere explosive".<sup>2452</sup>

In 1968, in response to a letter to the editor of the *Christchurch Star*, the Superintendent commented that Kingslea was a national institution and not a local institution. He wrote: "The girls in residence are from all over the country. They represent a concentration of the most difficult and disturbed adolescent girls in New Zealand, aside from the few who are sent by the Courts to penal institutions, such as Borstal institutions and prisons."<sup>2453</sup>

In 1968 Kingslea would accept up to 100 residents, although a senior staff member stated that she favoured fewer residents in order to allow flexibility and the opportunity to shift girls.<sup>2454</sup> Between 1961 and 1971, numbers of girls in the institution generally sat between approximately 80 and 95. Between 1972 and 1973 numbers dropped to between approximately 60 and 70.<sup>2455</sup>

In 1970 over half the residents were either Maori or Pacific Islanders.<sup>2456</sup>

<sup>2447</sup> A review of some of the changes in the Centre in the period 1942-1970, Mrs K J Ford (Principal), 1970, Kingslea Annual Reports 2005013670, p 4.

<sup>2448</sup> Memo from K J Ford, Principal, to Superintendent, 20/2/62, Kingslea Profile F021158/2003028572.

<sup>2449</sup> "Incidents at Burwood Training Centre", author unknown, *The Press*, 10/1/62, Kingslea Incidents F021158/2003028572. For more information on this period see file F021158/2003028572.

<sup>2450</sup> Memo from I F Pedder, Acting Principal to Superintendent, 7/9/61, Kingslea Profile F021158/2003028572.

<sup>2451</sup> "Note on the Situation - Institution" from staff meeting, 17/4/67, Kingslea Admissions F021155.

<sup>2452</sup> Memo from K J Ford, Principal to Superintendent, 23/9/65, Kingslea Staffing F021155.

<sup>2453</sup> Superintendent to Editor, *Christchurch Star*, 3/5/68, Kingslea Profile Archives W50481376 2006/8558.

<sup>2454</sup> "More Trained Staff Needed for Girls' Centre", writer unknown, *The Press*, 11/6/68, Kingslea Staffing Archives W5048/376 2006/8558.

<sup>2455</sup> Memos to Director General, Kingslea Returns of Inmates (Quarterly) file, 1962-1973, F5000002369913. These memos can be found in ringbinder titled 'Burwood'.

<sup>2456</sup> A review of some of the changes in the Centre in the period 1942-1970, Mrs K J Ford (Principal), 1970, Kingslea Annual Reports 2005013670, p 3.

There was extreme pressure on accommodation for "difficult girls" in 1970, Kingslea was reported to be overfull and operating a waiting list for new entrants.<sup>2457</sup>

By 1980 Kingslea's capacity had dropped to 76 girls.<sup>2458</sup> In 1979 and 1980 residents aged from 12 to 16, most were either 14 or 15 years old.<sup>2459</sup> By 1981 there were lower numbers of 16 year olds but increasing numbers of 13 year olds.<sup>2460</sup>

In 1980, following the Strathmore transfer, Kingslea operated assessment and remand facilities for Christchurch and contributing districts. The Principal commented that the combination of remand and assessment facilities with extended care treatment facilities was a success, and that the two programmes were "philosophically compatible".<sup>2461</sup> This was the first time the Department had combined remand and assessment facilities with extended care and treatment facilities.<sup>2462</sup> Kingslea provided short term care and assessment facilities for the Christchurch, Blenheim, Nelson and West Coast.<sup>2463</sup>

According to the Principal, approximately 20% of extended care residents in 1980 had been sexually abused by a family member; 10% were adopted; and 33% came from broken families.<sup>2464</sup>

The Principal commented in 1984 that the amount of urgent transfers from Miramar Girls' Home "added an unhelpful dimension to the extended care admission process."<sup>2465</sup> The Residence was full in 1984.<sup>2466</sup>

Between 1981 and 1984 there were approximately 50 new residents admitted each year, this increased to 81 in 1985.<sup>2467</sup> There were approximately 25 residents on the roll in 1986.<sup>2468</sup>

A 1985 newspaper article stated that 53% of Kingslea residents had never been involved in criminal offending but that all girls had severe emotional problems and a high percentage had been sexually abused.<sup>2469</sup>

Principal M E Judge commented in 1985 that girls whose behaviour could not be contained in other Girls' Homes were transferred to Kingslea, with the result being that the Kingslea population became "a much more volatile, acting out group without the balance of other personality profiles to offer a range of models and peer relationships."<sup>2470</sup>

<sup>2457</sup> Memo from A Bulmer for Superintendent to all District Child Welfare Officers and all Principals, 17/6/70, Kingslea Profile 2000323017.

<sup>2458</sup> Memo from M P Doolan, Principal to Director General, 3/4/80, Kingslea Profile 2005013671.

<sup>2459</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1980, Kingslea Annual Reports F5000004606486, appendix III.

<sup>2460</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1981, Kingslea Annual Reports F5000004606486, appendix III.

<sup>2461</sup> Memo from M P Doolan, Principal, to Director General, 17/10/80, Kingslea Reports 2005013475, p 1.

<sup>2462</sup> "Historical Notes on the Kingslea Residential Centre, Shirley, Christchurch" author unknown, October 1995, Kingslea Reports F5000005628254, p 7.

<sup>2463</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1981, Kingslea Annual Reports F5000004606486, p 4.

<sup>2464</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1984, Kingslea Annual Reports F5000005133782, p 11.

<sup>2465</sup> M P Doolan for Director General to Director, Wellington, 5/6/85, Kingslea Secure F5000005133782.

<sup>2466</sup> Memo from V W Milner for Principal to Director (SW), 27/9/84, Kingslea Admissions F5000000923407.

<sup>2467</sup> Report of the Principals Working Group, date unknown circa 1986, Kingslea Admissions F5000005628256, appendix III.

<sup>2468</sup> M E Judge, Principal to Director General, 13/12/85, Kingslea Staffing F5000005133782.

<sup>2469</sup> "Kingslea the place where they make a fresh start", David Warner, *Ashburton Guardian*, 16/10/85, Kingslea Profile F002640.

<sup>2470</sup> Memo from M E Judge, Principal, to Director General, 19/4/85, Kingslea Profile F5000005133782.

In 1988 Christchurch Boys' Home closed and from this point Kingslea admitted boys requiring short-term care. Boys were accommodated in Howard House and alterations had been carried out to prepare the unit for its new residents.<sup>2471</sup> Following the transfer, Kingslea would only cater for Canterbury and Westland residents, and those on remand.<sup>2472</sup>

In 1988 a newspaper article stated that the Kingslea resident age range was 10 to 17 but that most residents were 14 or 15.<sup>2473</sup> At this point there were 18 beds for short-term assessment and remand girls aged 14-17; 26 beds for short-term assessment and remand boys ages 14-17; and eight beds for short-term assessment and remand boys and girls aged up to 14.<sup>2474</sup> By December 1989 this dropped to twelve beds for boys aged 14-17; eight beds for girls aged 14-17; and the pre-adolescent mixed-sex unit closed.<sup>2475</sup>

There was a drop in admissions in 1989 with only 18 residents on the roll.<sup>2476</sup>

In 1990 internal auditors noted that as the new legislation (Children, Young Persons, and Their Families Act 1989) had made residential care a last resort option for children and young persons, there had been "noticeable changes in the client group who, behaviourally, are more difficult to manage."<sup>2477</sup> At this point Kingslea provided a 20-bed mixed gender Youth Justice residential programme which catered for 14 to 17 year olds who had been involved in offending, as well as a six bed mixed gender Care and Protection residential programme, which catered for 12 to 16 year olds "for whom a group living situation is seen as the best option to assist them in dealing with identified problems." Youth Justice residents were from the Southern Operations region, Care and Protection residents were from the South Island, north of Timaru.<sup>2478</sup> Youth Justice residents were young people who were either on remand, serving Supervision with Residence Orders, or serving prison sentences.<sup>2479</sup>

In 1991 Kingslea was accepting "more difficult or professionally demanding" residents, some of whom required an extra staff member for each shift whose sole responsibility was the difficult young person.<sup>2480</sup> The roll was approximately 20 residents, and additional staffing was sought when the roll rose above 20.<sup>2481</sup> Of the 89 new youth justice residents admitted between January and May 1991 13 were female and 76 were male; 33 were Maori and 56 were European. Additionally, there were usually around five care and protection residents in residence at any one time.<sup>2482</sup> Kingslea accepted residents from the southern region, and would only accept

<sup>2471</sup> J R Rowe for District Commissioner of Works to Building Supervisor, 13/2/87, Kingslea Profile F5000005133876.

<sup>2472</sup> Minutes from Shirley Neighbourhood Support Groups meeting, 22/9/87, Kingslea Profile F5000005627905.

<sup>2473</sup> "Welfare homes under one roof 'good move'", Deborah McPherson, *Christchurch Press*, 1/9/88, Kingslea Profile, F002640.

<sup>2474</sup> Department of Social Welfare Residential Facilities, 27/10/88, Kingslea Profile, F5000004606880.

<sup>2475</sup> Vaughan Milner for Assistant Director General to M Doolan, National Director Youth and Employment, 7/2/89, Kingslea Profile F5000004673604.

<sup>2476</sup> Audit Report, October 1989, Kingslea Reports F007702, p 4.

<sup>2477</sup> Audit Report, October 1990, Kingslea Reports F5000004603647, p 4. The new legislation was the Children, Young Persons and their Families Act 1989.

<sup>2478</sup> Audit Report, October 1990, Kingslea Reports F5000004603647, p 4.

<sup>2479</sup> Report to the Hon Roger McClay, Associate Minister of Social Welfare, 22/7/92, Kingslea Reports F5000004081321, p 1.

<sup>2480</sup> See for example, D Elston Executive, Assistant Southern Operations to M Doolan, Assistant Director General, 11/1/91, Kingslea Profile F5000005627897.

<sup>2481</sup> Memo from various staff members to F Erickson, Assistant Director, 16/1/1991, Kingslea Staffing F5000004602521.

<sup>2482</sup> Memo from P H Campbell, Director to Director Weymouth Residential Centre, 26/6/91, Kingslea Admissions F5000004603003.

residents from other districts if there were special circumstances, such as if the resident had committed a serious or indictable offence and required an extended period in secure, or if Epuni and Weymouth were full.<sup>2483</sup>

In 1992 Kingslea had 15 Youth Justice beds although there were some occasions when there were up to 17 residents. There were also six Care and Protection beds. At times in 1992 the unit was completely empty,<sup>2484</sup> although in 1993 the Care and Protection unit was full all year and there was a waiting list.<sup>2485</sup>

Youth Justice and Care and Protection residents lived apart in 1992 but both groups attended the Kingslea school. The National Operations Manager commented that they were separated in the classroom, all of their activities were separate, and they did not generally get the opportunity to meet with one another.<sup>2486</sup> In 1994, however, Kingslea was contacted by the *Sunday Star Times* about the fact that Care and Protection residents were being housed in the same building as Youth Justice residents. The Branch Manager believed that the information could only have been given to a reporter by a staff member. He stated "I have personally found that most staff have supported the tough fiscal decisions we have had to take this year. The reasons we slept the Care and Protection young people in Scottford were well known and staff did a superb job in ensuring this policy decision worked well."<sup>2487</sup>

Admission numbers of care and protection residents increased from 35 in 1993 to 45 in 1994. Conversely, admission numbers of youth justice residents decreased from 125 in 1993 to 113 in 1994.<sup>2488</sup>

In 1994 Kingslea had a National Secure Unit for up to six offenders aged under 17 years sentenced to a term of imprisonment; a 20 bed unit Youth Justice; and seven Care and Protection beds which served the area from Napier South to Ashburton.<sup>2489</sup>

## Length of stay

In general, the length of stay declined over the period this report covered. In 1956 most residents spent approximately 18 months at the Home.<sup>2490</sup>

In 1967 the average length of stay at Kingslea was 17 months; Head Office believed it should be shortened to 15 months in order to admit more girls each year. (The average length of stay had already been reduced from two years.)<sup>2491</sup> The Principal responded that Kingslea staff would try to discharge residents sooner but noted that early discharge would frustrate the progress of some residents; that some girls under

<sup>2483</sup> W W Simons, Acting Assistant Director to Assistant Director General, 7/5/91, Kingslea Secure F5000005627897.

<sup>2484</sup> Average Occupancy Levels of Residences for Period 1 January to 30 June 1992, Kingslea Profile F5000006021151.

<sup>2485</sup> Internal Audit Report, November 1993, Kingslea Reports F5000004603647, p 6.

<sup>2486</sup> Report to the Hon Roger McClay, Associate Minister of Social Welfare, 22/7/92, Kingslea Reports F5000004081321, p 2.

<sup>2487</sup> Memo from P H Campbell, Branch Manager to all staff, 19/4/94, Kingslea Staffing F5000004602562.

<sup>2488</sup> Memo from R Lovell, Manager Information Unit to B Hegarty, Senior Policy Analyst, 13/12/94, Kingslea Admissions F5000002786482.

<sup>2489</sup> Report to the Minister of Social Welfare, author unknown, 20/9/94, Kingslea Profile F5000003144946.

<sup>2490</sup> "Girls' Training Centre – Interesting Address" writer unknown, newspaper unknown, 17/2/56, Kingslea Profile 2005013472.

<sup>2491</sup> Minutes from Head Office Staff Meeting, 24/4/67, Kingslea Profile F021155.

15 would find it extremely hard to fit into an outside school; and that some girls had nowhere to be discharged to and the only appropriate action was to keep them at Kingslea.<sup>2492</sup>

In 1972 an increase in the number of admissions to Kingslea resulted in decreased lengths of stay. As a result, girls were placed in the hostel after only seven months of training. It was reported that these girls were unable to cope with the increased freedom the hostel offered, and required a more controlled environment. Kingslea therefore requested night staff be appointed for the hostel.<sup>2493</sup>

In 1977 the expected length of stay was calculated in conjunction with the residents after their initial period of settling in. The criteria in determining length of stay were age; schooling; home circumstances; resolution of individual problems; and other factors. Principal O T Ryan commented that home circumstances were very much linked with discharge plans, discharging girls who had a suitable home to return to was much simpler than discharging those who did not. He noted that some girls who could not be released to family would require "at least a term living in the flatting situation at Kingslea, going out to work and learning the skills of independent living."<sup>2494</sup>

Between 1979 and 1980 the average length of stay at Kingslea for extended care residents decreased from 13.56 months to 10.16 months.<sup>2495</sup> Between 1980 and 1984 the average length of stay was approximately 350 days.<sup>2496</sup>

In 1985 there were frequent changes in caseworkers for girls due to a high turnover in staff, which in some instances reportedly accounted for longer stays at Kingslea.<sup>2497</sup>

In 1987 Principal M E Judge stated: "No girl's return home or to the community has been unnecessarily delayed due to schooling alone where her fifteenth birthday is target for discharge. It has always been occasioned by a combination of immaturity and social problems that has delayed discharge with the birthday given as a target for the girl to work towards."<sup>2498</sup>

In 1988 a newspaper article stated that length of stay at Kingslea ranged from a few hours to three or four years but that the average stay was between six and eight months.<sup>2499</sup>

There is little information available about the length of stays of residents between 1988 and 1994.

<sup>2492</sup> Memo from Principal to Superintendent, 17/5/67, Kingslea Profile, Archives W5048/376 2006/8588.

<sup>2493</sup> Memo from I J D Mackay, Department of Education to State Services Commission, 25/9/72, SSC Archives file 24/2/55/24NI. This file can only be viewed at New Zealand Archives with written permission from the State Services Commission. Should any document from this file be required please allow time for the request to be processed.

<sup>2494</sup> Memo from O T Ryan, Principal to Assistant Director (Social Work), 13/7/77, Kingslea Admissions F500000925867. For more information on the relationship between education and length of stay, see Schooling section.

<sup>2495</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1980, Kingslea Annual Reports F5000004606486, appendix III, p 2.

<sup>2496</sup> See Institution Statistics 1984, 4/11/85, Kingslea Profile F5000002186501 for length of stay statistics for each year.

<sup>2497</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1985, Kingslea Annual Reports F5000004606486, p 2.

<sup>2498</sup> Memo from M E Judge, Principal, to Regional Director, 3/3/87, Kingslea Education F5000005133876.

<sup>2499</sup> "Welfare homes under one roof 'good move'", Deborah McPherson, *Christchurch Press*, 1/9/88, Kingslea Profile, F002640.



## Programmes and care

### Admission procedures

The undated 'Introduction to Assessment Guide' noted that the first 24 hours after a young person's admission was a crucial time. The guide instructed social workers to keep the atmosphere informal and relaxed, and recommended that staff defuse immediate questions and anxieties; explain the roles and purposes of the Kingslea Resource Centre and of the caseworker; create expectations from the start in terms of planning, programmes and routines; begin the process of getting to know the resident in order to create an effective casework relationship; and introduce the resident to the process of planning and assessments.<sup>2500</sup>

Director M E Judge recalled that in 1962 some girls were sent to Kingslea without being told where they were going. She commented that a girl may have been told she was going on holiday and "often our first job was to get her over the shock of being here and help her to settle in."<sup>2501</sup>

In 1977 residents only brought enough clothing for the first few weeks with them to Kingslea, and after that made their own clothes.<sup>2502</sup>

A staff newsletter in 1977 stated that "wherever possible the new girls are going straight to an open house."<sup>2503</sup>

When a new resident was admitted in 1978, staff would determine which house she would move into on the basis of how well the peer group in that unit would accept, support and help her. Most girls were admitted directly into an open house. Once a house had been decided for the resident she was allocated a case worker. It was noted that it was important to reassure the girl while she was vulnerable in the admission process, as the foundations laid then would affect how open she was to change later.<sup>2504</sup>

In 1981 staff recognised the importance of the admission procedure, commenting "we regard admission as the beginning of the interventive process, ritual elements of admission will be kept to a minimum, with staff energy focussed on welcoming a girl, making her comfortable and helping her feel at ease."<sup>2505</sup>

In 1983 Principal M Doolan commented that the admission procedures for Maori girls needing residential care would see them referred to the 'Maatua Whangai' programme first. The Maatua Whangai workers, in consultation with field social workers, would decide upon the best option for the girl.<sup>2506</sup>

<sup>2500</sup> 'Introduction to Assessment Guide', author unknown, date unknown, Kingslea Admissions F5000004603003.

<sup>2501</sup> "Kingslea director a long way from cleaning cloths", Sue Lancaster, The Press, 28/1/88, Kingslea Profile, F5000005628256.

<sup>2502</sup> Questionnaire sent to National Institutions, 1977, Kingslea Admissions 2005013475, p 1.

<sup>2503</sup> Kingslea Newsletter 1977/25, 6/9/77, Kingslea Admissions F5000005133786.

<sup>2504</sup> "The Philosophy of Residential Care at Kingslea", author unknown, August 1978, Kingslea Reports F5000005628256, p 2.

<sup>2505</sup> "The practice of residential care at Kingslea Christchurch" compiled by Kingslea staff, August 1981, Kingslea Profile F5000005133784.

<sup>2506</sup> Memo from M P Doolan, Principal to Regional Directors and Director General, 19/12/83, Kingslea Admissions F5000000923180.

In 1991 only senior residential social workers could admit residents to Kingslea, and in their absence the Director or Assistant Director.<sup>2507</sup> From May 1991 all requests for admissions were made by field senior social workers and not by police. Written evidence had to be provided that all other options had been sought (and not merely explored), and no young persons were to be admitted without full documentation of the incidents which resulted in the need for residential care.<sup>2508</sup>

### **The progressive system**

In 1962 the Principal recommended Slessor House be used as an admission house. After their period at Slessor, difficult girls would move on to Nightingale House, and the rest to Keller House in order to separate off the girls with bad behaviour.<sup>2509</sup>

A newspaper article in the 1960s made reference to the fact that there was a progression for residents through the various houses. As they progressed girls moved from Nightingale to Slessor to Keller and, lastly, to the Mabel Howard hostel.<sup>2510</sup>

Helen Keller House was initially used to house younger girls, aged 15 and under but by 1970 it was being used as an admission house for the first two months of girls' time at Kingslea. Mabel Howard Hostel was used for girls in the final months of their training, as well as for girls who were going out to work in the community.<sup>2511</sup>

In 1980 Mabel Howard House provided short term remand and assessment and the other houses provided extended care. Principal M P Doolan noted "the houses are largely autonomous with regard to casework decision making and residential programming, within the broad framework of policy which governs the total operation."<sup>2512</sup> Short term admissions were not arranged by the Kingslea Principal or staff, but by the Strathmore liaison officer.<sup>2513</sup> In 1982 the remand and assessment residents were moved into Keller House. It was noted that Howard House had been built to meet the needs of girls nearing discharge, and that girls in short term care had different requirements, such as small and compact environments rather than large, spread out facilities.<sup>2514</sup>

In 1984 Keller House was used as a short term assessment house. Girls were accommodated in eighteen single rooms and were not allowed to enter each others rooms. The length of stay in Keller was anywhere between a few day and several months.<sup>2515</sup>

In 1985 Pedder House reportedly differed from the other houses in that it provided therapeutic intervention through "group process".<sup>2516</sup> Pedder had lower numbers of

<sup>2507</sup> Memo from F Erickson, Assistant Director to all youth justice field staff, 22/10/91, Kingslea Staffing F5000004602521.

<sup>2508</sup> Admission procedures for Kingslea Resource Centre, May 1991, Kingslea Admissions F5000004602521.

<sup>2509</sup> Memo from K J Ford, Principal, to Superintendent, 29/10/62, Kingslea Profile, F021158/2003028572.

<sup>2510</sup> "Jobs found for girls at end of period of training", Dorothy Braxton, publication unknown, date unknown, circa early 1960s, Kingslea Programmes, F021158 2003028572.

<sup>2511</sup> A review of some of the changes in the Centre in the period 1942-1970, Mrs K J Ford (Principal), 1970, Kingslea Annual Reports 2005013670, p 10.

<sup>2512</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1980, Kingslea Annual Reports F5000004606486, p 2.

<sup>2513</sup> Memo from J de Bruin for Director to Director General, 5/3/80, Kingslea Admissions Archive 2005033549.

<sup>2514</sup> Memo from M P Doolan, Principal to Director General, 22/3/82, Kingslea Profile F5000005133784.

<sup>2515</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1984, Kingslea Annual Reports F5000004606486, Keller Report p 1.

<sup>2516</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1985, Kingslea Annual Reports F5000004606486, p 3.

girls, the doors were not locked, and there was just one staff member on at a time. Keller housed short term residents, and Scottford and Howard housed extended care. Howard had two or three residents at a time, and there were no staff although girls were checked nightly. White House had highest level of independence, although girls were still checked nightly.<sup>2517</sup>

Howard House was closed in 1986 to manage loss of staff.<sup>2518</sup> In 1986 one of the Pedder units was closed due to lack of girls in the Residence. Howard House was also closed around this time.<sup>2519</sup>

There was also an onsite Family Home operating between at least 1970 and 1986. The Home had up to six beds, and was intended to help girls to transition back into the community.<sup>2520</sup>

## Reward programmes

In 1960 residents received pocket money each week which could be spent at the canteen. It was noted that spending money was used as an incentive system, and parents were advised that money must not be sent in.<sup>2521</sup>

A Girls' Council operated at Kingslea in 1970. An election was held each term and the council consisted of three girls from the Hostel and the three main houses, and two girls from the admission house. The Girls' Council produced a newspaper every two months, and hosted monthly Coffee Cabarets for the girls in houses which had gone a month with no incidents of absconding.<sup>2522</sup> In 1965 the Girls Council implemented a grades system through which the residents could work, "helping them to see their progress more clearly and rewarding them for their effort." Each grade had a pocket money limit that could be earned and prescribed privileges. The Council was still operating in 1970<sup>2523</sup> and 1971<sup>2524</sup> and had operated since at least 1956.<sup>2525</sup>

Girls received 95 cents pocket money per week in 1977, 45 cents of which they were permitted to spend on sweets, the remaining 50 cents was to be spent on other purchases or lay-bys.<sup>2526</sup>

In 1991 residents received pocket money which was to be split with half for Friday nights and half for weekend outings. Any costs for damage were deducted from their pocket money. Residents were allocated \$15 for a birthday present, which was purchased by their case worker.<sup>2527</sup>

<sup>2517</sup> "The 'in' scene", Wendy Beecroft, *Canta*, August 1986, Kingslea Profile F5000005133782.

<sup>2518</sup> M E Judge, Principal to Director General, 13/12/85, Kingslea Staffing F5000005133782.

<sup>2519</sup> M E Judge, Principal, to Director General, 23/9/86, Kingslea Reports F5000005133876, p 4.

<sup>2520</sup> See Kingslea Annual Report 1970, Kingslea Annual Reports 2005013670, p 16; and Memo from T M Comer, Regional Director to Director General, 3/12/86, Kingslea Family Home F500005133878.

<sup>2521</sup> Letter sent to residents' parents, writer unknown, 21/12/60, Kingslea Contact with Families F021158/2003028572.

<sup>2522</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1970, Kingslea Annual Reports 2005013670, p 17.

<sup>2523</sup> A review of some of the changes in the Centre in the period 1942-1970, Mrs K J Ford (Principal), 1970, Kingslea Annual Reports 2005013670, p 8.

<sup>2524</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1971, Kingslea Annual Reports 2005013670, p 13.

<sup>2525</sup> Memo from K J Scotter, Principal to Superintendent, 25/10/1956, Kingslea Profile Archives 2006/24605.

<sup>2526</sup> Kingslea Newsletter 1977/23, 9/8/77, Kingslea Programmes F5000005133786.

<sup>2527</sup> Kingslea Admission Pack, date unknown circa 1991, Kingslea Admissions F5000004602521.

## General care

In 1970 and 1971 girls met with an "assessment committee" after three months at Kingslea. At the meetings girls were encouraged to talk about the problems that resulted in her admission to Kingslea, to discuss a plan for training, and to discuss future placement for when she was discharged.<sup>2528</sup> The "evaluation committee" met girls at four monthly periods and girls were encouraged to assess their own progress and treatment.<sup>2529</sup>

In the 1970s, Kingslea treatment procedures were based on nurturance; recreation; case work; education; and medical care.<sup>2530</sup>

In 1985 Kingslea treatment was aimed at "achieving emotional stability and enhancing social effectiveness".<sup>2531</sup>

An audit report in 1988 found the overall standard and quality of care was very low at Kingslea. The audit brought to light a lack of programmes meeting the educational, vocational and recreation needs of residents; a lack of recorded treatment programmes; and a lack of staff accountability and monitoring of programmes. The auditors also noted low standards of case work and social work practice.<sup>2532</sup> By 1989 the auditors found there had been "an improvement in the standard of care through having systems, procedures and standards developed and agreed to, and being utilised."<sup>2533</sup> They also found that their previous concerns about vocational and educational programmes had been addressed as Kingslea had employed a programme coordinator to assist the residential social workers develop programmes that were "responsive to the needs of children and young persons in care."<sup>2534</sup>

Kingslea began to accept male residents after the integration with Christchurch Boys' Home in 1988. Director M E Judge commented "we believe it will be an advantage to have boys and girls. The environment will be more normal and they will feel less segregated from the community than they have in the past."<sup>2535</sup> The boys' and girls' care programmes were merged in 1989.<sup>2536</sup>

Feedback from various districts in 1991 indicated that the Care and Protection unit was too small for the area it serviced.<sup>2537</sup> There was also concern about a significant

<sup>2528</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1970, Kingslea Annual Reports 2005013670, p 8.

<sup>2529</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1970, Kingslea Annual Reports 2005013670, p 9; and Kingslea Annual Report 1971, Kingslea Annual Reports 2005013670, p 6.

<sup>2530</sup> For more information see Treatment Procedure Kingslea, author unknown, date unknown circa 1976, Kingslea Reports F5000005133786, pp 2-7.

<sup>2531</sup> "Kingslea the place where they make a fresh start", David Warner, *Ashburton Guardian*, 16/10/85,

Kingslea Profile F002640.

<sup>2532</sup> Institution Internal Audit Report, November 1988, Kingslea Reports F007702, p 1.

<sup>2533</sup> Audit Report, October 1989, Kingslea Reports F007702, p 6.

<sup>2534</sup> Audit Report, October 1989, Kingslea Reports F007702, p 7.

<sup>2535</sup> "Kingslea director a long way from cleaning cloths", Sue Lancaster, *The Press*, 28/1/88, Kingslea Profile, F5000005628256.

<sup>2536</sup> Audit Report, October 1989, Kingslea Reports F007702, p 10. For information on public reaction to the transfer, see Contact with Community section.

<sup>2537</sup> See for example, M A Smith, Acting ADSS Linwood to John Wallis, Senior Advisor, Southern Operations, 17/6/1991, Kingslea Reports F50000005627897.

amount of managerial input, influence and control in casework<sup>2538</sup> and confusion about the admission criteria due to the "broad mix of behaviours" in the unit.<sup>2539</sup>

The aim of the new Care and Protection unit in the early 1990s, as set out in its mission statement, was to "provide a therapeutic residential programme for children/young persons on a Care and Protection status within our service, who are unable to be catered for within the community because of the serious and/or dangerous nature of their behaviour."<sup>2540</sup> Staff intended to improve the behaviour, interpersonal and intrafamily relations, and social skills of young persons, as well as providing support for their families. This was to be achieved with group learning, recreational programmes, and maintaining staff/resident relationships based on mutual respect rather than using "institutional power".<sup>2541</sup>

## Domestic programmes

At some stage at Kingslea a "Home Practice Certificate Course" was offered, where girls were assessed on their domestic skills. Girls who completed this course were presented with a certificate and a record of their assessment, which was to show they were capable of maintaining their "future home or flat to a high standard".<sup>2542</sup>

In 1952 it was reported that the scope of training offered had been increased "with greater attention to the widely varying educational needs of girls recently in residence". The practical training was extended to include dressmaking, cooking, gardening, domestic, commercial and poultry work.<sup>2543</sup>

The Principal stated in 1956: "The general purpose of the Institution is to help disturbed adolescent girls to understand their problems and to begin to live by socially accepted standards." It was intended that the occupational and vocational programmes would teach girls "to be good housewives when they later marry."<sup>2544</sup> Girls were taught cooking, laundry, dressmaking, hairdressing and waitressing. They had access to singing classes, drama groups and ballet lessons. Residents had their own "Management Council" which was made up of four girls elected from each house who made their own "home rules".<sup>2545</sup>

*New Zealand Woman's Weekly* reported in 1965 that there were "excellent facilities in the new homecraft unit and a first class staff, the girls have everything they need to design and make their own clothes. Materials are supplied for them."<sup>2546</sup>

<sup>2538</sup> Nick Findley, Manager, Shirley Area Welfare Office to John Wallis, Senior Advisor, Southern Operations, 30/6/1991, Kingslea Reports F5000005627897 p 1.

<sup>2539</sup> Karen Armstrong, Senior Social Worker, Riccarton Area Welfare Office to John Wallis, Senior Advisor, Southern Operations, 29/5/1991, Kingslea Reports, F5000005627897 p 1.

<sup>2540</sup> Care and Protection Unit document, untitled, author and date unknown, circa early 1990s, Kingslea Reports F5000003759606.

<sup>2541</sup> Care and Protection Unit document, untitled, author and date unknown, circa early 1990s, Kingslea Reports F5000003759606.

<sup>2542</sup> Kingslea Home Practice Certificate Course Record of Training, date unknown, Kingslea Programmes F5000005133784.

<sup>2543</sup> "Girls' Training Centre – Work at Burwood extended", author unknown, *Christchurch Press*, 12/9/52, Kingslea Programmes 2005013472.

<sup>2544</sup> Memo from K J Scotter, Principal to Superintendent, 25/10/1956, Kingslea Profile Archives 2006/24605

<sup>2545</sup> "Girls' Training Centre – Interesting Address" writer unknown, newspaper unknown, 17/2/56, Kingslea Profile 2005013472.

<sup>2546</sup> "Burwood – Home to Girls Who Never Had a Chance" Dorothy Braxton, *New Zealand Woman's Weekly*, 15/2/65, Kingslea Profile F021155.

Following an educational and vocational assessment, Youth Justice residents in 1990 completed five units: kitchen and food prep; horticultural skills; work skills; domestic skills; and life skills.<sup>2547</sup>

### Recreational activities

In 1961 the Principal requested extra funding to purchase musical instruments with the intention of starting a band for the residents.<sup>2548</sup>

In 1964 the Principal commented that the use of the camp at Glentui had provided staff with a "wonderful opportunity to take small groups of girls right away from the centre" and that the use of the camp played an important part in the training programme.<sup>2549</sup>

A monthly newsletter, the Centre News, was produced in 1968. It seems this was written by residents, and distributed amongst past and present residents and staff.<sup>2550</sup>

The Duke of Edinburgh scheme commenced at Kingslea in 1966.<sup>2551</sup>

Recreational activities in 1970 included art classes, pottery, creative dancing, Maori songs and dances, and handcrafts.<sup>2552</sup> In 1970 Kingslea held a talent quest, a "Miss Kingslea" contest, an art display and mannequin parade and centre dances.<sup>2553</sup> There were netball, softball and swimming competitions that girls could compete in, and some girls gained badges in surf life saving, gymnastics and trampoline. There were also overnight camps at Glentui for residents.<sup>2554</sup>

The Christmas Tableaux was held annually between 1944 and 1970. There were inter-house art, craft and musical competitions held annually between 1946 and 1964 which continued up till 1970 as two separate events, the mannequin parade and the concert.<sup>2555</sup>

In 1972, in addition to the previously mentioned activities, Kingslea residents were able to participate in hairdressing, cooking, tramping, horse riding, sewing and knitting.<sup>2556</sup>

In 1977 newspapers were delivered daily to each of the houses "in order that the girls have the opportunity to keep abreast of current affairs."<sup>2557</sup>

In 1978 recreation had expanded to also include basketball; jogging; roller skating; swimming; tennis; soccer; squash; badminton; hockey; and trampolining. Residents

<sup>2547</sup> For more information see Youth Justice Programme Corporate Management Meeting Report, 15/2/1990, Kingslea Reports F5000004672604, p 6.

<sup>2548</sup> Memo from K J Ford, Principal to Superintendent, 8/3/1961, Kingslea Programmes Archives W50481376 2006/8589.

<sup>2549</sup> Memo from K J Ford, Principal to Superintendent, 20/3/64, Kingslea Programmes Archives W5048/376 2006/8589.

<sup>2550</sup> See file F5000004605121 for examples of Centre News.

<sup>2551</sup> "Centre News" June 1968, Kingslea Profile F5000004605121.

<sup>2552</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1970, Kingslea Annual Reports 2005013670, p 18.

<sup>2553</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1970, Kingslea Annual Reports 2005013670, pp 19-20.

<sup>2554</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1970, Kingslea Annual Reports 2005013670, p 21.

<sup>2555</sup> A review of some of the changes in the Centre in the period 1942-1970, Mrs K J Ford (Principal), 1970, Kingslea Annual Reports 2005013670, p 9.

<sup>2556</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1972, Kingslea Annual Reports 2005013670, p 8.

<sup>2557</sup> Kingslea Newsletter 1977/3, 1/2/77, Kingslea Contact with Social Workers F5000005133786.

were able to join St Johns, arts and crafts clubs, and youth groups.<sup>2558</sup> Recreational activities were used to prevent boredom but also to give girls the ability to “self motivate, take responsibility, experience achievement, make decisions, organise time and carry out objectives.”<sup>2559</sup>

In 1984 eleven girls and three staff members participated in an Outward Bound course at Anakiwa.<sup>2560</sup>

All boxing, wrestling and martial arts sports were banned from the residential programmes in 1992. Play fighting between staff and residents was also prohibited. The Director stated: “Too often these situations have escalated in the past and it is not appropriate for staff working in a professional job to engage in with residents.”<sup>2561</sup>

## Cultural programmes

In 1962 a Doctor recommended Kingslea establish a Maori club to teach Maori culture to all residents.<sup>2562</sup>

A cultural advisor was appointed in 1986, and an old gymnasium was moved from Strathmore to Kingslea for use as a Whare Whanaga (place of learning.) The Principal commented that the cultural advisor had helped in the selection of new staff and had enabled Kingslea to link with Maori people seeking employment.<sup>2563</sup>

## Grievance procedures

There was little information about grievance procedures at Kingslea prior to 1989.

An integrated grievance procedure across campus was introduced in 1989.<sup>2564</sup> From 1991 residents were made aware of grievance procedures at the time of admission, and should they have any grievances during their time at Kingslea they were able to discuss them with the Director of Kingslea. The Director advised residents who were unhappy with their treatment that they could go to members of the Residence Management Committee, the Ombudsman, or the Director General. She encouraged them to first talk things over with their case workers or the senior residential social worker.<sup>2565</sup>

In the early 1990s there was a grievance procedure in place which staff claimed “ensured that clients have access to an impartial person with whom they can speak in confidence knowing that the person concerned will seek to readdress any reasonable grievance the client may have.”<sup>2566</sup>

In 1991 a memo was issued to residents and staff explaining the Kingslea grievance procedure. The Code of Practice required that young persons making complaints

<sup>2558</sup> “The Philosophy of Residential Care at Kingslea”, author unknown, August 1978, Kingslea Reports F5000005628256, pp 5-6.

<sup>2559</sup> “The Philosophy of Residential Care at Kingslea”, author unknown, August 1978, Kingslea Reports F5000005628256, p 6.

<sup>2560</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1984, Kingslea Annual Reports F5000004606486, p 9.

<sup>2561</sup> Memo from P H Campbell, Director to all Residential Staff, 25/2/92, Kingslea Programmes F5000004602521.

<sup>2562</sup> Memo from K J Ford, Principal, to Superintendent, 20/2/62, Kingslea Profile F021158/2003028572.

<sup>2563</sup> M E Judge, Principal, to Director General, 23/9/86, Kingslea Reports F5000005133876, p 4.

<sup>2564</sup> Memo from unknown author to M E Judge, Director, 2/3/89, Kingslea Staffing F007702.

<sup>2565</sup> Complaint from resident, M E Judge, Director, 29/1/90, Kingslea Complaints F5000005602501.

<sup>2566</sup> Care and Protection Unit document, untitled, author and date unknown, circa early 1990s, Kingslea Reports F5000003759606.

should have access to a sympathetic outside person, and the child advocate filled this role.<sup>2567</sup>

In [redacted] a resident complained that the grievance procedure was not taken seriously after he was told a staff member that his rights would not go far in Kingslea. The resident made a complaint to the Manager, and was interviewed by the youth advocate. He complained to her that had not been advised of his rights and the grievance procedure when he was first admitted. The youth advocate provided a written report to Kingslea, and stated that if all staff members took the same attitude in relation to grievances then residents would feel too intimidated to make a complaint. She advised that admission procedures should include the new resident including a written copy of the grievance procedures, and recommended residents sign the document as having sighted it.<sup>2568</sup>

In 1993 internal auditors recommended that staff updated a simplified version of Regulations to give to Care and Protection residents, and also recommended this document be provided to those in the Youth Justice programme too.<sup>2569</sup>

In 1994 the Branch Manager P H Campbell supported a recommendation for the appointment of a grievance panel. He stated "The type of structure for the hearing of grievances clearly must be independent of both the Service and the child or young person's family/whanau... A properly appointed panel provides greater choice for the clients of a person to talk to and has the capacity to meet individual's needs." He recommended that the panel be made up of lay people rather than legal professionals.<sup>2570</sup>

## Work and training

In 1956 residents were permitted to work off-campus in Christchurch in the later months of their stay.<sup>2571</sup>

In 1957 six residents were employed to sew and mend clothes for Kingslea residents in the sewing room. It was hoped this programme could be extended to employ more girls.<sup>2572</sup>

Four residents were chosen to do pre-vocational work in 1968, two worked with children and two worked with elderly people.<sup>2573</sup>

The vocational programme in 1970 was for girls not attending school and was intended to train the girls to be "good housewives" and teach them skills to enable them to find worthwhile employment upon leaving Kingslea.<sup>2574</sup> The vocation programme consisted of homecraft, dressmaking and household sewing,

<sup>2567</sup> Memo from F Erickson to Young People and Staff, 11/4/91, Kingslea Complaints F5000004602521.

<sup>2568</sup> N Walsh, Youth Advocate to P H Campbell, Branch Manager, 9/12/92, Kingslea Complaints F5000004602501.

<sup>2569</sup> Internal Audit Report, November 1993, Kingslea Reports F5000004603647, p 3.

<sup>2570</sup> Memo from P H Campbell, Branch Manager to Regional Manager Southern, 25/1/94, Kingslea Complaints F5000004602501.

<sup>2571</sup> "Girls' Training Centre – Interesting Address" writer unknown, newspaper unknown, 17/2/56, Kingslea Profile 2005013472.

<sup>2572</sup> Memo from K J Ford, Principal to Superintendent, 7/8/59, Kingslea Staffing F021158/2003028572.

<sup>2573</sup> "Kingslea News", March 1968, Kingslea Profile F5000004605121.

<sup>2574</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1970, Kingslea Annual Reports 2005013670, p 14.



waitressing, cooking, laundry work and hairdressing.<sup>2575</sup> Some residents worked in the community on pre-vocational placements two mornings each week, and others on full time work placements.<sup>2576</sup> The programme continued in 1971.<sup>2577</sup>

In 1975 Kingslea management decided that girls working a 40 hour week in the kitchen and laundry should be paid a suitable wage, and noted that this would in the future possibly apply also to girls that worked in the garden and the sewing room.<sup>2578</sup>

In 1978 a class was set aside in the school for older girls, and two days of each week were set aside for "work exploration". Girls were employed by city businesses and factories, and their teacher brought them home from work "to allow interchange of ideas and questions which are expounded more freely over the three days in the classroom."<sup>2579</sup>

In 1978 there was a pre-employment course for girls at the Kingslea school, funded by the Department of Education and the Labour Department. In 1979 Kingslea wished to run the course again and as there was no longer any funding available from the Department of Education, the Acting Principal requested funds from Head Office.<sup>2580</sup> The outcome of this request was not found on file.

In 1980 a visitor to Kingslea reported that there were only four or five girls on the community-based work experience programme and that it could be extended to include more girls and other occupations more suitable for the residents.<sup>2581</sup>

In 1980 the Principal commented that as girls on the work experience programme did not receive payment or reward for the work they completed, staff members should take an interest in the girls' work and compliment them on it to increase the satisfaction they took from the work.<sup>2582</sup>

The Principal reported that in 1981 the domestic and general services staff were "becoming increasingly involved in the direct work training of girls for whom employment opportunities in the community have disappeared."<sup>2583</sup>

In 1984 Kingslea established and registered the Te Oranga Work Trust. It was registered with a grant of \$2000 and the Principal M E Judge commented "our dream is to have a self sufficient trust which the girls can gain employment in and with local girls, stay in it during the transition back to the community." She noted however, "We have been frustrated and blocked at every initiative we take and passed backwards and forwards between the City Council and Labour departments."<sup>2584</sup>

The availability of the government S.T.E.P.S training programme in 1985 "completely altered" the job training programme on the property.

<sup>2575</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1970, Kingslea Annual Reports 2005013670, pp 14-15.

<sup>2576</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1970, Kingslea Annual Reports 2005013670, p 16.

<sup>2577</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1971, Kingslea Annual Reports 2005013670, p 11.

<sup>2578</sup> Kingslea Newsletter 1975/2, 7/10/75, Kingslea Programmes F5000005133786.

<sup>2579</sup> "The Philosophy of Residential Care at Kingslea", author unknown, August 1978, Kingslea Reports F5000005628256, p 3.

<sup>2580</sup> Memo from J A Blair, Acting Principal to Director General, 23/7/79, Kingslea Programmes 2005013475.

<sup>2581</sup> A Study Visit to Kingslea School for Girls" Des Walsh, 27/4/83, Kingslea Reports F5000005133784, p 6.

<sup>2582</sup> Kingslea Newsletter 1980/3, 5/2/1980, Kingslea Secure F5000005628258.

<sup>2583</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1981, Kingslea Annual Reports F5000004606489, p 12.

<sup>2584</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1984, Kingslea Annual Reports F5000004606486, p 9.

Residents who refused to attend their work skills programme in 1991 were required to complete a work programme in the house for the duration of the work skills activity instead. (This was already being used as the consequence for refusing to attend the school programme.) Furthermore, they were not paid for work skills they had not completed.<sup>2585</sup>

In 1992 internal auditors reported that a work skills programme had been established where young people were paid 50 cents per hour, working for three hours a day, five days a week. The money was held and used for specific purchases which were authorised by the social worker.<sup>2586</sup>

## Resident-to-resident issues

In 1950, on behalf of a former staff member, a lawyer suggested to the Minister of Social Welfare that there should be some segregation between "girls who may have had a moral lapse but who are otherwise quite good and comparatively innocent girls being corrupted by others of a different class."<sup>2587</sup>

In 1960 Principal K J Ford commented there had been difficulties with "Maori wars" in Nightingale House. She stated: "The aggressive abusive behaviour has been so difficult that some of the staff have felt they could not continue..."<sup>2588</sup> Arrangements were made for some Maori girls to transfer to other Residences as the Principal believed that as a group they were "ganging up" against staff and other residents, and that they had a "decided anti-pakeha" attitude.<sup>2589</sup>

In 1961 Principal K J Ford reported to the Department of Education that a lesbian resident was "infecting" other residents. Because of this, she was kept in secure care at night and supervised closely all day. The Principal reported that the situation was such that residents were not allowed to go to the toilet alone. One complainant had been allowed to go to the bathroom by herself, and a group of girls escaped through a kitchen window at the same time. It was alleged that four girls held the complainant down while this resident interfered with her.<sup>2590</sup>

There was an article in *Truth* in 1968 in which the mother of a resident claimed her daughter was afraid of "interference from other girls" at Kingslea. The girl told her mother that other residents had waited for her in her bed and had tattooed her name on their breasts and stomachs. The girl had also apparently claimed that residents "taught each other a variety of sex acts". The article stated that the claims had sparked an investigation.<sup>2591</sup> Following this article there was much correspondence inside the Child Welfare Division, and also between the Division and *Truth*.<sup>2592</sup> The Superintendent wrote to the editor stating that the claims were untrue and that the girl who had made them had admitted as much. He stated that the article caused distress and shock to most of the Kingslea girls, and requested that the Editor

<sup>2585</sup> Memo from F Erickson, Assistant Director to all staff, 29/5/91, Kingslea Education F5000004602521.

<sup>2586</sup> Internal Audit, 7-18 September 1992, Kingslea Programmes F5000004603647.

<sup>2587</sup> G P Pummell, Barrister and Solicitor to the Hon Mrs Hilda Ross MP, 25/10/50, Kingslea Complaints 2005013472.

<sup>2588</sup> Memo from K J Ford, Principal to Superintendent, 4/10/60, Kingslea Staffing 2003028572/F021158.

<sup>2589</sup> Note for file, author unknown, September 1960, Kingslea Profile 2003028572/F021158.

<sup>2590</sup> Department of Education Minute Sheets, author unknown, 4/1/61, Kingslea Staffing F021158/2003028572.

<sup>2591</sup> "Morals inquiry at Girls' Home", writer unknown, *Truth*, 17/7/68, Kingslea Profile F021155.

<sup>2592</sup> See Archives file W5048/376 2006/8588 for details.

publish his response.<sup>2593</sup> The Editor declined to publish the letter, which he said endeavoured to discredit a story he was satisfied was factually based.<sup>2594</sup>

In 1977 residents were reprimanded about "the very poor attitude" they had shown to new residents. The Principal stated in an assembly that a new girl's early progress depended on how she was received and cared for over the first few days, and requested all new girls be provided with "the support they require on arrival".<sup>2595</sup>

The Principal commented in 1980 that remand and assessment girls and extended care girls had different "stresses and pressures" and their living situations needed to be largely autonomous. He stated that they spent enough structured time together in school and games that did not seek unstructured time with the other group.<sup>2596</sup>

Five girls were charged after intentionally causing damage and disturbance in an effort to create a diversion to allow another group of inmates to abscond in 1985. While held in the District Court cells, one of the five was attacked as a result of "narking" about what had been occurring at Kingslea over the previous few days. The incident received media attention.<sup>2597</sup>

In 1991 youth justice staff commented that mixing the group of arrest and remand young people with the group of those who were the subject of 'supervision with residence' orders had a detrimental effect on the latter. The Assistant Director recommended that the two groups be housed in separate units.<sup>2598</sup>

In 1991 a complaint was made to the Human Rights Commission that one of the male residents was the victim of bullying by other residents; was unable to discuss [REDACTED] with staff; was not given parcels that had been sent to him; and his visitors were restricted. The Commission representative visited Kingslea to investigate the complaint, and concluded that although the resident had been punched by up to three other residents, he needed to take some responsibility for his own actions which may have led to the event. She found no basis as to the other complaints.<sup>2599</sup>

There were many incidents of physical assault and racism between residents recorded in 1994.<sup>2600</sup>

Between 1990 and 1994 resident incidents were recorded on incident sheets and filed. Staff were required to record the nature of the incident; whether it resulted in any injuries; names of residents and staff involved; the details of the incident; and whether physical intervention was required. Incidents in this period included residents assaulted by other residents, staff assaulted by residents, absconding, verbal abuse, drug use, and sexual assault.<sup>2601</sup>

<sup>2593</sup> L G Anderson, Superintendent to the Editor, *Truth*, 18/7/68, Kingslea Contact with Community Archives W5048/376 2006/8588.

<sup>2594</sup> J M Mahoney, Editor-in-Chief, *Truth* to L G Anderson, Superintendent, 25/7/68, Kingslea Contact with Community Archives W5048/376 2006/8588.

<sup>2595</sup> Kingslea Newsletter 1977/35, 16/11/77, Kingslea Admissions F5000005133786.

<sup>2596</sup> Memo from M P Doolan, Principal, to Director General, 17/10/80, Kingslea Reports 2005013475, p 1.

<sup>2597</sup> "Four girls sentenced over disturbance", writer unknown, *The Press*, 15/1/85, Kingslea Incidents F5000003920983.

<sup>2598</sup> Memo from F Erickson, Assistant Director to P Campbell, Director, 29/4/91, Kingslea Staffing F5000005133785.

<sup>2599</sup> File Note, F Erickson, Acting Director, 15/1/91, Kingslea Complaints F5000004602501.

<sup>2600</sup> See file F5000004607494 for examples.

<sup>2601</sup> For examples see files F5000006028177; F000004607497; F5000004604386; F5000004607496; F5000004607495; F5000004607494; F5000004673591; F5000004607492; F5000004607493; and F5000004607163.

In [REDACTED] a male resident was charged with unlawful sexual conduct and the rape of a female resident. He admitted the charges. The rape occurred in the open care and protection unit at Kingslea. The offender had slipped between "security beams" to get into the female resident's room. Staff had previously doubted the reliability of the security beam system but Armourguard had pronounced it to be in good working order. Staff noted that the offender had been able to get through due to his "unusually tiny build" but that they were exploring various options in order to prevent a recurrence.<sup>2602</sup> The rape was witnessed by another male resident,<sup>2603</sup>

In [REDACTED] staff found two male residents in a bedroom in the Care and Protection unit with their pants around their ankles. One later claimed that the other had been attempting to sexually assault him. The alleged offender claimed the first boy had consented to, and in fact initiated, the sexual activity. Kingslea staff informed the police who took statements from staff and both boys.<sup>2604</sup>

In [REDACTED] three young female residents from [REDACTED] complained to staff that a male resident had sexually assaulted them. Staff removed the boy from the unit and referred the matter to the police. The police referred the matter on to Specialist Services, and the three girls were "evidentially interviewed". The Branch Manager stated that the interviews were inconclusive and that there were inconsistencies in the girls' stories. The interviews were given to the police, and no further action was taken. There was media interest in this incident after one of the girl's mother contacted Newstalk ZB.<sup>2605</sup>

## Health and medication

### Medical examinations

In 1977 staff noted that Kingslea had full medical and dental services, and psychological and psychiatric services as required.<sup>2606</sup>

In 1978 there was a Sister on call for any medical matters after hours or on the weekends.<sup>2607</sup>

In 1981 staff stated in their "Practice of Residential Care" document that all girls who had not been in the care of the Department before would be given a full medical examination within a week of admission. They wrote that girls were to receive immediate and thorough medical care when sick, and would be provided with regular dental care. Staff agreed to abide by Department guidelines in relation to contraception, and strive to ensure maximum self-determination in contraception and pregnancy decisions.<sup>2608</sup>

The Principal informed staff in 1982 that medical examinations could not be made compulsory, and residents could not be punished for refusing to undergo a medical

<sup>2606</sup> Questionnaire sent to National Institutions, 1977, Kingslea Admissions 2005013475, p 4.

<sup>2607</sup> Kingslea Newsletter 1978/5, 14/2/78, Kingslea Health F5000005133786, p 2.

<sup>2608</sup> "The practice of residential care at Kingslea Christchurch" compiled by Kingslea staff, August 1981, Kingslea Profile F5000005133784.

examination. He advised that in situations where girls could not be persuaded or counselled into the examination and infection was strongly suspected, staff should seek advice from the Medical Officer of Health.<sup>2609</sup>

In the early 1990s health and dental treatment was provided at the request of residents' families, and residents could see their own General Practitioner or the Kingslea doctor. Residential staff were responsible for the supervision, supply and control of medical supplies.<sup>2610</sup>

### Visiting specialists

"Doctors' Case Conferences" were meetings involving a number of doctors where, having interviewed a number of girls in the institution, the doctors would discuss their cases with senior staff.<sup>2611</sup> These were occurring by 1956<sup>2612</sup> and were still conducted in 1971.<sup>2613</sup>

In 1983 the nurse commented that the medical officer was unable to meet the needs of Kingslea residents. She stated he could not talk to residents in language they could understand; was not patient, gentle or reassuring with residents, and did not respect the residents as individuals or give them the opportunities to make their own decisions. The nurse requested that the Principal terminate the medical officer's contract and find another suitable doctor.<sup>2614</sup>

In 1984 the medical practitioner and the Papanui medical team were the first port of call for all medical matters, including psychiatric, and they would then make any necessary referrals.<sup>2615</sup>

### Psychiatric care and medication

In 1962 two doctors at the Doctors Conference made critical remarks about the "timid" use of tranquilisers at Kingslea, and made it clear to the Centre doctor "that they considered he should use heavier dosage than he had been prepared to up to now."<sup>2616</sup> A doctor visiting from Ngawhatu Hospital also recommended that the use of drug therapy at the Residence be increased. As a result, several girls were placed on tranquilisers. The Doctor noted that to get the best results staff would need to "experiment to find the right 'holding' dose for the girl, and that then she should be kept on it for months, to allow time for the girl to settle down to make her more accessible to psychotherapy."<sup>2617</sup>

D G Reilly stated in 1970 that girls were usually placed in secure for short periods only. He stated "some are psychiatrically treated, many are under sedation, and the demands on staff are considerable."<sup>2618</sup>

<sup>2609</sup> Kingslea Newsletter 1982/38, 14/12/82, Kingslea Secure F5000005133784, p 4.

<sup>2610</sup> Care and Protection Unit document, untitled, author and date unknown, circa early 1990s, Kingslea Reports F5000003759606.

<sup>2611</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1970, Kingslea Annual Reports 2005013670, p 6.

<sup>2612</sup> Memo from K J Scotter, Principal to Superintendent, 25/10/1956, Kingslea Profile Archives 2006/24605

<sup>2613</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1971, Kingslea Annual Reports 2005013670, p 4.

<sup>2614</sup> C V Tallott, Nurse, to Principal. 13/7/83, Kingslea Staffing F5000005133784.

<sup>2615</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1984, Kingslea Annual Reports F5000004606486, p 10.

<sup>2616</sup> Memo from unknown author to Mr Ferguson, 21/12/62, Kingslea Staffing F021158/2003028572.

<sup>2617</sup> Memo from K J Ford, Principal, to Superintendent, Kingslea Profile F021158/2003028572.

<sup>2618</sup> Memo from D G Reilly for Director General of Education to State Service Commission, 31/7/70, SSC Archives file 24/2/55/24NI. This file can only be viewed at New Zealand Archives with written permission from the State Services Commission. Should any document from this file be required please allow time for the request to be processed.

In 1970 Principal K J Ford stated that there were a number of girls admitted to Kingslea who were on tranquilisers and antidepressants, and described it as a "disturbing feature not previously encountered to a noticeable extent." She stated that in many instances reliable information concerning the nature of the medication, the amount of time the girl had been taking it, and the reasons it had been prescribed "was not forthcoming".<sup>2619</sup>

In the 1970s some drugs were prescribed by the psychiatrist "as an aide until personal strengths, maturity, confidence and control" could be developed. These were usually for epileptic symptoms, severe depression or aggressive outbursts that could have had a neurological base. A Kingslea staff member wrote "we don't encourage the use of drugs and prefer to discharge girls after they have ceased to be dependant on them."<sup>2620</sup> Medical problems were dealt with by the nursing sister (who could request help from a doctor, gynaecologist, dentist or psychiatrist) and this area of care involved making girls aware of the social impact of their medical problems and the medical impact of their social problems.<sup>2621</sup>

In 1970, 45 of the 57 new admissions were seen by the psychiatrist.<sup>2622</sup>

In 1971 the psychiatrist visited Kingslea at least three times a week, and the psychologist visited once a week.<sup>2623</sup> In 1972 a doctor visited Kingslea once a week for an hour, seeing up to five girls per visit. He also attended in emergencies, which Principal P T Woulfe estimated amounted to another two visits each week.<sup>2624</sup>

In 1972 small groups of no more than six recent admissions met voluntarily with the visiting psychiatrist.<sup>2625</sup>

In May 1972 a visitor from the Ministry of Health reported that there were two girls at that time at Kingslea who were being sedated. The psychiatrist had informed him that sedation was used to "tide girls over in an emergency" and seldom lasted longer than five days or nights.<sup>2626</sup>

The Principal reported in 1978 that there had been some concern about the use of medication at Kingslea. He attempted to clarify the position for staff in their newsletter. He stated that girls often used the excuse that they were not sleeping to see the visiting psychiatrist, and that after discussion to ascertain the state of a girl's mental health, the psychiatrist could decide that the girl "could benefit from a small amount of medication to ease her tension, depression, or anxiety", or alternatively that the girl just needed extra support from staff. He remarked that there was a policy of using only minimal doses of psychiatric medicines as a temporary measure. The situation was reviewed by the psychiatrist at regular intervals and once a girl appeared "reasonably emotionally stable again" the medication was reduced and discontinued. Staff were to provide feedback and pass on any information about

<sup>2619</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1970, Kingslea Annual Reports 2005013670, p 5.

<sup>2620</sup> Treatment Procedure Kingslea, author unknown, date unknown circa 1976, Kingslea Reports F5000005133786, p 6.

<sup>2621</sup> Treatment Procedure Kingslea, author unknown, date unknown circa 1976, Kingslea Reports F5000005133786, pp 2-7.

<sup>2622</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1970, Kingslea Annual Reports 2005013670, p 4.

<sup>2623</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1971, Kingslea Annual Reports 2005013670, pp 3-5.

<sup>2624</sup> Memo from P T Woulfe, Principal to Superintendent, 10/3/72, Kingslea Health F5000005133784.

<sup>2625</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1972, Kingslea Annual Reports 2005013670, p 8.

<sup>2626</sup> Memo from R Selby for Medical Officer of Health, Ministry of Health to Director General, 21/6/72, SSC Archives file 24/2/55/24NI. This file can only be viewed at New Zealand Archives with written permission from the State Services Commission. Should any document from this file be required please allow time for the request to be processed.

## Section 9(2)(a) Official Information Act 1982 -Privacy of natural persons

negative side effects of the medication. The Principal advised staff that the psychiatrist only prescribed medication after girls had agreed to take it, and that the arrangement had been made girls had to take it every day. Girls could only stop taking their medication after discussion with the psychiatrist, who only visited once weekly. The Principal advised that the most commonly used medications were doxepin (an anti-depressant); chlorpromazine (a tranquiliser); and melleril (a sedative).<sup>2627</sup>

Psychological and psychiatric services could be accessed through the Senior Counsellor in 1980. An educational psychologist and a psychiatrist were available to residents as needed.<sup>2628</sup>

In a 1980 newsletter Principal M P Doolan advised staff of an incident where a resident obtained paracetamol tablets from several different staff members in a very short space of time. He requested that staff who gave painkillers to a girl from a different unit advise the staff in the girl's unit in order to prevent accumulation.<sup>2629</sup>

In 1981 Kingslea staff stated that no assumption would be made that a girl's problems were behavioural until "all organic, psychological and psychiatric possibilities" had been eliminated.<sup>2630</sup>

Between [REDACTED] and [REDACTED] individualised "re-parenting" programmes were produced for certain residents, the contents of which seem somewhat controversial. One case involved a fifteen year old girl being made to wear nappies in response to her bedwetting, and drink from a bottle in response to her over eating.<sup>2631</sup> Staff worked at re-parenting this resident for approximately a year before requesting specific training from a psychotherapist, acknowledging their lack of skill and recognising the sensitive area they were working in.<sup>2632</sup> The Director of specialist services was concerned about the re-parenting programme, noting that it was essential that staff had regular support and supervision from those who understood the approach. She instigated a programme of support and guidance, making a psychologist available for consultation. She also required an evaluation of the re-parenting programme to determine its usefulness.<sup>2633</sup>

In the 1984 Kingslea Annual Report reference was made to a resident being given medication intravenously after resisting admission to secure.<sup>2634</sup>

In [REDACTED] it was noted that a girl from Dunedin had to be dragged into the secure unit on her first admission, and sedated to be admitted the second time. Staff noted that she continued to be sedated for some time after admission, and that hand restraints were used for a period after the sedation stopped.<sup>2635</sup>

In 1994 the manager of the YMCA complained about an incident where a Kingslea resident had attended one of his programmes in a drug-impaired state, having taken

<sup>2627</sup> Kingslea Newsletter 1978/23, 18/7/78, Kingslea Health F5000005628255, pp 5-7.

<sup>2628</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1980, Kingslea Annual Reports F5000004606486, p 5.

<sup>2629</sup> Kingslea Newsletter 1980/6, 26/2/80, Kingslea Drugs and Smoking F5000005628258, p 3.

<sup>2630</sup> "The practice of residential care at Kingslea Christchurch" compiled by Kingslea staff, August 1981, Kingslea Profile F5000005133784.

<sup>2631</sup> Kingslea Annual Report [REDACTED], Kingslea Annual Reports F5000004606486, p20. For further information see file F5000005133782.

<sup>2632</sup> M E Judge, Principal to M Barr-Brown, Psychotherapist, [REDACTED], Kingslea Staffing F5000005133782.

<sup>2633</sup> Memo from P M Vincent, Director Specialist Services to J Scott, Divisional Director, Kingslea Programmes F5000005133782

<sup>2634</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1984, Kingslea Annual Reports F5000004606486, p 15.

<sup>2635</sup> "Secure Unit Kingslea Resource Centre Action Plan" [REDACTED], Kingslea Secure F500004516500, p 5.

Valium during the night.<sup>2636</sup> The Branch Manager stated the resident was on remand, and had received special permission to attend the course. He stated that in the future Kingslea would adhere to its policy of not allowing young people on remand to leave the property.<sup>2637</sup>

## Venereal diseases

Eight girls were treated for venereal diseases in 1970<sup>2638</sup> and five girls in 1971.<sup>2639</sup>

For a period in 1972 the Venereologist was away on leave and the nurse (who had previously been made to leave as she had reached retirement age) was rehired as she was considered able to conduct examinations in the Venereologist's absence.<sup>2640</sup>

In 1980 there was a full time nurse at Kingslea, responsible for organising all medical services.<sup>2641</sup> The Principal commented that the positive relationship the nurse had with the girls was helpful in the "treatment and detection of social diseases" as it enabled the nurse to carry out her job with the residents' full consent. The Principal stated that routine vaginal swabbing was prohibited at Kingslea.<sup>2642</sup>

## Health education

There was a formal health and sex education programme at Kingslea in 1981, and staff noted that the aim was for girls to have full knowledge of their body and its structure and functions, as well as an understanding of their sexuality, upon leaving.<sup>2643</sup>

In 1985 the nurse promoted positive health care and prevention of illness for girls at Kingslea by teaching staff (in the parents' role) and girls "to take more responsibility for the girls' own health, encouraging them supportively to make decisions about their health related problems and questioning whether a visit to the Doctor is necessary" and teaching the girls "about their body. Its functions and other health related matters involving adapting to growth change, independency and self esteem."<sup>2644</sup>

In 1986 the objectives of the nursing position were to provide an effective healthcare service to Kingslea residents; to promote positive healthcare among residents and staff; and to provide immediate oversight and treatment of residents' health needs. Among the nurse's responsibilities were taking an initial health history of new admissions and offering a general examination by the Medical Officer within a week of admission; ensuring each girl's health needs were met; maintaining health

<sup>2636</sup> P Vink, Manager YMCA Christchurch to P H Campbell, Branch Manager, 14/2/94, Kingslea Drugs and Smoking F5000004602501.

<sup>2637</sup> P H Campbell, Branch Manager to P Vink, Manager YMCA Christchurch, 21/3/94, Kingslea Drugs and Smoking F500000460251.

<sup>2638</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1970, Kingslea Annual Reports 2005013670, p 24.

<sup>2639</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1971, Kingslea Annual Reports 2005013670, p 18.

<sup>2640</sup> I J D Mackay, Department of Education to State Services Commission, 24/5/72, SSC Archives file 24/2/55/24NI. This file can only be viewed at New Zealand Archives with written permission from the State Services Commission. Should any document from this file be required please allow time for the request to be processed.

<sup>2641</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1980, Kingslea Annual Reports F5000004606486, p 5.

<sup>2642</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1980, Kingslea Annual Reports F5000004606486, p 6.

<sup>2643</sup> "The practice of residential care at Kingslea Christchurch" compiled by Kingslea staff, August 1981, Kingslea Profile F5000005133784.

<sup>2644</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1985, Kingslea Annual Reports F5000004606486, p 7.



education programmes; teaching staff and girls basic first aid skills; liaising with doctors, dentists and specialists; informing social work staff of residents' healthcare needs and advising the Principal of any aspects of a girl's health which may have a bearing on her development; and overseeing the use of medication.<sup>2645</sup>

The role of nurse/health educator was disestablished in 1990.<sup>2646</sup>

## Counselling

Regular counselling sessions were provided to as many girls as possible in 1970 and 1971.<sup>2647</sup> Over this period group discussions involving all the residents in a house and the staff members on duty were also held in every house each evening, which reportedly gave the residents an opportunity to "talk through their aggressions".<sup>2648</sup> Principal K J Ford believed that "the best returns, in terms of helping the girls at Kingslea, have come from a combination of group discussion and individual counselling, rather than from the exclusive use of one or the other."<sup>2649</sup>

There was a counsellor on staff at Kingslea in the 1970s to deal in depth with the more serious psychological or psychiatric problems of the girls, and at times help to establish treatment plans for residents.<sup>2650</sup>

The role of the senior counsellor in 1980 was to help staff develop effective treatment programmes for girls; be involved in staff training; and offer direct counselling services to girls and their families.<sup>2651</sup> However, the Principal stated that only around ten percent of social work staff were consulting Mr Kney, the senior counsellor, and directed that in 1981 Mr Kney would be involved in the planning and development of all girls' individual treatment programmes. Mr Kney would study the file of each new girl admitted, and then call a conference with other involved staff to determine treatment objectives and organise specialist intervention if necessary. Mr Kney had previously been required to supervise secure unit staff, but in 1981 a senior residential social worker was appointed to take over this task. The Principal noted that the senior counsellor's priorities become programme planning; counselling; family counselling; staff training; and liaison with specialists, as well as remaining a professional resource for clinic staff.<sup>2652</sup>

In 1981 staff developed a document entitled "The practice of residential care at Kingslea Christchurch" which stated: "We, the staff of Kingslea, seek to provide each girl admitted to Kingslea, with a social work and educational service of high quality; a service which will treat her as an individual, develop a programme tailored to her needs, and ensure she receives the best possible attention."<sup>2653</sup> Staff stated in the document that close relationships between staff and residents were encouraged to

<sup>2645</sup> Nurse position job description, October 1986, Kingslea Staffing F5000005133876.

<sup>2646</sup> Leonie Aldcroft, Nurse/Health Educator to various recipients, 10/1/90, Kingslea Reports. File number not given.

<sup>2647</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1970, Kingslea Annual Reports 2005013670, p 5; and Kingslea Annual Report 1971, Kingslea Annual Reports 2005013670, p 5.

<sup>2648</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1970, Kingslea Annual Reports 2005013670, p 7; and Kingslea Annual Report 1971, Kingslea Annual Reports 2005013670, p 5.

<sup>2649</sup> A review of some of the changes in the Centre in the period 1942-1970, Mrs K J Ford (Principal), 1970, Kingslea Annual Reports 2005013670, p 6.

<sup>2650</sup> Treatment Procedure Kingslea, author unknown, date unknown circa 1976, Kingslea Reports F5000005133786, p 5.

<sup>2651</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1980, Kingslea Annual Reports F5000004606486, p 5.

<sup>2652</sup> Kingslea Newsletter 1980/43, 17/12/80, Kingslea Staffing, p 3. File number not given.

<sup>2653</sup> "The practice of residential care at Kingslea Christchurch" compiled by Kingslea staff, August 1981, Kingslea Profile F5000005133784.

provide a model for future relationships, and that "we will demonstrate our caring through physical and verbal contact daily, i.e. hugs, punches, pats, saying we care." The document also stated that staff were to "always treat a girl with respect, no matter how challenging or unattractive she

In the 1980s it was noted that Kingslea staff were "chosen for their integrity, interest and concern and their ability to reach out to an adolescent in difficulty, with compassion and understanding."<sup>2654</sup>

### **Suicide attempts**

There were numerous suicide attempts in the secure unit in 1985.<sup>2655</sup>

In 1986 Head Office questioned staff response to a suicide attempt at Kingslea. Kingslea staff were reminded that a circular memo had issued instructions as to how to deal with suicide attempts and that these were to be adhered to as carefully as possible, given the "potential for tragedy".<sup>2656</sup> There were many suicide attempts in 1986.<sup>2657</sup>

### **Staffing issues**

In 1989 internal auditors at Kingslea found that the nurse had made herself a "health educator" and in turn "provision of actual health care is low on her priorities." They found she withheld information about residents from the residential social work staff.<sup>2658</sup> The auditors also found that some staff would not use the resident psychologist because they were not confident in him. It was noted that there was no formal avenue for him to receive feedback, but auditors found he was making a valuable contribution in his various roles, including his work as resident counsellor and psychologist.<sup>2659</sup>

Staff were reminded in 1994 that no medication belonging to a resident was to be shared by another resident, and that staff were not to give medication to a resident unless it had been prescribed by her doctor.<sup>2660</sup>

## **Psychiatric hospital placement**

In 1956 the institution had an arrangement with the public hospital that "highly disturbed" residents could be admitted to the psychiatric ward of the public hospital for observation. The Principal commented that this provided relief for the staff and other girls at Kingslea, and also gave the admitted girl "a period away from the institution where she can perhaps see her behaviour more clearly".<sup>2661</sup>

<sup>2654</sup> "Information about Kingslea", author unknown, date unknown circa 1980s, Kingslea Staffing F5000005628256.

<sup>2655</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1985, Kingslea Annual Reports F5000004606486, p 6.

<sup>2656</sup> Memo from B M Manchester for Director General to Principal, 25/3/86, Kingslea Incidents F5000005133782. The circular memorandum referred to was 1985/28.

<sup>2657</sup> For more details on the suicide attempts over this period see file F5000005133782.

<sup>2658</sup> Institution Internal Audit Report, November 1988, Kingslea Reports F007702, p 6.

<sup>2659</sup> Audit Report, October 1989, Kingslea Reports F007702, p 12.

<sup>2660</sup> Memo from F Erickson, Acting Director, 16/1/91

<sup>2661</sup> Memo from K J Scotter to Superintendent 2/10/56, Kingslea Health 2005013472.

There were no placements to psychiatric hospitals in 1970<sup>2662</sup> or 1971.<sup>2663</sup> In 1971 there were increasing numbers of girls who had been previously been admitted to psychiatric hospitals for weeks or months. The Acting Principal commented that "in no case has any benefit been derived and in some cases the level of anxiety has been raised by such admissions."<sup>2664</sup>

There is no information relating to psychiatric hospital placements after 1971.

## Staffing

In 1961 the Principal commented to the Department of Education that staff had been having a difficult time over the holidays, one staff member had resigned, and various others were threatening to leave.<sup>2665</sup>

1970 was an unstable year for staffing, of the 29 staff members recruited only 17 remained for the year.<sup>2666</sup> Principal K J Ford noted that most of the recruited staff were aged 21 or 22 meaning they lacked experience, and that there were few applications from anyone who had any social work training or background.<sup>2667</sup> There was a high turnover of staff this year.<sup>2668</sup> The Principal commented that Kingslea needed more staff, and more trained staff. She also noted that only 20% of staff lived on the grounds and this meant they generally had a custodial approach towards the girls rather than a personal concern.<sup>2669</sup>

There were live-in night staff who slept in Scottford in 1970, but they were often kept awake by girls who continued into the night to "carry on smoking and getting in each others' beds and get the windows and boys sometimes try to get into their rooms." For this reason the appointment of night staff for Scottford was requested.<sup>2670</sup>

Between 1967 and 1972 there were approximately 70 staff members at any one time at Kingslea.<sup>2671</sup>

In 1973 a Christchurch police sergeant was convicted and suspended due to the manner in which he dealt with a youth. Following this incident Kingslea staff sought direction from the Public Service Association as to how they should manage situations when they were required to "manhandle" a resident into secure or from one area of the Home to another, and situations when they needed to apprehend an

<sup>2662</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1970, Kingslea Annual Reports 2005013670, p 5.

<sup>2663</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1971, Kingslea Annual Reports 2005013670, p 3.

<sup>2664</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1971, Kingslea Annual Reports 2005013670, p 3.

<sup>2665</sup> Department of Education Minute Sheets, author unknown, 4/1/61, Kingslea Staffing F021158/2003028572.

<sup>2666</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1970, Kingslea Annual Reports 2005013670, p 2.

<sup>2667</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1970, Kingslea Annual Reports 2005013670, p 2.

<sup>2668</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1970, Kingslea Annual Reports 2005013670, p 4.

<sup>2669</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1970, Kingslea Annual Reports 2005013670, p 1.

<sup>2670</sup> Memo from N A Smart, Inspector to District Inspector, Christchurch State Services Commission, 23/11/70 SSC Archives file 24/2/55/24NI. This file can only be viewed at New Zealand Archives with written permission from the State Services Commission. Should any document from this file be required please allow time for the request to be processed.

<sup>2671</sup> See Kingslea Annual Report 1970, Kingslea Annual Reports 2005013670; Kingslea Annual Report 1971, Kingslea Annual Reports 2005013670; and Kingslea Annual Report 1972, Kingslea Annual Reports 2005013670.

absconder who showed resistance and force was required to return her to Kingslea.<sup>2672</sup>

In the late 1970s and early 1980s weekly staff newsletters were issued.<sup>2673</sup> In one such newsletter in 1977 the Principal reprimanded staff, stating that it was unacceptable for staff to swear at, or around, girls as this was a double standard.<sup>2674</sup>

In 1978 it was considered a case worker's role to become a trusted friend of the girl; plan for the girl with her individual needs in mind; prepare a case study that clearly defines those plans; and attend to the practical issues of her care.<sup>2675</sup>

In 1980 nine night staff members were hired.<sup>2676</sup>

In 1981 Kingslea staff defined treatment objectives for all residents within a few weeks of their admission. Each term caseworkers consulted other staff and produced a term programme which set out objectives for the coming term. The Principal wrote "in extended care our aim for every girl is that she have the benefit of a close and supportive relationship with a caseworker, who is aware of her needs and is capable of planning with the girl effective and appropriate ways for her needs to be met."<sup>2677</sup>

The Assistant Principal commented in 1982 that the secure staff team required training "to improve their professional relationship as they have had to battle to gain trust in each other and clear a lot of hidden agendas."<sup>2678</sup>

In 1985 there were fee for service workers providing services at Kingslea.<sup>2679</sup>

Staff concerns led to a meeting with R H Wood in 1985, and he relayed their concerns back to the Director General. Staff were concerned with the lack of training they were receiving, and believed the on-the-job training was inadequate. They were also unhappy with off-site training, stating that two out of 19 staff members nominated by the Principal were accepted for a Kohitere training course, and that provisions were not made for tertiary study. They commented that Residential Social Workers had to be "jack of all trades" meaning they were "unable to master any." Staff claimed that Head Office was out of touch, and did not "appreciate very different work pressures." They also endorsed the need for extra staff numbers.<sup>2680</sup>

A 1985 newspaper article stated two past residents had been working at Kingslea as social workers.<sup>2681</sup>

Official Information Act s 9(2)(a) Privacy of natural persons

In 1985 a secure unit staff member made a complaint about an incident between a resident and the police. [REDACTED]

<sup>2672</sup> Memo from G A Dawber to The Secretary-Organiser, Public Service Association, 27/7/73, Kingslea Staffing 2005013475.

<sup>2673</sup> See Kingslea Secure or file F5000005133786 for examples.

<sup>2674</sup> Kingslea Newsletter 1977/33, 1/11/77, Kingslea Drugs and Smoking F5000005133786.

<sup>2675</sup> "The Philosophy of Residential Care at Kingslea", author unknown, August 1978, Kingslea Reports F5000005628256, p 2.

<sup>2676</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1980, Kingslea Annual Reports F5000004606486, p 5.

<sup>2677</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1981, Kingslea Annual Reports F5000004606486, p 3.

<sup>2678</sup> Memo from M E Judge, Assistant Principal to Director General, 17/6/82, Kingslea Staffing F5000004673601.

<sup>2679</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1985, Kingslea Annual Reports F5000004606486, p 15.

<sup>2680</sup> R H Wood, DDA, to Director General, 21/8/85, Kingslea Reports F5000005133782.

<sup>2681</sup> "Kingslea the place where they make a fresh start", David Warner, *Ashburton Guardian*, 16/10/85, Kingslea Profile F002640.

[REDACTED] Principal M E Judge made a complaint to the District Commander of Christchurch police, remarking that although the girl had "severely provoked" them, the officers were "the people required to be in control".<sup>2682</sup> The Deputy Assistant Commissioner of Police replied that the allegation was "unequivocally denied by the Police" and requested an apology to the attending officers.<sup>2683</sup>

In 1986 the secure senior residential social worker commented that secure care "fails to attract staff with the required skills, simply because it is excessively demanding emotionally and physically, and is highly stressful."<sup>2684</sup> He also noted that there was "an apparent unawareness" within the Department of the number of female social workers who had themselves been victims of sexual abuse. He stated that between 1983 and 1985 he had counselled five social workers who had never received help for their abuse, and for whom helping residents with sexual abuse issues was making them relive their own.<sup>2685</sup>

In 1986 Howard House was closed for the purpose of "effectively regaining staffing strength".<sup>2686</sup>

In response to forthcoming restructuring, of the 120 combined staff of Kingslea and Christchurch Boys' Home at 1 January 1988, 70 had left or indicated a re-deployment option by 1 January 1989.<sup>2687</sup>

Following legislation changes in 1989 Kingslea was downsized, losing 30 staff members. There was a complete change of senior management staff and six of the nine senior residential social workers were newly appointed. Kingslea lost campus-based specialist staff such as the Residential Social Work Staff Trainer, teachers, the psychologist, and the nurse, which as a result limited the ability of management to provide tailored training programmes for staff. Internal auditors commented that "the cumulative effect of these changes over several years is a noticeable drop in the current staff team's level of expertise and experience, with a corresponding need for good staff supervision, training, and development. There has been an erosion of the systems and practices that ensure good quality service."

In 1989 internal auditors were again concerned about the recording and monitoring practices of staff.<sup>2688</sup> In 1990 internal auditors noted that many years worth of inadequate monitoring by senior management, a lack of accountability by residential social workers, and the use of relieving staff with less experience and knowledge had "contributed to "low overall standards of written accountability, casework, social work practice and programme development" which placed tremendous stress on the new senior management team.<sup>2689</sup> They commented that the negative attitudes held

<sup>2682</sup> M E Judge to District Commander, Christchurch Police, 14/6/85, Kingslea Incidents F5000005133782.

<sup>2683</sup> J A Jamieson, Deputy Assistant Commissioner of Police to T Comer, Director, 1/7/85, Kingslea Incidents F5000005133782.

<sup>2684</sup> [REDACTED] Senior Residential Social Worker Secure Unit to M Judge, Principal, [REDACTED], Kingslea Secure F500005133782, p 3.

<sup>2685</sup> [REDACTED] Senior Residential Social Worker Secure Unit to M Judge, Principal, [REDACTED], Kingslea Secure F500005133782, p 5.

<sup>2686</sup> Memo from David Hutchinson for Director General to Principal, 27/1/86, Kingslea Profile. F5000005133782.

<sup>2687</sup> Institution Internal Audit Report, November 1988, Kingslea Reports F007702, p 2.

<sup>2688</sup> Audit Report, October 1989, Kingslea Reports F007702, p 10.

<sup>2689</sup> Audit Report, October 1990, Kingslea Reports F5000004603647, p 3.

by previous staff members had meant the standards of residential care had slipped, leaving a difficult situation for new staff teams, and recommended staff training.<sup>2690</sup>

Staff rules in 1991 stated that staff were to know where residents were at all times and that residents were to be supervised when they were at the confidence course, swimming pool or gym, and anywhere else on or off the property. Staff were to accompany residents to and from work and school programmes.<sup>2691</sup> Daily comment sheets in each resident's personal file were completed at the end of each shift, and summarised every three weeks into a progress report.<sup>2692</sup>

There were 77 staff members in 1992.<sup>2693</sup>

## Incidents

In 1959 Principal K J Ford reported to the Superintendent that staff were concerned about the amount of violence and threatening behaviour of residents towards staff.<sup>2694</sup> She sought advice from the Children's Court as to how to deal with the behaviour of two residents who had planned an attack against staff. She noted that the Magistrate of the Children's Court recognised the great difficulties staff were experiencing and "he felt that such girls should not be in the Training Centre and that he would be prepared to deal with them in the Children's Court providing they could be brought before the Court on some complaint."<sup>2695</sup>

In 1967 a former matron advised *The Sunday News* that girls at Kingslea were harshly treated, locked in unheated cells, drugged by sedation pills and in turn became addicted to sedatives. The Superintendent spoke to the reporter and answered his queries about the allegations.<sup>2696</sup> In the resulting article, the reporter made no reference to the matron's allegations but instead wrote about Kingslea, describing it as New Zealand's "maximum detention centre for girls".<sup>2697</sup> The Superintendent responded that the reporter had "let his imagination take precedence over his memory" and stated that during the conversation neither he nor the reporter had described Kingslea in that way.<sup>2698</sup>

In 1968 the Acting Principal was contacted by a reporter in relation to allegations that Kingslea was having staffing problems. She commented that she did not object to publicity but was concerned that if reporters were critical of staffing or facilities "it shakes the confidence of parents in our ability to care for their children. As most of these people are too far away to visit and are easily influenced by criticism it would be damaging to our work to shake their security."<sup>2699</sup>

<sup>2690</sup> Audit Report, October 1990, Kingslea Reports F5000004603647, p 7-9.

<sup>2691</sup> Kingslea Admission Pack, date unknown circa 1991, Kingslea Admissions F5000004602521.

<sup>2692</sup> Kingslea Admission Pack, date unknown circa 1991, Kingslea Admissions F5000004602521.

<sup>2693</sup> Report to the Hon Roger McClay, Associate Minister of Social Welfare, 22/7/92, Kingslea Reports F5000004081321, p 1.

<sup>2694</sup> Memo from K J Ford, Principal to Superintendent, 21/7/59, Kingslea Staffing F021158/2003028572.

<sup>2695</sup> Memo from K J Ford, Principal to Superintendent, 28/7/59, Kingslea Staffing F021158/2003028572.

<sup>2696</sup> Note for File, author unknown, 23/2/67, Kingslea Contact with Community Archives W50481376 2006/8588.

<sup>2697</sup> "Crime on increase among NZ girls" writer unknown, *Sunday News*, 26/2/67, Kingslea Profile Archives W5048/376 2006/8588.

<sup>2698</sup> Note for File, L G Anderson, Superintendent, 27/2/67, Kingslea Profile Archives W5048/376 2006/8588.

<sup>2699</sup> Memo from I F Pedder, Acting Principle to Superintendent, 1/6/68, Kingslea Contact with Community Archives W50481376 2006/8588.

Security guards were hired for a period in 1980 after issues with prowlers at Kingslea and threats from gang members. In late 1980 an intruder with a knife broke into the secure unit and threatened staff.<sup>2700</sup>

There was an incident in 1986 where a resident was raped in her room at Kingslea by an intruder. A staff member reported to the Principal that one of the doors to the unit the girl was in did not lock properly; and also that as the night supervisor was relieving in the secure unit for the night, there was a five to ten minute delay before the girl was attended to.<sup>2701</sup> The rape was reported in local news media.<sup>2702</sup>

In 1992 the New Brighton Police complained that Kingslea staff were referring too many internal problems to them. Branch manager P H Campbell agreed to "instigate a screening process" and only send the more serious incidents through to the Youth Aid officers. Staff were to refer the incidents to the manager first, and he would decide whether they warranted police attention.<sup>2703</sup>

## Management

In 1975 Principal O T Ryan commented in a staff newsletter that he was aware some staff members had commented that there was a lack of opportunities to talk over personal or professional problems with senior staff. He advised staff "the role of senior staff is primarily to be resource for, and to give support to, those working directly with the girls".<sup>2704</sup>

An audit report in 1989 stated that communication systems at Kingslea were not effective, and that information was often communicated by telephone and consequently was not recorded or received by all staff members. The standard of written communication was reportedly low.<sup>2705</sup>

K J Scotter (later K J Ford) was Principal between 1942 and 1972. When she retired her role was filled by P T Woulfe. He was Principal for two years, until O T Ryan was appointed to the role. Mr Ryan died suddenly in 1979, and M E Judge became Principal. She continued in that role until 1990 when P E Campbell was appointed the Branch Manager. Fran Erickson was appointed Site Manager in 1994.<sup>2706</sup>

## Training and supervision

In 1957 staff were offered judo classes to help them deal with the "aggressive girls" that were in residence at the time.<sup>2707</sup>

Between 1947 and 1956 staff training sessions were held one evening each week. From 1957 staff training occurred during the day. Between 1960 and 1970 there were four training sessions held each week so that all staff members could attend.

<sup>2700</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1980, Kingslea Annual Reports F5000004606486, p 5.

<sup>2701</sup> B G Pegler to Principle, March 1986, Kingslea Incident F5000005133782.

<sup>2702</sup> See, for example, "Naked woman flees rapist", Trish Grant, *Christchurch Star*, 15/3/86, Kingslea Incidents F5000005133782.

<sup>2703</sup> Memo from P H Campbell, Branch Manager to Acting Manager Residences, 5/11/92, Kingslea Complaints F500004602501.

<sup>2704</sup> Kingslea Newsletter 1975/49, 16/9/75, Kingslea Staffing, F5000005133786.

<sup>2705</sup> Institution Internal Audit Report, November 1988, Kingslea Reports F007702, p 5.

<sup>2706</sup> "Historical Notes on the Kingslea Residential Centre, Shirley, Christchurch" author unknown, October 1995, Kingslea Reports, F5000005628254.

<sup>2707</sup> Memo from K J Scotter, Principal to Superintendent, 25/9/57, Kingslea Programmes 2003028572/F021158.

In 1970 there was also a series of lectures/discussions on relevant subjects by speakers from outside of Kingslea.<sup>2708</sup>

In 1970 there were weekly staff training sessions, and weekly meetings between housemistresses/housemasters to discuss any problems they had been having with girls and for planning programmes. There were also weekly senior staff conferences.<sup>2709</sup> These continued in 1971.<sup>2710</sup>

In 1972 the Senior Counsellor conducted twice weekly staff training sessions with all house staff, although Principal P T Woulfe noted that more training was required at Matron level as not only was this where new recruits worked but they were also the staff members who had the most contact with residents.<sup>2711</sup> Housemasters/mistresses weekly meetings continued in 1972, as did senior staff conferences.<sup>2712</sup>

It appears that all housemasters/mistresses were given their own copies of the updated Residential Workers Manual in 1975.<sup>2713</sup>

A Residential Care Course was offered as optional for staff in 1976, but the Principal commented that all Assistant Housemasters/mistresses and Housemasters/mistresses that had not completed an allied course already were expected to apply.<sup>2714</sup> There were numerous references in staff newsletters dated between 1976 and 1978 to training sessions available to staff members.<sup>2715</sup> A senior housemaster commented in the Kingslea newsletter that some staff regarded meetings and staff training as a burden.<sup>2716</sup>

In 1980 the Principal commented on the importance of supervision for staff, stating "selecting the right staff is only part of the problem solved. Supporting them in the job they do, ensuring that they develop their skills and potential, is a necessary counterpart." He also noted at this time that high priority was placed on staff training<sup>2717</sup> and there were weekly training sessions in 1980.<sup>2718</sup>

In 1981 the "Practice of Residential Care" document prepared by Kingslea staff endorsed the availability of training courses (both in-service and external) for staff, and the continuance of regular formal supervision for each worker with the expectation that there would be a high degree of professional competence from all staff providing supervision.<sup>2719</sup>

In 1981 Kingslea introduced one hour weekly team supervision sessions to complement "tutorial supervision" and a three year cyclical internal training programme was devised.<sup>2720</sup>

<sup>2708</sup> A review of some of the changes in the Centre in the period 1942-1970, Mrs K J Ford (Principal), 1970, Kingslea Annual Reports 2005013670, p 3.

<sup>2709</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1970, Kingslea Annual Reports 2005013670, p 3.

<sup>2710</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1971, Kingslea Annual Reports 2005013670, p 2.

<sup>2711</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1972, Kingslea Annual Reports 2005013670, p 2.

<sup>2712</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1972, Kingslea Annual Reports 2005013670, p 2.

<sup>2713</sup> This was inferred due to writing inside the cover of a Residential Workers Manual that came from Kingslea. See F5000001643366.

<sup>2714</sup> Kingslea Newsletter 1976/8, 9/3/78, Kingslea Staffing F5000005133786.

<sup>2715</sup> See file F5000005133786 for examples.

<sup>2716</sup> Kingslea Newsletter 1978/22, 12/7/78, Kingslea Staffing F5000005628255.

<sup>2717</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1980, Kingslea Annual Reports F5000004606486, p 8.

<sup>2718</sup> Kingslea Newsletter 1980/4, 13/2/80, Kingslea Secure F5000005628258, p 3.

<sup>2719</sup> "The practice of residential care at Kingslea Christchurch" compiled by Kingslea staff, August 1981, Kingslea Profile F5000005133784.

<sup>2720</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1981, Kingslea Annual Reports F5000004606486, p 13.



In 1982 there was specific training for secure unit staff members.<sup>2721</sup> The objective was to enable them to "grasp their change of role from a custodial programme to a therapeutic one and see this in relation to the other units."<sup>2722</sup>

There were many different training courses available to staff both on and off site, in and around 1982.<sup>2723</sup>

In 1983 the Principal commented that a Residential Care Association course was held each year at Kingslea.<sup>2724</sup> The course was held again in 1984.<sup>2725</sup>

A weekly support group for relieving staff was established in 1984.<sup>2726</sup> There were also weekly staff training sessions in 1984 as part of the three-year staff training plan. Three sessions were held each week to ensure all staff members could attend. The Principal commented that the plan had disadvantages, noting "staff resented its compulsory component... It was inflexible to current issues or immediate concerns."<sup>2727</sup> Also in this year the psychologist from the Christchurch specialist services team ran four short courses which staff had selected on incest counselling and 'counselling for change'.<sup>2728</sup>

The Principal commented in 1984 that "increasingly staff are being asked to become therapists".<sup>2729</sup> A Senior Residential Social Worker commented that the higher the level staff were working at, the more supervision was required. He wrote "if we are going to retain the gains made in the quality of our staff over recent years, it is now essential; that we can provide much more regular formal supervision."<sup>2730</sup>

In 1985 the Principal commented that due to loss of experienced staff, there was "an urgent training/support problem at basic grade level."<sup>2731</sup> Comprehensive staff training in 1985 was provided in the form of a week-long seminar for each team with a two day follow up later in the year. A 'reparenting' therapist ran two workshops over the year. Principal M E Judge commented that "providing supervision for in-service and supernumerary staff for the modular training programme has been a major problem and still is with so many needing training, and the ill health of the accredited supervisors."<sup>2732</sup>

Kingslea introduced a new model of residential social work in 1986, although the files do not provide details of the model. A two day workshop was held for Senior Residential Social Workers who in turn provided workshops for their whole teams. The training was to "re-establish trust in the teams and restate our commitment to the standards set out in the personnel guide and the ideals for practise defined in the National Code of Practice for Residential Services."<sup>2733</sup>

<sup>2721</sup> Proposed Secure Unit Staff Training Programme: Kingslea, John Watson, Clinical Psychologist, 1982, Kingslea Secure F5000004673601.

<sup>2722</sup> M E Judge, Assistant Principal to Director, Social Work Training Centre, 11/3/82, Kingslea Staffing F5000004673601.

<sup>2723</sup> See file F5000004673601 for examples.

<sup>2724</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1983, Kingslea Annual Reports F5000004606486, p 13.

<sup>2725</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1984, Kingslea Annual Reports F5000004606486, p 8.

<sup>2726</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1984, Kingslea Annual Reports F5000004606486, p 3.

<sup>2727</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1984, Kingslea Annual Reports F5000004606486, p 7.

<sup>2728</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1984, Kingslea Annual Reports F5000004606486, p 6.

<sup>2729</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1984, Kingslea Annual Reports F5000004606486, p 26.

<sup>2730</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1984, Kingslea Annual Reports F5000004606486, p 27.

<sup>2731</sup> M E Judge, Principal to Director General, 13/12/85, Kingslea Staffing F5000005133782.

<sup>2732</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1985, Kingslea Annual Reports F5000004606486, pp 7-8.

<sup>2733</sup> M E Judge, Principal to Director General, 23/9/86, Kingslea Reports F5000005133876, p 1.

In 1986 the Principal requested the help of some Hamilton region staff members to train Kingslea staff in "Care Profile" so that it could be introduced at Kingslea.<sup>2734</sup>

In 1986 Principal M E Judge stated that the creation of three Duty Officer positions had halved the "operational component" of the Senior Residential Social Workers' role, meaning weekly supervision for team members was now a "realistic" expectation.<sup>2735</sup>

An internal report in 1989 repeatedly stressed the need for staff training and supervision, stating it was "urgently required".<sup>2736</sup> The audit report in 1989 stated that staff training had been given top priority<sup>2737</sup> but auditors had continuing concerns about staff supervision.<sup>2738</sup>

In 1991 all social workers attended weekly staff meetings. Senior Social Workers provided their team members with one hour of supervision per week.<sup>2739</sup> An audit in 1992 found that there was no internal staff training programme in operation at Kingslea, and stated that it was important this was addressed. Auditors recommended that a staff training programme should include training for relief staff.<sup>2740</sup>

In 1993 the Branch Manager commented that he would no longer hire unqualified applicants for positions at Kingslea, and that vacancies advertised would state that applicants required a minimum of a level B qualification.<sup>2741</sup>

## Shortages

In 1964 Principal K J Ford requested that the Superintendent expedited the advertising and filling of the vacant housemaster/mistress positions as she was "in urgent need of help", and she and the other staff were "feeling the strain" from covering the vacancies.<sup>2742</sup>

In 1965, during a difficult period at Kingslea, the Principal commented that staffing shortages and insufficient senior or trained staff had aggravated their problems. She stated that there needed to be enough staff cover "so the girls know they cannot 'take over' or attack staff."<sup>2743</sup> D G Reilly reported at this time that he was concerned about what the Child Welfare Division "was doing or not doing to meet the new demands being made on the institution services", and stated that the proportion of wards whose affliction caused these demands had increased and staff were unable to cope with them.<sup>2744</sup>

In October 1966 the Principal requested extra housemasters/mistresses following an "extremely difficult year", and noted that they needed staff who wanted to work with the girls rather than those interested in carrying out domestic duties.<sup>2745</sup> In August

<sup>2734</sup> M E Judge, Principal to Principal, Hamilton Boys Home, 7/8/86, Kingslea Staffing F5000005133782.

<sup>2735</sup> M E Judge, Principal, to Director General, 23/9/86, Kingslea Reports F5000005133876, p 1.

<sup>2736</sup> Institution Internal Audit Report, November 1988, Kingslea Reports F007702, p 6.

<sup>2737</sup> Audit Report, October 1989, Kingslea Reports F007702, p 6.

<sup>2738</sup> Audit Report, October 1989, Kingslea Reports F007702, p 11.

<sup>2739</sup> Kingslea Admission Pack, date unknown circa 1991, Kingslea Admissions F5000004602521.

<sup>2740</sup> Audit Findings, 1992, Kingslea Reports F5000004603647.

<sup>2741</sup> Memo from P H Campbell, Branch Manager to all Managers and Practice Consultants, 27/8/93, Kingslea Staffing F5000004602521.

<sup>2742</sup> Memo from K J Ford, Principal to Superintendent, 20/2/64, Kingslea Staffing F5000004606215.

<sup>2743</sup> Memo from K J Ford, Principal to Superintendent, 23/9/65, Kingslea Staffing F021155.

<sup>2744</sup> Memo from D G Reilly to Superintendent, 21/10/65, Kingslea Staffing F021152.

<sup>2745</sup> Memo from K J Ford, Principal to Superintendent, 13/10/66, Kingslea Staffing F5000004606215.

1967 she requested relief staff from the Christchurch Boys' Home.<sup>2746</sup> In October 1967 the State Services Commission approved the addition of an extra senior housemaster/mistress position, three extra housemaster/mistress positions, and a Matron's Assistant position to the staff.<sup>2747</sup>

There was no Senior Counsellor employed at Kingslea for the majority of 1970.<sup>2748</sup>

In 1971 Acting Principal I E Pedder commented that staff sickness had created severe staff shortages and added greatly to staffing problems.<sup>2749</sup>

There was a shortage of experienced senior staff members in 1976.<sup>2750</sup>

It was noted in a staff newsletter in 1978 that the recruitment of suitable staff was a problem, and that it could partly be attributed to the low salaries offered to Assistant Housemasters/mistresses.<sup>2751</sup>

The Principal commented in 1983 that staff were very stretched when the units were full to capacity.<sup>2752</sup>

There were eight new staff members employed at Kingslea at the start of 1984 but another eight vacancies at the start of 1985. The Principal commented she was employing relievers at "basic grade" to fill these vacancies.<sup>2753</sup>

There was a high staff turnover rate in 1984. The Principal commented that there were still very low pay rates for induction and relieving staff.<sup>2754</sup> Staff shortages were also attributed to the fact that five senior residential social workers were training to become certified supervisors for the new Induction training programme. The Principal commented that their absence was "most marked in the Duty Officer cover on the day to day basis."<sup>2755</sup>

High staff turnover rates continued in 1985. This reportedly resulted in many changes in caseworkers for girls, which in some instances accounted for longer stays at Kingslea.<sup>2756</sup>

In response to an increasing number of residents in 1991, Kingslea staff wrote to the Assistant Director requesting additional staffing to ensure adequate and quality supervision of clients, and staff safety.<sup>2757</sup> The Assistant Director replied that her commitment to staff safety had been demonstrated. She commented that although the "designated norm" was one staff member to four residents, there was at that time a 1:2.5 ratio, and that the use of relievers needed to be monitored due to budgetary restrictions.<sup>2758</sup>

<sup>2746</sup> Memo from M Lyons, District Child Welfare Officer to Superintendent, 10/8/67, Kingslea Staffing F5000004606215.

<sup>2747</sup> Memo from D Goldsbury for Superintendent to Principal, 9/10/67, Kingslea Staffing F5000004606215.

<sup>2748</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1970, Kingslea Annual Reports 2005013670, p 5.

<sup>2749</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1971, Kingslea Annual Reports 2005013670, p 3.

<sup>2750</sup> Kingslea Newsletter 1976/33, 2/11/76, Kingslea Staffing F5000005133786.

<sup>2751</sup> Kingslea Newsletter 1978/12, 12/4/78, Kingslea Staffing F5000005133786.

<sup>2752</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1983, Kingslea Annual Reports F5000004606486, p 8.

<sup>2753</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1984, Kingslea Annual Reports F5000004606486, p 2.

<sup>2754</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1984, Kingslea Annual Reports F5000004606486, p 3.

<sup>2755</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1984, Kingslea Annual Reports F5000004606486, p 7.

<sup>2756</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1985, Kingslea Annual Reports F5000004606486, p 2.

<sup>2757</sup> Memo from various staff members to F Erickson, Assistant Director, 16/1/1991, Kingslea Staffing

F5000004602521.

<sup>2758</sup> Memo from Fran Erickson, Acting Director to Youth Justice Senior Social Workers, 24/1/1991, Kingslea Staffing F5000004602521.

In late 1991 the Director, P H Campbell, proposed restructuring Kingslea staff and requested an extra staff member for each shift. This was to provide better cover; reduce the need for relievers; and improve service delivery.<sup>2759</sup>

## Schooling

The school first opened in 1944.<sup>2760</sup>

In 1959 evening classes were provided for girls who participated in vocational training during the day but "wished to fill gaps in their education".<sup>2761</sup>

There were three classroom teachers, a recreation teacher, and a home science teacher by 1964. A further full-time teacher was employed in 1965, and the head teacher position was created in 1967. Another teacher was appointed on a part-time basis in 1968.<sup>2762</sup>

In the 1960s it was compulsory for every girl under 15 to attend school, even those who had previously been granted school exemptions. Having turned 15, residents could choose whether they wanted to continue at the school or instead opt to begin vocational training. All girls received training in homecraft.<sup>2763</sup>

Principal K J Ford wrote in 1970 that the long term objective for the school was to provide full-time or part-time schooling for all girls in the centre.<sup>2764</sup>

A new classroom, woodwork room and art room were completed in 1970.<sup>2765</sup> The core subjects taught at the school at this time were English, mathematics, social studies, homecraft, health and physical education. French, Latin, science, history, geography, typing and art were also offered.<sup>2766</sup> The school relied mostly on Correspondence School work but teachers wanted to have more class teaching.<sup>2767</sup> The school was used for five hours each day and the head teacher wished this to be increased to eight hours.<sup>2768</sup>

In 1971 the Acting Principal commented "school discipline is more relaxed and is something which is coming from within rather than being imposed from above. Attitudes to work are consequently better. No girl is forced to work or punished if she

<sup>2759</sup> P H Campbell, Director to Assistant Director-General, 23/5/91, Kingslea Staffing F5000004673598.

<sup>2760</sup> A review of some of the changes in the Centre in the period 1942-1970, Mrs K J Ford (Principal), 1970, Kingslea Annual Reports 2005013670, p 7.

<sup>2761</sup> A review of some of the changes in the Centre in the period 1942-1970, Mrs K J Ford (Principal), 1970, Kingslea Annual Reports 2005013670, p 7.

<sup>2762</sup> A review of some of the changes in the Centre in the period 1942-1970, Mrs K J Ford (Principal), 1970, Kingslea Annual Reports 2005013670, p 7.

<sup>2763</sup> "Burwood Girls Training Centre – Girls well trained for normal life", Dorothy Braxton, *Christchurch Star*, 8/5/63, Kingslea Programmes 2003028572/F021158.

<sup>2764</sup> A review of some of the changes in the Centre in the period 1942-1970, Mrs K J Ford (Principal), 1970, Kingslea Annual Reports 2005013670, p 7.

<sup>2765</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1970, Kingslea Annual Reports 2005013670, p 13.

<sup>2766</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1970, Kingslea Annual Reports 2005013670, p 10.

<sup>2767</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1970, Kingslea Annual Reports 2005013670, p 11.

<sup>2768</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1970, Kingslea Annual Reports 2005013670, p 13.

does not work.<sup>2769</sup> She also suggested that the experience of attending school while admitted to Clinic encouraged non-school girls to seek further schooling.<sup>2770</sup>

In 1971 half of the school curriculum consisted of classes from the Correspondence School.<sup>2771</sup>

There were 57 students on the school roll between 1970 and 1972, 44 in the school and 13 in the secure unit.<sup>2772</sup>

Nine girls sat school certificate subjects in 1976, and 21 girls were enrolled to sit in 1977.<sup>2773</sup> By this stage Kingslea School had four classrooms, as well as an art room, a home economics room and a sewing room. Residents were taught by seven full time teachers (including the physical education and home economics teachers) and several part-time teachers (who taught art and typing, and remedial and secure classes.) There were approximately 12 students per teacher, and students occasionally attended outside schools. Staff noted that they would make applications for school exemptions in appropriate cases, but had only done so once before.<sup>2774</sup>

The Principal insisted in 1977 that all girls should attend school to at least the age of 15, and commented that he would not discharge a girl under 15 unless it "was with the express purpose of attending a college in her home district."<sup>2775</sup>

In 1978 the Kingslea school had a class for those of average or above average intelligence; a class for those requiring intensive remedial work; a class for girls intending to sit examinations; and another set aside for older girls which allowed for two days work experience each week. Some Kingslea girls were permitted to attend nearby schools, and a number of previous residents continued to attend the Kingslea school after their discharge.<sup>2776</sup>

In 1979 the school programme placed emphasis on academics during the mornings and social skills in the afternoons.<sup>2777</sup> A study area for the residents who were "pursuing an academic course" was provided in classrooms previously used for Maori Studies and typing. These subjects were subsequently taught from the "flat", meaning that the flat could not be used as accommodation in that year.<sup>2778</sup> Staff were of the opinion that an extra classroom would be required once the Strathmore Home transfer to Kingslea took place in 1980, as there would be an extra 12-14 girls attending the school and there were already around 15 girls in each of the existing classes. They also requested one of the Strathmore teaching positions be transferred to Kingslea.<sup>2779</sup>

<sup>2769</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1971, Kingslea Annual Reports 2005013670, p 9.

<sup>2770</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1971, Kingslea Annual Reports 2005013670, p 10.

<sup>2771</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1971, Kingslea Annual Reports 2005013670, p 9.

<sup>2772</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1970, Kingslea Annual Reports 2005013670, p 11; and Kingslea Annual Report 1972, Kingslea Annual Reports 2005013670, p 3.

<sup>2773</sup> Memo from O T Ryan, Principal to Director General, 27/1/77, Kingslea Education 20050/3475.

<sup>2774</sup> Questionnaire sent to National Institutions, 1977, Kingslea Admissions 2005013475, p 2.

<sup>2775</sup> Memo from O T Ryan, Principal to Assistant Director (Social Work) 13/7/77, Kingslea Admissions F5000000925867.

<sup>2776</sup> "The Philosophy of Residential Care at Kingslea", author unknown, August 1978, Kingslea Reports F5000005628256, p 3, for more information on the work exploration class see Work and Training section.

<sup>2777</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1971, Kingslea Annual Reports 2005013475, School Report p 2.

<sup>2778</sup> Kingslea Newsletter 1979/6, 7/3/79, Kingslea Education 2005013475.

<sup>2779</sup> Minutes of meeting held in Christchurch district office to discuss the closing of Strathmore Girls' Home, Ferry Road, and Transfer of existing service to Kingslea, using Howard Hostel, 29/11/79, Kingslea Complaints 2005033549.

No provision for a new classroom had been made by the time of the transfer. The Head Teacher commented that the educational programmes for the short-term residents was being provided out a room only large enough to "accommodate six desks placed end to end which then gives the teacher an area the size of a pocket handkerchief". He noted that even in the first week after the transfer, residential social workers had to keep girls in the unit during the day because the school was unable to accommodate them.<sup>2780</sup>

Shortly after the transfer, the two groups of girls were integrated within the school. In response to Kingslea's new role school staff created an "Assessment Class" where all new admissions, whether short term or long term, would be placed. If remand girls stayed long enough they would eventually be moved into the other classes with the long term care residents.<sup>2781</sup> The Principal also noted that a "significant number of girls in short term care continue to attend their own schools in the community and the Assessment Class teacher makes contact with these schools."<sup>2782</sup>

In April 1980 Principal M P Doolan requested the school grading should be changed from primary to secondary.<sup>2783</sup> The change in grading was approved later that year.<sup>2784</sup>

In 1981 Residence staff commented that the objective of the education programme was "to prepare each girl for living to the full, within her educational and vocational potential."<sup>2785</sup>

A visitor who was completing a study of Kingslea in 1983 remarked that there was not a "counter-productive dichotomy of function" of the school and the residence, and stated that this made Kingslea unique in New Zealand.<sup>2786</sup>

Twelve Kingslea residents attended outside schools in 1984.<sup>2787</sup>

The main purposes of the school in 1985 were "preparation of the girls for return to school and community; vocational training of the girls for return to the community; and to equip the girls with survival skills that enable them to live a normal balanced life that is acceptable to them, and the community."<sup>2788</sup>

In 1987 a small number of the Christchurch Boys' Home residents attended the Kingslea school prior to their move into the residence as part of the integration process.<sup>2789</sup>

In 1988 the school had eight full-time and four-part time teaching positions.<sup>2790</sup> Fifteen of Kingslea's 32 residents attended the school in 1989.<sup>2791</sup>

<sup>2780</sup> J Peterson, Head Teacher to M P Doolan, Principal, 18/4/80, Kingslea Education 2005013475.

<sup>2781</sup> Memo from M P Doolan, Principal, to Director General, 17/10/80, Kingslea Reports 2005013475, p 3.

<sup>2782</sup> Memo from M P Doolan, Principal, to Director General, 17/10/80, Kingslea Reports 2005013475, p 3.

<sup>2783</sup> Memo from M P Doolan to Director General, 2/4/80, Kingslea Education 2005013475.

<sup>2784</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1980, Kingslea Annual Reports F5000004606486, appendix I, p 2.

<sup>2785</sup> "The practice of residential care at Kingslea Christchurch" compiled by Kingslea staff, August 1981, Kingslea Profile F5000005133784.

<sup>2786</sup> "A Study Visit to Kingslea School for Girls" Des Walsh, 27/4/83, Kingslea Reports F5000005133784, p 1.

<sup>2787</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1984, Kingslea Annual Reports F5000004606486, School Report, p 1.

<sup>2788</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1985, Kingslea Annual Reports F5000004606486, p 7.

<sup>2789</sup> Memo from D Martin, Acting Head Teacher Christchurch Boys' Home School to multiple recipients, 16/10/87, Kingslea Profile F5000005627905.

<sup>2790</sup> "Proposed study by Human Rights Commission of Department of Social Welfare Residential Facilities", date unknown circa 1989, Kingslea Admissions F5000004516500, appendix 1.

<sup>2791</sup> Report to Mr J W Grant Director General, 1989, Kingslea Education F5000006021151.

Internal auditors commented in 1990 that the link between residential care programmes and the school programmed needed to be re-examined to ensure effective planning and integration of programmes.<sup>2792</sup>

In 1991 the Ministry of Education contemplated closing the school at Kingslea (along with the schools at Highcliff and Weymouth) but after an "outcry" from parents, teachers and unions, and following recommendations made in a review by a former Family Court judge, it was decided the schools would remain open.<sup>2793</sup> In 1992 the Principal commented that the future of the school had been uncertain since a review in 1990 which he found unsatisfactory as both Kingslea management and teaching staff needed "some certainty of tenure so as to be able to carry out their work to best effect."<sup>2794</sup>

The Kingslea School had 45 students in 1992, although approximately half the students were non-residents as the school ran short assessment and "outreach" courses for students from outside schools. These courses focused on areas such as behaviour modification, self esteem and anger management.<sup>2795</sup> Non-residents were referred to courses by their guidance counsellors. The non-resident curriculum was distinct from the resident curriculum. There were, however, concerns about "contamination due to congregation of youthful offenders with others".<sup>2796</sup>

A "basic educational programme" was provided for youth justice and care and protection residents in 1992, and included English, maths, special reading, life skills and practical subjects.<sup>2797</sup> Youth Justice residents spent their mornings in classes at the Kingslea school and afternoons on the work skills programme. Care and Protection residents spent their full day at the school.<sup>2798</sup>

### School staffing

In 1979 the North Canterbury Primary Schools Principals Association was concerned about the "failure to obtain fully qualified permanent staff" for Kingslea school, stating that in the past five years there had been thirty teachers employed in five teaching positions.<sup>2799</sup>

In 1980 there were many references made to the fact that staff shortages at the Kingslea school stemmed from the Department of Education's failure to advertise the vacancies in the Gazette. In the first term, four of the six full time teaching positions were filled by relievers. The Principal stated: "Good and all as they may turn out to be, we cannot expect from them the degree of commitment, planning, and

<sup>2792</sup> Audit Report, October 1990, Kingslea Reports F5000004603647, p 8.

<sup>2793</sup> "Government reprieves three special schools", Cathie Bell, *Sunday Times*, 7/6/92, Kingslea Education F5000006021151.

<sup>2794</sup> Memo from P H Campbell, Branch Manager to Southern Regional Manager, 8/9/92, Kingslea Education F5000006021151.

<sup>2795</sup> Schools on DSW Campuses Report, December 1992, Kingslea Reports F5000006021151.

<sup>2796</sup> Report to the Minister of Social Welfare on Special Services – Schools on Social Welfare Residence Campuses, 1/8/92, Kingslea Education F5000006021151.

<sup>2797</sup> Report to the Minister of Social Welfare on Special Services – Schools on Social Welfare Residence Campuses, 1/8/92, Kingslea Education F5000006021151.

<sup>2798</sup> Report to the Hon Roger McClay, Associate Minister of Social Welfare, 22/7/92, Kingslea Reports F5000004081321, p 1.

<sup>2799</sup> J R Roughan, Secretary, North Canterbury Primary Schools Principals' Association to Director Social Welfare, 7/12/79, Kingslea Education 2005013475.

enthusiasm one expects from permanent staff."<sup>2800</sup> He also commented that without a school committee or parent group "to get upset about this state of affairs" they were reliant on the Department of Social Welfare to do so, but its capacity was "probably severely limited without an Education Officer at Head Office level."<sup>2801</sup>

At the start of 1980 the staffing shortage reportedly "could not have been much worse" but by the end of the year all positions besides one had been filled.<sup>2802</sup> The head teacher stated: "Social Welfare must become more involved in the staffing of Welfare schools as it is their clients who are suffering because of instability of staffing."<sup>2803</sup>

In 1992 the school was staffed by 11.5 teachers funded by the Ministry of Education, and up to five extra teachers were funded by the Department of Social Welfare.<sup>2804</sup> At this time the school buildings comprised of four classrooms, two specialist areas, an art room, pottery room, library, staffroom and administrative area.<sup>2805</sup>

In [REDACTED], a female resident claimed that she had been raped by a male teacher at [REDACTED]

[REDACTED] However, when he arrived at work the next day the Residential Manager barred him from any contact with residents. Police interviewed the resident and advised the Manager they intended to take the matter further. Two previous allegations had been made against the teacher which had been found to be inconclusive and were dealt with by the school.<sup>2806</sup>

### Level of educational attainment

In response to the "highly disturbed" behaviour of a group of girls in 1955, Principal K J Scotter removed them from the school, meaning they were unable to continue with the Correspondence School studies.<sup>2807</sup>

In 1978 Principal O T Ryan remarked that the position facing the school was "a little frightening" as there were in excess of 20 girls at fifth form level, yet the school was still classified as a primary school and was staffed by primary trained teachers.<sup>2808</sup>

In 1980 there was an incident where residential social workers were required to teach in the school while teachers were away with a 'flu virus. The Head Teacher commented that he expected criticism for the decision, but stated "I could not afford to bring unknown teachers into Kingslea because there wasn't any way I could give them the support that would be needed to enable them to survive."<sup>2809</sup>

<sup>2800</sup> Memo from M P Doolan, Principal to Director General, 25/1/80, Kingslea Education 2005013475.

<sup>2801</sup> M P Doolan, Principal to Director General, 25/1/80, Kingslea Education 2005013475.

<sup>2802</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1980, Kingslea Annual Reports F5000004606486, p 5.

<sup>2803</sup> J Peterson, Head Teacher to M P Doolan, Principal, 18/4/80, Kingslea Education 2005013475.

<sup>2804</sup> Report to the Minister of Social Welfare on Special Services – Schools on Social Welfare Residence Campuses, 1/8/92, Kingslea Education F5000006021151.

<sup>2805</sup> Schools on DSW Campuses Report, December 1992, Kingslea Reports F5000006021151.

<sup>2806</sup> Report to the Minister of Social Welfare, M P Doolan, 17/10/94, Kingslea Incidents F5000003144946.

<sup>2807</sup> Memo from K J Scotter, Principal to Headmaster, Correspondence School, 28/9/55, Kingslea Incidents 2005013472.

<sup>2808</sup> Memo from O T Ryan, Principal to Director General, 20/12/78, Kingslea Education 2005031475. The Director General for the Department of Social Welfare passed on the Principal's concerns to the Director General of Social Welfare.

<sup>2809</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1980, Kingslea Annual Reports F5000004606486, appendix I, p 1.



The Head Teacher reported that girls sitting school certificate in 1980 received more resources than those who were not in the position to sit exams. He stated "perhaps we should concentrate our efforts and resources in more fruitful directions."<sup>2810</sup> He reiterated this point in 1984, commenting that "too big a slice of specialist facilities" was required to cater for the one or two girls sitting exams.<sup>2811</sup>

In 1981 the Head Teacher remarked that although he was opposed to granting school exemptions (having given only three in seven years), he was also realistic. He stated: "It is futile to expect some girls to go back to their home districts with the expectation that they will be successful on returning to school."<sup>2812</sup> He also commented that the school did not cater well for girls under 14 years old.<sup>2813</sup> The following year Kingslea created a class for younger residents, meaning the school could no longer offer a class for girls intending to sit examinations.<sup>2814</sup> Kingslea lacked maths and science teachers in 1982, and girls were discouraged from taking these subjects.<sup>2815</sup>

In 1982 the Head Teacher commented that stretched Education Department resources left the Department of Social Welfare bridging the gap.<sup>2816</sup> The Head Teacher reported stretched resources again in 1983, and remarked that Social Welfare continued to provide finance to some of the school's programmes.<sup>2817</sup>

The Head Teacher commented that most decisions in 1984 were made by the school staff and there were no regular visits or consultation with inspectors.<sup>2818</sup>

In [REDACTED] a report noted that Department of Social Welfare staff (including Kingslea Branch Manager P H Campbell) were unhappy with the schooling their residents were receiving at the school. The school Principal provided the Department and the school's Board of Trustees with a written answer to each of their concerns.<sup>2819</sup>

## Absconding

In 1959 there was an incident where a young man was found in a resident's room in the Mabel Howard hostel. The resident's two roommates had absconded with the young man's friends. Residents of the hostel had been leaving a window open for the men to gain access to the building.<sup>2820</sup> The absconders were found that night, and three men were charged under the Child Welfare Act with having sexual intercourse with inmates, and helping the girls to abscond. The Principal commented that there had been a lot of trouble with boys and men entering the grounds and that staff were afraid to walk between the units at night alone. She

<sup>2810</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1980, Kingslea Annual Reports F5000004606486, appendix I, p 3.

<sup>2811</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1984, Kingslea Annual Reports F5000004606486, School Report, p 1.

<sup>2812</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1981, Kingslea Annual Reports F5000004606486, appendix I, p 3.

<sup>2813</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1981, Kingslea Annual Reports F5000004606486, appendix I, p 3.

<sup>2814</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1982, Kingslea Annual Reports F5000004606486, appendix I, p1.

<sup>2815</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1982, Kingslea Annual Reports F5000004606486, appendix I, p 3.

<sup>2816</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1982, Kingslea Annual Reports F5000004606486, appendix I, p1.

<sup>2817</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1983, Kingslea Annual Reports F5000004606486, appendix I, p 1.

<sup>2818</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1984, Kingslea Annual Reports F5000004606486, School Report, p 2.

<sup>2820</sup> Memo from K J Ford, Principal to Superintendent, 20/1/59, Kingslea Incidents F021158/2003028572

made inquiries as to whether the legislation could be amended in order that they could more easily prosecute trespassers.<sup>2821</sup>

There were 14 absconders in September 1960. Principal K J Ford commented: "Fortunately in nearly every case they have had a very cold uninteresting time while they were out and they were all returned by the next day. This has been a good thing as it discourages the other girls slightly."<sup>2822</sup>

Incidents of absconding decreased sharply from 155 incidents in 1966 to 49 in 1969.<sup>2823</sup> There was then, however, an increase to 97 incidents in 1970. The Principal commented that the overall increase in 1970 was due to increasing number of girls absconding from Scottford House, and noted that absconding had increased in this unit due to very disturbed behaviour coupled with high numbers of staff changes and the absence of the housemistress.<sup>2824</sup> Absconding continued to increase in 1971, when there were 133 incidents, but dropped to 84 incidents in 1972.<sup>2825</sup>

In 1972 girls returned from absconding were placed in secure. Before this year they had been placed in Nightingale House and the Principal remarked it had been hard for the House "to provide a good therapeutic atmosphere for its girls while it also has the function of containing girls in isolation for varying periods."<sup>2826</sup>

Between 1972 and 1974 there was an absconding report form that was filled out each time a resident absconded. Staff were required to record the name and date of birth of the absconder; the date and time of the absconding; any other residents in their company; make notes as to possible whereabouts or further remarks. They were also required to record the time and method of notification of the Principal, parents, police and the district office. When absconders were returned, staff were required to record the time of return; who returned her; and notifications of the return.<sup>2827</sup>

Five girls absconded together from Kingslea in 1980. The incident occurred when one staff member was left to supervise two units alone, due to staff shortages. A staff member noted that staff were not blamed, and there had been no indication that the girls would abscond. He offered the explanation that "the weather was very warm and possibly the essences of spring were surging through their veins."<sup>2828</sup>

In 1980 the Principal advised staff that when residents absconded, the primary responsibility of the staff were the girls who remained behind, and that staff were not to leave the unit to search for the missing girls as it would leave the other residents poorly supervised. He also stated that from time to time it was necessary to restrain a girl in the Residence to prevent her from harming herself or others, or to bring her under control, but that staff were not to use any sort of force in public. If staff found an absconder and could not persuade her to return, they were to inform the police as the Principal did not want staff "struggling with girls in public" or "manhandling them into cars".<sup>2829</sup>

<sup>2821</sup> Memo from K J Ford, Principal to Superintendent, 27/1/59, Kingslea Incidents F021158/2003028572.

<sup>2822</sup> Memo from K J Ford, Principal to Superintendent, 4/10/60, Kingslea Staffing 2003028572/F021158.

<sup>2823</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1970, Kingslea Annual Reports 2005013670, p 35.

<sup>2824</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1970, Kingslea Annual Reports 2005013670, pp 9-10.

<sup>2825</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1972, Kingslea Annual Reports 2005013670, p 16.

<sup>2826</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1972, Kingslea Annual Reports 2005013670, p 7.

<sup>2827</sup> See file F5000005627899 for examples.

<sup>2828</sup> B E G Pegler to Principal, 8/10/80, Kingslea Absconding 2005013475.

<sup>2829</sup> Kingslea Newsletter 1980/38, 21/11/80, Kingslea Absconding F5000005628258.

The absconding rates of girls in short-term care decreased from 108 incidents (involving 52 girls) in 1979 to 83 incidents (involving 39 girls) in 1982.<sup>2830</sup> The absconding rates of extended care girls, however, increased from 84 incidents (involving 44 girls) in 1979 to 129 incidents (involving 51 girls) in 1982.<sup>2831</sup>

In 1983 the Assistant Principal commented that most incidents of absconding were carefully planned and executed and there was little staff could do to prevent them. He noted that at there had been a rumour circulating around Keller residents that absconding led to discharge (following two incidents where this had occurred) and that in order to dispel this staff were emphasising that such decisions were based on individual need.<sup>2832</sup>

As of November 1983 Kingslea notified the parents of absconders directly, rather than through the field social workers as they had done previously.<sup>2833</sup> The procedure following an absconding in 1984 was to search the house first, and then inform the duty officer who would organise a search over the local area. The senior residential worker of the girl's unit would take over responsibility if the initial search failed to turn up the girl, and would organise further searches and stay in contact with the police. Kingslea would broadcast the missing girl's name and publish photos straight away if they believed she was in immediate danger, but otherwise would wait two or three weeks before taking this step.<sup>2834</sup>

On average, one short-term resident absconded every 2.4 days in 1983, absconding had increased from every 3.4 days in 1979. There was one extended care absconder every 1.4 days in 1983, which had increased from every 4.7 days in 1979.<sup>2835</sup>

The Principal commented that 1983 was an extraordinary year as "absconding reached new and worrying levels; several periods of unrest amongst the girls bit deeply into staff reserves of resourcefulness and the girls as a group were much more demanding, disgruntled and challenging than has been our experience of them in recent years."<sup>2836</sup>

In 1984 the *New Zealand Times* printed a letter (not on file) entitled "Treatment Angers Mum". Principal M E Judge responded in a letter to the Editor, stating that Kingslea staff put a lot of time and energy into locating girls who had absconded, and that staff had been told to "take the steps that they would want to see taken if the girl was their own daughter."<sup>2837</sup>

Between 1980 and 1986 staff were required to complete a 'Multiple Absconding Report' following incidents of group absconding. They were required to record the names of all absconders; the situation leading up to the absconding; the method of absconding; staff on duty; and if and when the duty officer was informed.<sup>2838</sup> Head Office required that these forms be provided to them if the girls were gone for periods

<sup>2830</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1982, Kingslea Annual Reports F5000004606486, appendix II, p 3.

<sup>2831</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1982, Kingslea Annual Reports F5000004606486, appendix III, p 2.

<sup>2832</sup> V W Milner, Assistant Principal to Acting Director General, June 1983, Kingslea Absconding F5000005133784.

<sup>2833</sup> Memo from M P Doolan, Principal to Director General, 19/10/83, Kingslea Absconding F5000005133784.

<sup>2834</sup> M E Judge, Principal to Director, Nelson, 11/6/84, Kingslea Absconding F5000005133784.

<sup>2835</sup> Department of Social Welfare Institutions Analysis of Abscondings 1979-1983, date unknown circa 1984, Kingslea Abscondings F5000002186500, table D.

<sup>2836</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1983, Kingslea Annual Reports F5000004606486 p 1.

<sup>2837</sup> M E Judge to the Editor, *New Zealand Times*, 8/6/84, Kingslea Admissions F5000005133784.

<sup>2838</sup> See file F5000005133782 for examples.

of more than two hours.<sup>2839</sup> One such form indicates that in 1986 Kingslea had a policy of returning absconders into open units (rather than secure) if they returned within a few hours and were not intoxicated.<sup>2840</sup>

In 1985 a newspaper article read: "Rather than using fences and barriers to keep the girls in, the staff want to make Kingslea a place where the girls will want to stay. Those who do run away are not automatically punished."<sup>2841</sup>

In the year ended June 1992, 88% of residents had absconded during their time at Kingslea. This decreased to 73% the following year.<sup>2842</sup>

By 1994 the 'Absconding Notification Form' had been updated. The residential social worker had to complete the section regarding the personal details of the absconder; the supervisor recorded the details of the absconding and commented on the risk of danger to the community; and the Manager was required to make an assessment as to whether the incident could have been prevented.<sup>2843</sup>

## Secure care

In 1965 there were violent outbreaks by some residents at Kingslea and, although the outbreaks had been fairly common that year, the secure facility was inadequate to cope with them. It was recommended to the Superintendent that the planned maximum secure facility was built without delay.<sup>2844</sup>

In 1970 and 1971 girls were admitted to Clinic for "persistent absconding, aggressive behaviour and for being very disturbed."<sup>2845</sup> The average length of stay in secure was 29 days in 1970<sup>2846</sup> and 32 days in 1971.<sup>2847</sup>

In 1978 a newsletter reminded staff that when placing residents in secure the emphasis was to be on the treatment of behaviour and the secure facility was not merely to be used as a punitive or isolation facility.<sup>2848</sup> The following week there was an article in "*The Star*" criticising the use of secure at Kingslea.<sup>2849</sup>

In 1979 the Kingslea secure unit was "opened" meaning that although the exterior remained locked, girls' rooms within the unit were left open. The Principal remarked that girls in secure remained basically room-based and movement though the unit had to be initiated by a staff member but girls could interact with other people in the unit. Rooms were locked for a maximum of 15 minutes during day shift if a girl left her room without permission or entered another girl's room. The Principal's permission was required to lock residents in their room for any period longer than 15

<sup>2839</sup> Kingslea Newsletter 1980/37, 6/11/80, Kingslea Absconding F5000005628258, p 3.

<sup>2840</sup> Multiple Absconding Report, 5/8/86, Kingslea Absconding F5000005133782.

<sup>2841</sup> "Kingslea the place where they make a fresh start", David Warner, *Ashburton Guardian*, 16/10/85, Kingslea Profile F002640.

<sup>2842</sup> NZCYPS Residential Absconding and Admission Figures 1991 to 1993, Kingslea Admissions F5000006021054.

<sup>2843</sup> See file F5000004607494 for examples.

<sup>2844</sup> Memo from D G Reilly to Superintendent, 21/10/65, Kingslea Staffing F021152.

<sup>2845</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1970, Kingslea Annual Reports 2005013670, p 7; and Kingslea Annual Report 1971, Kingslea Annual Reports 2005013670, p 5.

<sup>2846</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1970, Kingslea Annual Reports 2005013670, p 30.

<sup>2847</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1971, Kingslea Annual Reports 2005013670, p 23.

<sup>2848</sup> Newsletter 1978/12, 12/04/78, Kingslea Secure F5000005133786, p 2.

<sup>2849</sup> Kingslea Newsletter 1978/13, 19/4/78, Kingslea Secure F5000005133786.

minutes. The unit was opened to "de-emphasise the custodial (and punishment) nature of secure unit care and to emphasise its therapeutic, interventive possibilities."<sup>2850</sup>

Prior to the Strathmore House transfer it was decided that the new short-term care unit should have the use of two time out rooms which could provide a secure setting during the day. The main secure unit would be used for girls who needed secure care overnight.<sup>2851</sup> Following the transfer, the Principal commented that the time out facilities in the short term care unit were used for very short periods of time but were not used for secure care, as staff members felt they could not staff the area adequately.<sup>2852</sup> Accordingly the unit used the Clinic secure much more than had been envisaged. The Principal commented that "the unit is simply not up to the task, and increasingly, the remand function seems to be taking over" and that as a result, extended care girls who would have benefited from some time in secure were "denied the opportunity".<sup>2853</sup>

Principal M P Doolan commented in 1980 that changes had been made to the clinic programme to protect residents' individual rights and to create an environment conducive to personal growth and behavioural change. Upon admission senior staff were to decide the best way to manage a girl's behaviour and whether she could have her door unlocked or not. Her individual secure programme would be decided upon as soon as possible, after discussion with clinic staff, her own staff, and a senior residential social worker.<sup>2854</sup> Girls were not routinely locked in their rooms in secure, "only when they demonstrate an inability to handle the relatively 'open' conditions of the unit."<sup>2855</sup> At this point secure was used to accommodate girls who needed to be contained or controlled due to the fact that they were security risks or had violent outbursts; girls who required time out from their open unit; and girls who need a long period in a secure setting because their problems were so severe that intervention in an open unit was not "practicable, possible or even desirable."<sup>2856</sup>

In 1980 the Principal wished to build up a team of staff members for secure who would specialise in short term intervention.<sup>2857</sup>

Staff were reminded in 1980 that that due to the gravity of admitting a resident to secure, only the Principal was authorised to do so. No other staff members were entitled to admit, to decide to admit, or threaten to admit a resident to secure.<sup>2858</sup>

The secure unit was to have a quiet, peaceful atmosphere in contrast to the "noisy boisterous activity in the open unit."<sup>2859</sup> Girls who left their rooms without permission were locked in their room for fifteen minutes which could be extended at the discretion of the staff. Staff members could also decide to lock a girl in her room if she needed to be kept safe from injuring herself or others.<sup>2860</sup>

<sup>2850</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1981, Kingslea Annual Reports F5000004606486, p 6.

<sup>2851</sup> Minutes of meeting held in Christchurch district office to discuss the closing of Strathmore Girls' Home, Ferry Road, and Transfer of existing service to Kingslea, using Howard Hostel, 29/11/79, Kingslea Complaints 2005033549.

<sup>2852</sup> Memo from M P Doolan, Principal, to Director General, 17/10/80, Kingslea Reports 2005013475, p 3.

<sup>2853</sup> Memo from M P Doolan, Principal, to Director General, 17/10/80, Kingslea Reports 2005013475, p 4.

<sup>2854</sup> Newsletter 1980/3, 5/2/1980, Kingslea Secure F5000005628258.

<sup>2855</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1980, Kingslea Annual Reports F5000004606486, p 4.

<sup>2856</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1981, Kingslea Annual Reports F5000004606486, p 7.

<sup>2857</sup> Kingslea Newsletter 1980/24, 16/7/80, Kingslea Secure F5000005628258, p 2.

<sup>2858</sup> Kingslea Newsletter 1980/37, 6/11/80, Kingslea Absconding F5000005628258, p 3.

<sup>2859</sup> "Guidelines for Program used in Clinic" author unknown, date unknown circa 1980, Kingslea Reports F500000634789, p 1.

<sup>2860</sup> "Guidelines for Program used in Clinic" author unknown, date unknown circa 1980, Kingslea Reports F500000634789, p 2.

In 1980 staff were reminded to be as thorough as possible when completing forms for secure admissions. Principal M P Doolan wrote in a weekly staff newsletter "the use of secure is a serious intervention, which should not be used lightly, and above all, must be justifiable." Staff were therefore required to state how they envisaged secure care would help the girl; what they hoped the secure staff could achieve; and why the behaviour could not or should not have been managed in an open house. At this stage the only person who could discharge a resident from secure was the Senior Residential Social Worker responsible for her programme, who would generally consult with the secure unit staff, open unit staff, and the Principal.<sup>2861</sup>

The Principal noted in 1980 that some residents were left in the secure unit longer than was necessary because it was considered desirable to return them to their house only when their own case worker was on duty. He commented that this could not continue and stated "movement of a girl out of Clinic has priority once it has been decided she no longer needs to be there."<sup>2862</sup>

In 1981 Principal M P Doolan commented that Kingslea was only able to operate as an open facility because it had a secure unit, noting "it was the establishment of a fully independent, staffed secure unit which enabled Kingslea to open up its residential unit."<sup>2863</sup> He did however note that there were issues with the types of buildings that had been designed for secure facilities, he remarked "it is difficult to see the Welfare possibilities of a building erected for seemingly Justice purposes."<sup>2864</sup> He stated that not all girls would need secure care during their time at Kingslea but that for the majority of girls "a supportive social work service is simply not sufficient to ameliorate their difficulties and bring about behaviour change."<sup>2865</sup> Staff stated at this time that they did not use secure care to punish a resident, but instead on "the basis of her need, or to procure her safety."<sup>2866</sup>

The Principal reminded staff in 1982 that the departmental policy required that unless there were substantial reasons why secure admission was indicated, admissions were to be directly into an open unit.<sup>2867</sup> The Principal reported in 1982 that the secure unit was not for dealing with naughty or bad girls, but "rather we are managing behaviour that results from excessively poor self esteem, from depressive and anxiety states, from extreme emotional lability and from personality and conduct disorders. In addition to managing the behaviour, we are learning to intervene in a planned way, to build new skills, enhance coping strategies, release emotional tension and raise self esteem."<sup>2868</sup> During this year the secure unit adopted a therapeutic programme, rather than the custodial role they had used in the past.<sup>2869</sup>

In 1982 a new review system for secure admissions was implemented at the request of Head Office. There was to be a review 72 hours after an admission to secure and another after five days. The Principal had the authority to extend the placement by up to 14 days but after this required permission from Head Office. Furthermore,

<sup>2861</sup> Kingslea Newsletter 1980/24, 16/07/80, Kingslea Secure F5000005628258, p 2.

<sup>2862</sup> Kingslea Newsletter 1980/32, 1/10/80, Kingslea Secure F5000005628258, p 2.

<sup>2863</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1981, Kingslea Annual Reports F5000004606486, p 5.

<sup>2864</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1981, Kingslea Annual Reports F5000004606486, p 5. Emphasis is as appears in original document.

<sup>2865</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1981, Kingslea Annual Reports F5000004606486, p 6.

<sup>2866</sup> "The practice of residential care at Kingslea Christchurch" compiled by Kingslea staff, August 1981, Kingslea Profile F5000005133784.

<sup>2867</sup> Kingslea Newsletter 1982/38, 14/12/82, Kingslea Secure F5000005133784, p 4.

<sup>2868</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1982, Kingslea Annual Reports F5000004606486, p 4.

<sup>2869</sup> M E Judge, Assistant Principal to Director, Social Work Training Centre, 11/3/82, Kingslea Staffing F5000004673601.

daily reviews were to continue.<sup>2870</sup> The new system resulted in intense scrutiny and review by people not directly involved in the situation, and this in turn reassured girls that the least restrictive treatment options would be used. The system gave girls a high degree of involvement in programme planning and decision making. For staff the scrutiny resulted in a greater pressure to work to deadlines, and more reviews amounted to more work for staff.<sup>2871</sup> Although there were increased numbers of girls in secure for periods of five days or more in 1983, the number of girls in secure for fourteen days or more reduced.<sup>2872</sup>

The average length of stay in secure between 1979 and 1983 dropped from 12.2 days to 3.9. However, it was noted that due to extra review requirements the length of stay was getting shorter but readmissions to secure were much higher than they had been.<sup>2873</sup>

Principal M E Judge commented in 1984 that the secure unit was no longer suited to its purpose, nor was it secure, and she hoped that a new facility could be built that would lessen the "prison-like punishing atmosphere". She also stated that it was "also difficult to create a therapeutic environment when safe supervision can only be maintained by girls spending most of their day in their individual rooms."<sup>2874</sup>

In 1984 the Senior Counsellor examined the correlation between repeated absconding and repeated admission to secure. He found a link between behaviour issues in the residence and the amount of times a girl ran away. He found that the group of girls who repeatedly absconded was virtually the same group of girls who were repeatedly placed in secure. He noted, however, that only one returned absconder in three was placed in secure, meaning 66% of absconding incidents were managed by staff through other means. Furthermore, he found that the repeated absconders were the same girls who were admitted to secure for behavioural incidents, meaning they were continually seen in secure but for reasons that two times out of three were other than absconding.<sup>2875</sup>

The Kingslea secure facilities were used by residents of the Opawa Group Home in 1984. One such resident was required to spend her time at Kingslea secure in her room, was not to have contact with other girls, and was required to eat her meals alone or in her room.<sup>2876</sup>

The secure senior residential social worker commented in 1985 that the secure beds were "increasingly fully in use" which he accredited to "the lowered overall experience of the staff team who have yet to build up skills to anticipate, defuse, or have a sufficient range of other strategies in their behaviour management repertoire."<sup>2877</sup>

There were numerous suicide attempts in the secure unit in 1985.<sup>2878</sup>

In 1985 a resident being admitted to secure concealed a lighter internally before she was searched, and quickly managed to set alight the mattress in her room. A

<sup>2870</sup> Kingslea Newsletter 1982/38, 14/12/82, Kingslea Secure F5000005133784, p 4.

<sup>2871</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1983, Kingslea Annual Reports F5000004606486, pp 9-10.

<sup>2872</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1983, Kingslea Annual Reports F5000004606486, p 11.

<sup>2873</sup> National Institutions statistics, 1979-1983, Kingslea Profile F5000002186500.

<sup>2874</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1984, Kingslea Annual Reports F5000004606486, pp 4-5.

<sup>2875</sup> "Correlation between use of Secure Units and Absconding" Franz Kney, Senior Counsellor, 1/8/84, Kingslea Secure F5000003920984.

<sup>2876</sup> See admission forms on file F5000003920984.

<sup>2877</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1985, Kingslea Annual Reports F5000004606486, p 6.

<sup>2878</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1985, Kingslea Annual Reports F5000004606486, p 6.

Ministry of Works and Development staff member stated that the mattress was made of foam rubber and burned with "extreme rapidity", and noted that the use of this type of mattress was unsatisfactory.<sup>2879</sup> Following this incident Principal M E Judge ordered new "self-extinguishing" mattresses for all beds in the secure unit.<sup>2880</sup>

In 1986 some of the reasons given for the use of secure care were: in response to absconding; to prevent girls from absconding; to allow slow integration with peers; to give time to settle into Kingslea and develop a bond with staff; for drug use; to treat drug withdrawal; because girls were at risk of promiscuity or alcohol abuse; behavioural problems; and serious charges pending. One girl was held in secure to prevent her from using drugs while she was pregnant; another was placed there due to her disregard for her own health following surgery.<sup>2881</sup>

There were between 60 and 80 admissions to the secure unit each month between 1984 and 1987.<sup>2882</sup> In 1987 54% of stays in secure were for periods of 24 hours or less, and 88% were for periods of 7 day or less.<sup>2883</sup> There are many examples on files of requests and approvals for residents to be placed in secure for periods exceeding 14 days in 1986.<sup>2884</sup>

In 1987 a memorandum from Head Office stated that Kingslea would only accept admissions under the Children and Young Persons Act 1974 of those children who could legally be confined to secure care, should the need arise. Admissions would also be accepted under the Criminal Justice Act but secure care was not possible for these residents.<sup>2885</sup> Southern region staff requested that the Director General sought a High Court ruling regarding empowering legislation for secure care.<sup>2886</sup>

In 1987 the Southern Regional Office requested a report from Kingslea on the use of secure as time out or punishment.<sup>2887</sup> This followed a report from the Youth Law project which stated that Kingslea held 37 girls in secure for periods longer than three weeks in 1987. The report also stated that records kept by staff were "gravely deficient", noting that for one month there were no figures kept on numbers admitted to secure.<sup>2888</sup>

In 1987 an application to extend a resident's placement in secure care by a week to treat her for drug withdrawal was accepted. She had already been in the secure unit for over four weeks.<sup>2889</sup>

In the late 1980s auditors found deficiencies in Kingslea's use of secure and a document entitled "Use of Secure" was prepared for staff to use as a guide. Secure use was to be purposeful and continually justified and the facilities were only to be used as a last resort. A senior residential social worker had to approve all secure

<sup>2879</sup> Fire Report, P S Barton for District Commissioner of Works, Ministry of Works and Development, 18/7/85, Kingslea Incidents F5000005133782.

<sup>2880</sup> Memo from J A Blair for Director General to Principal, 27/8/85, Kingslea Secure F5000005133782.

<sup>2881</sup> See files F5000003921145 and F5000005627898 for examples of secure admission reports.

<sup>2882</sup> Table 1 to unknown document, date unknown, Kingslea Admissions F5000004516500.

<sup>2883</sup> "DSW Residential Institutions Secure Care Statistics 1987" prepared by Monitoring and Evaluation Section Head Office, June 1988, Kingslea Reports F5000004606880, p 6.

<sup>2884</sup> See file F5000005133782 for examples.

<sup>2885</sup> Memo from V W Milner to all Directors, 25/2/87, Kingslea Secure F5000005627898.

<sup>2886</sup> Southern Region Field and Residential Management staff to Director General, 16/3/87, Kingslea Secure F5000005627898.

<sup>2887</sup> Memo from V Milner to Director, date unknown circa 1988, Kingslea Secure F5000004606880.

<sup>2888</sup> "Concerns of Youth Law Project as to secure care statistics 1987" author unknown, date unknown circa 1988, Kingslea Secure F5000004606880.

<sup>2889</sup> Certificate of secure care for each successive seven day period, 22/4/87, Kingslea Health F5000005627898.



admissions. Young persons had to be informed that they were being placed in secure and were required to walk there. If they remained noncompliant after three requests a minimum amount of physical force could be used to get them to the secure facility. Once there, staff were to ask them to turn out their pockets and remove jewellery, and then frisk them in order to search for dangerous items. Residents who were returning from absconding, had deliberately "orchestrated" their admission to secure, who were depressed or suicidal, or who were "intent on dramatic incidents and drawing attention to themselves" were required to undress before being searched. Upon admissions the "Secure Register" had to be filled out stating the grounds for placement and details of the proposed treatment plan. Residents in secure were to eat meals in their rooms only in exceptional cases. Supervised contact with other young persons was to be maintained, and family contact was to be encouraged. Reviews were to be completed after 24 hours, 72 hours, and seven days in secure.<sup>2890</sup>

There are contradictory statements about the capacity of secure in 1989.

A position statement in June 1989 stated that the secure facility had five residential social workers and one senior residential social worker per team, and operated on a staff to resident ratio of one to three, which was considered manageable. At this stage there were 15 beds in the unit but due to changes in the Residence, it was recommended that that the secure facility be reduced to 12 beds.<sup>2891</sup>

However, an Action Plan only a month that stated that in July 1989 secure provided co-ed services for up to nine young people at a time. The facility began to address issues identified in a Human Rights Commission report. The facility was to be developed in such a way that the judicial and special needs young people could be separated; positive programmes such as anger management or work skills were to be provided to supplement recreational programmes; secure was not to be used as a form of punishment; residents were only to be placed in secure when staff could identify the problems underlying their behaviour and proposals to address them; all staff were to receive behaviour and anger management training; young people were to have the reasons for their confinement communicated to them; and residents in secure were to take part in the daily review of their cases.<sup>2892</sup>

In 1989 an audit review noted that there had been a change in recruitment policy for secure staff, who from that point were employed specifically to work in secure rather than in the residence in general. The report requested that residents be given a copy of the Children and Young Persons (Residential Care) Regulations.<sup>2893</sup>

In 1989 residents from the open units were able to visit residents in secure. A complaint was made by a resident directly to the Director about inconsistencies in the rules.<sup>2894</sup>

The Christchurch Institutional Management Committee noted in 1989 that more male staff were wanted on the secure team due to the difficult and aggressive adolescents being dealt with at Kingslea. Director M E Judge informed the committee that secure

<sup>2890</sup> "Use of Secure" John R Ware, A.D (Group Care) date unknown circa late 1980s, Kingslea Reports F5000004606880. The guidelines resulted from interpretation of the Children and Young Persons (Residential Care) Regulations 1986.

<sup>2891</sup> "Secure care – Kingslea Resource Centre Position Statement – as at 14 June 1989" author unknown, 3/7/89, Kingslea Secure F5000004516500.

<sup>2892</sup> "Secure Unit Kingslea Resource Centre Action Plan" July 1989, Kingslea Secure F500004516500, pp 9-11.

<sup>2893</sup> Audit Report, October 1989, Kingslea Reports F007702, p 9.

<sup>2894</sup> M E Judge, Director to Mr East and Mrs Radford, 30/10/89, Kingslea Secure F5000004602501.

staff were stressed as there was only one psychiatrist interested in working with adolescents, and also because the secure facilities were insecure.<sup>2895</sup>

In 1990 the secure unit was strongly linked to the Youth Justice programme and was used as a national resource in special cases.<sup>2896</sup> Internal auditors recommended that new open unit programmes be developed, planned and implemented so that they were more interesting and exciting than the secure programme in order to minimise use of secure.<sup>2897</sup>

In the early 1990s the secure facility could be used upon admission "if the supervisor is assured that the child or young person could not be managed in the unit because of his/her 'extreme acting out' behaviour."<sup>2898</sup> After admission, residents could be placed in secure if there was a risk of them absconding, and they had previously absconded from custody, and their mental, physical or emotional well-being was likely to be harmed if they absconded; and/or if there was a need to prevent the young persons from behaving in a manner likely to cause physical harm to themselves or others.<sup>2899</sup>

In 1991 it was noted that documentation in the "Secure Care Register" was sparse but that staff wrote detailed and specific grounds for admission and treatment plans in the residents' personal files.<sup>2900</sup> Admissions to secure during the night were required to meet statutory requirements, and needed to be authorised by the duty senior social worker.<sup>2901</sup>

From January to March 1991 there were 136 admissions to Kingslea secure, the longest containment was 64 days, the shortest was half an hour.<sup>2902</sup>

In 1993 the Kingslea secure unit was designated as the national secure facility for young people sentenced under the Criminal Justice Act.<sup>2903</sup> Responsibility for such residents remained with the Justice Department, and negotiation of admissions was carried out at head office level.<sup>2904</sup>

## Physical layout

Five secure rooms were attached to the pre-existing clinic in 1952.<sup>2905</sup>

Secure facilities were extended again in 1968 when another eight rooms, activity rooms and a small classroom were added. A new clinic was also built at this point; it contained an office, doctors' rooms, a treatment room, a dental surgery, two two-bed wards and staff accommodation.<sup>2906</sup>

<sup>2895</sup> Minutes of Christchurch Institutional Management Committee, 6/3/89, Kingslea Secure ADM/1/1/10/3.

<sup>2896</sup> Audit Report, October 1990, Kingslea Reports F5000004603647, p 4.

<sup>2897</sup> Audit Report, October 1990, Kingslea Reports F5000004603647, p 9.

<sup>2898</sup> Care and Protection Unit document, untitled, author and date unknown, circa early 1990s, Kingslea Reports F5000003759606.

<sup>2899</sup> Care and Protection Unit document, untitled, author and date unknown, circa early 1990s, Kingslea Reports F5000003759606. This was staff interpretation of the Children, Young Persons and their Families Act 1989.

<sup>2900</sup> "Notes on Kingslea Secure" author unknown, 22/5/91, Kingslea Secure F5000005627897.

<sup>2901</sup> Minutes of night staff meeting, 5/3/91, Kingslea Staffing F5000004602521.

<sup>2902</sup> Kingslea Secure Unit Quarterly Report, 22/5/91, Kingslea Reports F5000005627897.

<sup>2903</sup> Internal Audit Report, November 1993, Kingslea Reports F5000004603647, p 4.

<sup>2904</sup> Internal Audit Report, November 1993, Kingslea Reports F5000004603647, p 6.

<sup>2905</sup> A review of some of the changes in the Centre in the period 1942-1970, Mrs K J Ford (Principal), 1970, Kingslea Annual Reports 2005013670, p 11.

<sup>2906</sup> A review of some of the changes in the Centre in the period 1942-1970, Mrs K J Ford (Principal), 1970, Kingslea Annual Reports 2005013670, p 11.

In 1978 the rooms were described as solid with "minimum appendages" to prevent girls from self harm or suicide attempts.<sup>2907</sup>

The Principal noted in 1983 that "the poor design features of the unit were glaringly obvious during the year, especially on occasions where suicidal behaviours were present amongst residents".<sup>2908</sup> He also noted that on two occasions loss of life or serious injury through immolation were only avoided through staff vigilance.<sup>2909</sup>

In 1983 the secure rooms were redecorated.<sup>2910</sup> Kingslea was planning at this stage for a new secure unit, the Principal commented that all sleeping accommodation must be in single rooms, and that as the girls would be in their rooms during the day the rooms were required to be of sufficient size and shape to accommodate a girl and an accompanying staff member. Furthermore, every room in which a girl could be contained by herself required a non-audible method of communicating that she needed staff attention.<sup>2911</sup>

There were 13 beds in the secure unit in 1985.<sup>2912</sup>

In 1988 plans were made for a new secure unit. It was noted that the existing unit was inadequate and unsuitable for the demands placed on it.<sup>2913</sup>

In the late 1980s a new secure unit was built and Kingslea staff were involved in its design. The new unit was designed to look and feel less like a prison than the previous unit. The doors were specially designed to look ordinary but still provide maximum security, and there were more windows. The outlook was improved, and the unit was visible to residents in the open units.<sup>2914</sup> When the new unit opened, a newspaper article noted that there were 16 beds, and the unit contained both high-security and medium security wings. There was also a library, an occupational therapy room, a games room and a dining room. The locking system was electronic.<sup>2915</sup>

## Strip searches

In 1984 the Principal reported that over the previous few years all girls admitted to secure had been routinely strip searched. She noted that most staff and residents "felt uncomfortable at the arbitrary and compulsory nature of this procedure". It was thus replaced in 1984 with a declaration which every girl was required to sign on entering the unit, promising that she had no dangerous items on her, and handing any she did have to staff. The Principal commented "the benefit is that girls are

<sup>2907</sup> "The Philosophy of Residential Care at Kingslea", author unknown, August 1978, Kingslea Reports F5000005628256, p 9.

<sup>2908</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1983, Kingslea Annual Reports F5000004606486, p 9.

<sup>2909</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1983, Kingslea Annual Reports F5000004606486, p 9.

<sup>2910</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1983, Kingslea Annual Reports F5000004606486, p 9.

<sup>2911</sup> Proposal for new secure care facility, M P Doolan, Principal, 26/5/83, Kingslea Secure F5000004606880, p 20.

<sup>2912</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1985, Kingslea Annual Reports F5000004606486, p 6.

<sup>2913</sup> T M Comer for Director General to the Minister of Social Welfare, 23/2/88, Kingslea Secure F5000005133876.

<sup>2914</sup> C J Corsbie for Consultancy Branch Manager, Works Consultancy Services to Kingslea Director, 13/6/1990, Kingslea Reports F5000004606880.

<sup>2915</sup> "New unit for Kingslea", writer unknown, publication unknown, November 1989, Kingslea Profile F002640.

given a choice. The drawback is that they frequently abuse it." Dangerous articles found in secure included razor blades, knives, scissors, matches, and lighters.<sup>2916</sup>

Soon after routine strip searching was abolished, secure staff members noted that more contraband was going into the unit than previously, and girls were not taking the declaration particularly seriously. They recommended that the declaration system be retained but that if a resident broke the agreement she be strip searched each admission for the remainder of the term, and deprived of a privilege such as the loss of one television session. They also recommended that staff would reserve the right to strip search girls if they had particular cause for concern. Their recommendations were accepted.<sup>2917</sup>

In 1989 it was reported that staff were reluctant to send young persons out of the secure unit for programmes or appointments because every time they returned they were required to be strip searched. Although staff considered this an intrusion and noted that it took a lot of time, they also stated it was a "critical routine" as residents would often return with dangerous objects. Staff preferred appointments with the nurse, psychologist and the like to take place in the secure unit even though the facility was "not conducive to privacy".<sup>2918</sup>

In 1992 a resident complained about an incident where she was made to do star jumps during a strip search after refusing to lower the towel which covered her body. The staff member involved stated: "It is my understanding that when carrying out a strip search we view a naked body to ensure that no contraband is concealed on the person."<sup>2919</sup> The Acting Assistant Director, having read the complaint and the staff member's response, commented that there was nothing untoward about the search and that due to the serious nature of the contraband staff were correct to search for it. He recommended the search procedures be carried out thoroughly.<sup>2920</sup>

In 1993 the Branch Manager stated that all absconders were strip searched upon return. In an incident where a resident was not strip searched immediately upon return to secure, he was able to conceal a cigarette lighter on before the search and later set fire to the bedding in his room.<sup>2921</sup>

## Programmes and education in secure

In 1970 the programme in secure consisted of daily physical education classes, school classes, sewing, rug making, art and reading. All girls attended the classes irrespective of whether they normally attended school.<sup>2922</sup> This continued in 1971.<sup>2923</sup> The Head Teacher commented in 1972 that the clinic school was valuable as it allowed girls to be taught in "almost ideal conditions." He wrote: "individual attention can be given to a degree not possible in the normal class. One of the most valuable by-products is that girls have time and opportunity for reading. Encouraging use is made of this."<sup>2924</sup>

<sup>2916</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1984, Kingslea Annual Reports F5000004606486, p 16.

Report on the change to the strip search procedures for secure, 30/4/84, Kingslea Secure F5000005133784.<sup>2917</sup>

<sup>2918</sup> "Secure Unit Kingslea Resource Centre Action Plan" July 1989, Kingslea Secure F500004516500, p 17.

<sup>2919</sup> R E Pouaka, Night Staff to J Huston, Acting Assistant Director, 23/1/92, Kingslea Secure F5000004602501.

<sup>2920</sup> "File Note", John Huston, Acting Director, 23/1/92, Kingslea Secure F5000004602501.

<sup>2921</sup> Branch Manger Kingslea to Regional Manager Southern, 19/1/93, Kingslea Secure F5000004607495.

<sup>2922</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1970, Kingslea Annual Reports 2005013670, p 7.

<sup>2923</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1971, Kingslea Annual Reports 2005013670, p 10.

<sup>2924</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1972, Kingslea Annual Reports 2005013670, p 4.

In 1971 Principal K J Ford noted that girls in secure were regularly seen by a doctor and the Senior Counsellor.<sup>2925</sup> She commented in 1972 that "most of the activities available in the centre are now, or soon will be, available within the secure environment of Clinic."<sup>2926</sup>

In 1984 high numbers of girls in secure meant that staff were less able to complete any therapeutic work with them and were at times "only containing the girls".<sup>2927</sup>

Caseworkers were able to visit their residents in secure in 1986. They were required to log their visit in the secure duty book, and also to write notes pertaining to the visit in the girls' personal files.<sup>2928</sup>

When in secure care in the 1980s girls were often given a choice of activities to do in their rooms such as reading, a game, or schoolwork, and were allowed to have the radio turned on in their rooms outside of school hours. Any group activities had to take into account girls' individual treatment programmes, and were to be supervised by staff members at all times.<sup>2929</sup>

Internal auditors noted in 1989 that the school teacher had commented she was not sufficiently involved in the secure programme planning or reviews for long stays in secure. The Assistant Director Secure Care responded that opportunities for the teacher had been offered but not taken up.<sup>2930</sup>

In 1993 secure residents were able to use the swimming pool if staff judged the privilege was warranted, but could only swim one at a time and when escorted by staff members who were actively supervising.<sup>2931</sup>

## Discipline

In 1962 a staff member at the Department of Education wrote: "I can think of no way we can help the staff at Burwood unless it be by employing staff who would not be afraid to retaliate when struck by a girl but that would mean a change of policy and could be dangerous."<sup>2932</sup>

A 1965 *Woman's Weekly* article mentioned that a girl who had been caught smoking was given the punishment of "silence till bedtime".<sup>2933</sup>

In the 1970s secure was used as a disciplinary measure. A document setting out the Kingslea policy on discipline read: "The secure unit is also used where aggressive behaviour may bring risk to other girls or where habitual absconding has

<sup>2925</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1971, Kingslea Annual Reports 2005013670, p 6.

<sup>2926</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1972, Kingslea Annual Reports 2005013670, p 7.

<sup>2927</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1984, Kingslea Annual Reports F5000004606486, p 14.

<sup>2928</sup> Memo from W Philp to all Unit Senior Residential Social Workers, 18/10/86, Kingslea Secure F5000005133876.

<sup>2929</sup> "Guidelines for Program used in Clinic" author unknown, date unknown circa 1980, Kingslea Reports F5000000634789, p 1.

<sup>2930</sup> Audit Report, October 1989, Kingslea Reports F007702, p 9.

<sup>2931</sup> Memo from Liz Nielsen, Manager Residences to all residential supervisors and all residential social workers, 12/10/93, Kingslea Secure F5000004602521

<sup>2932</sup> Memo from unreadable author to Mr Ferguson, 21/12/62, Kingslea Staffing F021158/2003028572.

<sup>2933</sup> "Burwood – Home to Girls Who Never Had a Chance" Dorothy Braxton, *New Zealand Woman's Weekly*, 15/2/65, Kingslea Profile F021155.

not been controlled. As much as possible, where curtailing freedom and liberty, the emphasis is on treatment and opportunity for self-fulfilment."<sup>2934</sup>

In 1975 a series of advice for staff in relation to discipline was printed in the weekly newsletters.<sup>2935</sup> Staff were reminded that whole groups should not be punished for what one resident had done and that discipline should be fair.<sup>2936</sup> They were reminded that the goal of punishment was treatment, and that punishments should be individualised.<sup>2937</sup>

In 1977 a staff newsletter set out some "important overall considerations" about discipline. Principal O T Ryan reminded staff of their role as leaders, and their "responsibility beyond affection". He advised them not to overuse any single punishment device and to construct a list of rules, remind girls of them as necessary, and change them when appropriate. He stated "keep your temper, depersonalise the situation, and be a model of self-control."<sup>2938</sup>

In 1978 Kingslea staff attempted to make similar demands of a girl as would be expected were she in the general community. Therefore at times girls were charged through the justice system "in order that she understands that the protection of the law is universal."<sup>2939</sup>

In 1981 staff stated that they sought to achieve behaviour management through fairness, consistency, warmth, trustworthiness, and genuine concern, and that they rejected practises which would degrade, dehumanise, punish, harm or humiliate girls.<sup>2940</sup>

Between 1987 and 1989 punishments issued to residents were logged in a punishment book. Staff were required to record the date and time the punishment commenced; the full name of the child or young person; the reason for the punishment; a description of the punishment; the name of the authorising staff member; the date and time the Visiting Committee was notified; the date and time the punishment ended; and the duration of the punishment.<sup>2941</sup> It appears that each house had its own punishment log.

Any use of restraints in 1991 were first to be approved by the Assistant Director or Director. If a situation arose where their approval could not be sought, the senior social worker was to contact either of them immediately following the incident.<sup>2942</sup> It was decided also in this year that clients in the secure unit who assaulted staff members or other residents were to be formally charged, although exceptions could be discussed with those involved, the shift senior and/or the Assistant Director.<sup>2943</sup>

Night staff in 1991 could not hand out "consequences" for any disturbances or misbehaviour during the night; they were to note it in the diary and pass the information on to day staff. F Erickson, Acting Director, stated that consequences

<sup>2934</sup> Treatment Procedure Kingslea, author unknown, date unknown circa 1976, Kingslea Reports F5000005133786, p 7.

<sup>2935</sup> See Kingslea Newsletters 1975/52-59 on file F5000005133786.

<sup>2936</sup> Kingslea Newsletter 1975/59, 3/12/75, Kingslea Punishment F5000005133786.

<sup>2937</sup> Kingslea Newsletter 1975/57, 19/12/75, Kingslea Punishment F5000005133786.

<sup>2938</sup> Kingslea Newsletter 1977/14, 14/6/77, Kingslea Punishments F5000005133786.

<sup>2939</sup> "The Philosophy of Residential Care at Kingslea", author unknown, August 1978, Kingslea Reports F5000005628256, p 9.

<sup>2940</sup> "The practice of residential care at Kingslea Christchurch" compiled by Kingslea staff, August 1981, Kingslea Profile F5000005133784.

<sup>2941</sup> See files F5000004065569, F5000004065568 and F5000004065572 for examples.

<sup>2942</sup> Memo from F Erickson, Assistant Director to all staff, 2/5/91, Kingslea Staffing F5000004602521.

<sup>2943</sup> Memo from M Young, SSW to unknown recipients, 29/8/91, Kingslea Secure F5000004602521.

were to be individual to each resident, and that the caseworkers and senior caseworkers were to retain "consistent and appropriate consequences when and where necessary".<sup>2944</sup>

In 1991 it was noted that staff used basing residents in their room (from 1/2 hour to 24 hours); locking residents in their room (from 1 hour to 24 hours); and placing residents on the work programme (from 1 hour to 4 hours) as punishments for residents in secure.<sup>2945</sup> The Assistant Director issued a memorandum to all staff stating that to plan to use the option of locking residents up was in contravention of the Regulations, and the option of a four hour or 24 hour lock following specific behaviour was to stop. Residents were only to be placed in their rooms until their behaviour was modified, and then they were to be released straight away. Staff were also reminded that the punishment book needed to be completed at the time of incident and signed by the young person, or if the young person refused, by another staff member.<sup>2946</sup>

In 1991 all punishments (as defined in the Regulations) were recorded in the punishment register at the time they were issued.<sup>2947</sup>

## Physical punishment

There was no information available regarding the use of physical punishment at Kingslea.

## Drugs, alcohol, and tattoos

In 1965, 48 of the residents had tattoos, 23 of whom had been admitted with them and 25 of whom who were tattooed for the first time while in residence.<sup>2948</sup> Principal K J Ford stated that any resident found tattooing herself or another resident had "one month added to her time in the Centre" and lost her first visit home.<sup>2949</sup>

In 1968 the Acting Principal commented that tattooing was unacceptable at Kingslea. She further noted: "If girls come in with them on or persist in disfiguring themselves in this way the responsibility for removing them is not undertaken by us except in isolated areas where it would appear necessary."<sup>2950</sup> (This policy had changed by 1980, see below).

In 1970 the Principal noted that although higher numbers of girls who had tattoos were being admitted, fewer girls were tattooing themselves while at the Home. Of the 62 residents admitted that year, 32 had tattoos.<sup>2951</sup> In 1971, 41 of the new admissions had tattoos. The Principal also commented that at this stage "another

<sup>2944</sup> Memo from F Erickson, Acting Director to all Senior Social Worker Staff and all Night Staff; 10/1/91, Kingslea Punishments F5000004602521.

<sup>2945</sup> "Notes on Kingslea Secure" author unknown, 22/5/91, Kingslea Secure F5000005627897.

<sup>2946</sup> Memo from Fran Erickson, Assistant Director to all staff, 22/5/91, Kingslea Secure F5000005627897.

<sup>2947</sup> Kingslea Admission Pack, date unknown circa 1991, Kingslea Admissions F5000004602521.

<sup>2948</sup> No information is provided in relation to the remaining 10 residents.

<sup>2949</sup> Memo from K J Ford, Principal to Superintendent, 7/5/65, Kingslea Drugs and Smoking Archives W50481376 2006/8588. For more information on tattooing, see Drugs, Alcohol and Tattoos section.

<sup>2950</sup> Memo from I F Pedder, Acting Principal to Superintendent, 1/5/68, Kingslea Admissions F0211550.

<sup>2951</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1970, Kingslea Annual Reports 2005013670, p 24.

form of mutilation, the insertion of needles intra-muscularly" was occurring at Kingslea.<sup>2952</sup>

In 1977 there was reportedly a "spate of tattooing". The Principal commented that a lot of it was occurring while girls were missing from Kingslea, but that there was also some being done in the residence.<sup>2953</sup>

In 1980 the Principal commented that there were problems with a number of girls sniffing petrol, cleaning products, and inhalers. He urged staff to take all reasonable steps to ensure that products which could be sniffed were locked away.<sup>2954</sup> He also stated: "we place a lot of value on tattoo removal in the interests of rehabilitation, and it is a delight to see girls transformed by the removal of tattoos inflicted at a very unhappy phase of their lives."<sup>2955</sup>

In 1981 staff agreed to ensure that girls were protected from harmful materials, such as aerosols and lighter fluids, by making sure they were locked away when not in use. Another staff objective was to encourage the surgical removal of girls' tattoos at the shared cost of the resident and the Department.<sup>2956</sup>

In 1984 a number of girls requested the removal of their tattoos. The Principal commented that the allocation of money for professional services was in deficit, but requested extra funding for one resident. She believed this resident deserved special consideration as she had a good prognosis for rehabilitation; her tattoos caused her embarrassment and distress; she had worked hard to raise 15% of the cost of the surgery (as was required by Kingslea policy at the time); and the surgery would make it easier for her family to accept her back.<sup>2957</sup>

Principal M E Judge informed Head Office in 1984 that Kingslea had a lot of problems with solvent abuse, and that there had been several incidents where girls had become aggressive and violent. She commented that there were attempts to reduce the problem, such as an effort to limit access to solvents, but that the main effort remained "a social work one – aimed at reducing the need to sniff and facing girls with the likely consequences of continued sniffing."<sup>2958</sup>

In 1994 all resident outings were cancelled due to "the amount of glue and other substances on the property". Soon afterwards the Assistant Director commented that staff had assured her that the problem had been resolved, and she therefore reinstated outings. She did, however, issue a memo to residents warning them that if any more glue or substances were found on an individual, the next planned outing would be cancelled for all residents.<sup>2959</sup>

There were frequent reports in 1994 about drugs being used at Kingslea.<sup>2960</sup>

<sup>2952</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1971, Kingslea Annual Reports 2005013670, p 18.

<sup>2953</sup> Kingslea Newsletter 1977/10, 29/3/77, Kingslea Drugs and Smoking F5000005133786.

<sup>2954</sup> Kingslea Newsletter 1980/20, 17/6/80, Kingslea Drugs and Smoking F5000005628258, p 2.

<sup>2955</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1980, Kingslea Annual Reports F5000004606486, p 5.

<sup>2956</sup> "The practice of residential care at Kingslea Christchurch" compiled by Kingslea staff, August 1981, Kingslea Profile F5000005133784.

<sup>2957</sup> Memo from M E Judge to Director General, 12/11/84, Kingslea Health F5000005133784.

<sup>2958</sup> Memo from M P Doolan, Director Residential Services to Divisional Director (Social Work), 19/4/84, Kingslea Drugs and Smoking F5000005133784.

<sup>2959</sup> Memo from F Erickson, Assistant Director to all Staff and Young People, 26/12/91, Kingslea Drugs and Smoking F5000004602521.

<sup>2960</sup> See files F5000004602501 and F5000004607494 for examples.



## Smoking

In 1976 the weekly newsletter advised staff that smoking had been "reinstated" at the rate of three cigarettes per girl per day. Staff were only permitted to smoke in the duty rooms; however when girls were permitted to smoke staff could smoke with them.<sup>2961</sup> The next week's newsletter advised that staff were required to keep a list of all incidents of illegal smoking for a period in 1976 and the reports were to be discussed at a senior staff meeting. It was noted that until the meeting smoking was limited to three cigarettes per day and girls were required to declare all stocks of cigarettes and money.<sup>2962</sup>

In 1977 staff were asked in a questionnaire to advise of the rules surrounding smoking at Kingslea. The response was: "Legally – over 15 years – must buy out of pocket money. Limited to about 30 per week. Illegally – butts etc in the toilet."<sup>2963</sup>

The Principal commented in 1977 that some staff considered that when girls were off the property the smoking rules did not apply, and that certain staff members had given cigarettes to girls, including to some that were under 15.<sup>2964</sup>

In 1979 girls on the working programme at Kingslea were permitted additional smoking breaks at morning and afternoon tea, and otherwise only at times when all girls were permitted to smoke. Girls working off-site were permitted to take their cigarettes with them to work but were required to hand them in upon their return to Kingslea at the end of the day.<sup>2965</sup> Staff were asked not to smoke in situations where they were in confined spaces with residents who were not themselves permitted to smoke, such as in vehicles.<sup>2966</sup> Staff were also asked not to stamp out their cigarettes on the grounds as residents were retrieving the butts.<sup>2967</sup>

In 1980 a staff newsletter explained that each girl who smoked was issued 25 cigarettes per week. If a girl was "taken off" smoking the accumulated cigarettes were to be held for her until she went on day or weekend leave, until the end of term, or until discharge. Girls were charged for the cigarettes. The newsletter implied that girls under 15 years old were not permitted to smoke.<sup>2968</sup>

In 1980 the Principal stated that the rule was, and always had been, that girls were not permitted to smoke in secure. He noted however that residents in the secure unit on a long term basis, and who had no opportunities to smoke out side the unit, were at times allowed to do so under supervision.<sup>2969</sup>

<sup>2961</sup> Kingslea Newsletter 1976/27, 4/9/76, Kingslea Drugs and Smoking F5000005133786. There was no information as to why smoking had been banned or why it was reinstated.

<sup>2962</sup> Kingslea Newsletter 1976/26, 10/9/76, Kingslea Staffing F5000005133786.

<sup>2963</sup> Questionnaire sent to National Institutions, 1977, Kingslea Admissions 2005013475, p 2.

<sup>2964</sup> Kingslea Newsletter 1977/33, 1/11/77, Kingslea Drugs and Smoking F5000005133786, p 2.

<sup>2965</sup> Kingslea Newsletter 1979/27, 4/10/79, Kingslea Drugs and Smoking F5000005628255, p 3.

<sup>2966</sup> Kingslea Newsletter 1979/34, 27/11/79, Kingslea Drugs and Smoking F5000005628255.

<sup>2967</sup> Kingslea Newsletter 1979/35, 4/12/79, Kingslea Drugs and Smoking F5000005628255, p 2. This problem continued in 1980 – see, for example, Kingslea Newsletter 1980/9, 18/3/80, Kingslea Drugs and Smoking F5000005628258, p 3.

<sup>2968</sup> Kingslea Newsletter 1980/3, 5/2/80, Kingslea Secure F5000005628258. This was inferred from a statement that girls who were turning 15 during the week were to be included when calculating how many cigarettes would be included the following week.

<sup>2969</sup> Kingslea Newsletter 1980/28, exact date unknown circa August 1980, Kingslea Drugs and Smoking F5000005628258, p 3.

An article in a Canterbury University student publication in 1986 stated that residents over 15 were permitted to smoke, and smokers were issued three cigarettes each on weekdays and five per day on the weekends.<sup>2970</sup>

Residents attending school were not permitted to smoke during school intervals in 1987.<sup>2971</sup>

In the early 1990s residents under the age of 16 were not permitted to smoke. Residents 16 years of age and older could use their pocket money to purchase cigarettes. Residential staff were responsible for the supervision, supply and control of cigarettes and smoking times.<sup>2972</sup>

## Contact with field social workers

In 1960 term reports for each resident were provided to district offices. The reports were amended at this stage to include the girl's record at school and attitude to school training (or her work record, and attitude to work training); and her relationships in the house with staff and other residents.<sup>2973</sup>

In 1963 Kingslea staff continued to provide field social workers with term reports, which the field staff noted were comprehensive and helpful. They stated that due to the staff turnover district social workers had not been in the habit of visiting their girls at Kingslea but would begin to do so.<sup>2974</sup>

In 1966 Kingslea also provided a shortened report for the field social workers to pass on to parents. Term reports were changed at this point so that a resident's housemistress/master, matron, and teacher, and the Kingslea nurse each wrote and signed a full report. Previously their reports had been summarised and signed by the Principal.<sup>2975</sup>

In 1968 Principal K J Ford commented that there were often lengthy delays in placing residents back into their districts, and commented that if the length of stays at Kingslea were shorter the field officers may be more likely to keep girls' placements in mind.<sup>2976</sup>

In 1970 child welfare officers escorted new residents to Kingslea. The Principal commented that this gave them an idea of the opportunities available to girls at Kingslea and the problems that faced girls in institutions.<sup>2977</sup>

<sup>2970</sup> "The 'in' scene", Wendy Beecroft, *Canta*, August 1986, Kingslea Profile F5000005133782.

<sup>2971</sup> Christchurch Boys Home School/Kingslea Girls Home School Integration Discussion Points, 30/9/87, Kingslea Drugs and Smoking F5000005627905.

<sup>2972</sup> Care and Protection Unit document, untitled, author and date unknown, circa early 1990s, Kingslea Reports F5000003759606.

<sup>2973</sup> Memo from Superintendent to Principal, 28/6/60, Kingslea Education 2003028572/F021158.

<sup>2974</sup> Memo from J L Hills, Acting District Child Welfare Officer to Principal, 20/5/63, Kingslea Contact with Social Workers F5000004607418.

<sup>2975</sup> Memo from K J Ford, Principal to Superintendent, 30/11/66, Kingslea Education Archives W5048/376 2006/8588.

<sup>2976</sup> Minutes of Augmented Head Office Staff Meeting, 13/11/68, Kingslea Contact with Social Workers 200323017.

<sup>2977</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1970, Kingslea Annual Reports 2005013670, p 27.

In 1978 Kingslea attempted to have the "greatest co-operation possible" with home districts, recognising that treatment options and eventual success could be jeopardised without it.<sup>2978</sup>

In 1980 staff encouraged girls to contact their field social workers while they were on home leave, and look to them for support if any difficulties arose.<sup>2979</sup>

Before making plans for girls' home leave in 1980, Kingslea staff would contact the district social workers with their holiday ideas for the girls. The field social workers were required to either approve the proposal, or offer an alternative suggestion.<sup>2980</sup> In 1981 Kingslea staff urged field social workers, in situations where home leave was inappropriate due to home circumstances, to find an alternative place for the girl to stay. The Principal stated that this was with the view of placing the girl back in the district after discharge, and commented "even if a visit is only for a few days it is often vital for the continuing commitment a girl will give her programme here."<sup>2981</sup>

In 1982 due to the changes that had taken place at Kingslea, senior staff visited districts to acquaint field social workers with Kingslea practises and ensure optimal use of the facility.<sup>2982</sup>

It was reported in the 1984 Annual Report that some field social workers treated Kingslea merely as a "holding pen" making arbitrary decisions without consulting the residential social workers. Conversely, others involved the residential social workers in extensive collaboration in working towards re-establishing girls back into the community.<sup>2983</sup>

In the early 1990s staff recommended that field social workers and parents or caregivers accompany residents when they were admitted to the Care and Protection unit, so the new resident would feel less intimidated and would settle in more quickly.<sup>2984</sup>

## Contact with community

In 1950 the Superintendent asked the Christchurch City Council not to use the land adjacent to the Centre as a temporary caravan park as "presence of a changing population of visitors at such close quarters could present a constant temptation to some in the girls in residence to abscond and misbehave."<sup>2985</sup>

In 1961 Principal K J Ford wished to instigate community interest in the residence in order to develop programmes that she had witnessed in institutions overseas. She stated "The public attitude to training centres in New Zealand is inclined to be critical

<sup>2978</sup> "The Philosophy of Residential Care at Kingslea", author unknown, August 1978, Kingslea Reports F5000005628255, p 7.

<sup>2979</sup> Memo from M E Judge, Principal to Assistant Director (Social Work) 3/4/1980, Kingslea Contact with Family F500000925867.

<sup>2980</sup> For examples see file F5000000925867.

<sup>2981</sup> Memo from M E Judge, Assistant Principal to Assistant Director, Social Work Dunedin, 30/10/1981, Kingslea Contact with Families F500000923180.

<sup>2982</sup> M E Judge to Director, Dunedin, 29/3/82, Kingslea Contact with Social Workers F500000923180.

<sup>2983</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1984, Kingslea Annual Reports F5000004606486, Keller Report p 3.

<sup>2984</sup> Care and Protection Unit document, untitled, author and date unknown, circa early 1990s, Kingslea Reports F5000003759606.

<sup>2985</sup> L G Anderson, Deputy Superintendent to the Town Clerk, Christchurch City Council, 24/5/50, Kingslea Contact with Community F5000004607418.

rather than helpful. Ours is a community job. We are trying to produce good citizens and we need the full cooperation of the community to do so."<sup>2986</sup> She asked local ministers to invite members of their congregation to visit the residence at Christmas and New Year's Eve, and commented afterwards that she was amazed and encouraged by the fact that there were more visitors present than there were residents. She stated that the visits from the community were a "great help" over an unsettled period.<sup>2987</sup>

Following the success of the Christmas and New Year's Eve visits, in 1962 the 'Burwood Social Club' was established. The group was split into four, and each smaller group 'adopted' one of the units. A newspaper article reported that members of the Club visited residents and took part in games and singing, occasionally brought speakers to talk with the girls, and at times invited the girls to their homes. The Principal stated: "This kind of public interest is of vital importance to our work. It helps the girls feel less isolated, it breaks down the wall of division between the trainees and the outside community and builds up their self-respect."<sup>2988</sup>

In 1968 Kingslea had regular visits from community and church groups. Principal K J Ford stated that the visits contributed an important part of a girl's rehabilitation and that the "friendliness and interest of these voluntary visitors help give a trainee belief in herself and confidence."<sup>2989</sup>

In 1970 youth group members from various churches visited Kingslea on Sunday evenings. They joined residents for a meal followed by discussion.<sup>2990</sup> Chaplains from local churches also visited the girls, and arranged for women from their congregations to visit fortnightly.<sup>2991</sup> This continued in 1971<sup>2992</sup> and 1972.<sup>2993</sup> Staff members from Kingslea in 1970 spoke in churches and clubs at times as a means to keep the community informed.<sup>2994</sup>

In 1974 Kingslea had increasing contact with other secondary schools in Christchurch for both educational and sporting reasons. Kingslea teams competed locally in six different sports, and some residents attended local schools.<sup>2995</sup>

Residents had contact with the community through some church involvement; 'frequent and various' recreational activities; teams in netball, basketball and softball competitions; and interschool competitions in 1977.<sup>2996</sup>

In 1978 some families in the Christchurch community volunteered to befriend a resident each and include her in their "family circle". They would visit her at Kingslea, keep in contact by phone and have her for day or weekend leave. This was instigated because isolation from the community was seen to be a negative aspect of institutionalisation. The interaction with the families was intended to give

<sup>2986</sup> "Public urged to help training centre work" writer unknown, *The Press*, 9/12/61, Kingslea Contact with Community F021158/2003028572.

<sup>2987</sup> Memo from K J Ford, Principal to Superintendent, 6/2/62, Kingslea Contact with Community F021158/2003028572.

<sup>2988</sup> "Community participation introduced at centre", writer unknown, *The Press*, 27/11/62, Kingslea Contact with Community F021158/2003028572.

<sup>2989</sup> "Absconding from Institutions", writer unknown, *Christchurch Press*, 19/10/68, Kingslea Admissions F021155.

<sup>2990</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1970, Kingslea Annual Reports 2005013670, p 20.

<sup>2991</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1970, Kingslea Annual Reports 2005013670, p 26.

<sup>2992</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1971, Kingslea Annual Reports 2005013670, p 19.

<sup>2993</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1972, Kingslea Annual Reports 2005013670, p 9.

<sup>2994</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1970, Kingslea Annual Reports 2005013670, p 24.

<sup>2995</sup> Memo from O T Ryan, Principal, to Director General, 13/12/74, Kingslea Profile 2005013475.

<sup>2996</sup> Questionnaire sent to National Institutions, 1977, Kingslea Admissions 2005013475, p 3.

girls the opportunity to have a break from Kingslea which allowed "a sense of proportion to be brought back into the everyday living situation." The visits were also aimed at allowing girls to witness ordinary family interactions. Acting Assistant Principal M E Judge commented that not all girls could respond to the "close personal relationship" involvement with a family brought, and for those girls Kingslea endeavoured to create less demanding community contact such as membership in groups, clubs and teams.<sup>2997</sup> This programme continued in 1980.<sup>2998</sup>

In 1981 girls were given the opportunity to join outside organisations and cultural groups, as well as sports clubs. In order to improve community contact outings were limited to groups of two or three girls; staff rejected large group outings as a means of fostering community contact. Staff encouraged regular contact with male peers by enrolment at co-educational schools; joining local groups; regular scheduling of dances and discos; and age appropriate contact with boyfriends both on and off campus.<sup>2999</sup>

In 1984 in response to a high proportion of Maori and Pacific Island residents, Kingslea increased contact with Maori and Pacific Island groups from the local community.<sup>3000</sup>

It was noted in the 1984 Annual Report that it was important that girls not feel isolated from the wider community after admission to Kingslea, and that Residential Social Workers maintained community links by taking girls out of Kingslea on a regular basis in small groups "as a normal family would go on outings to picnic or roller skating etc."<sup>3001</sup>

Nine local people volunteered at Kingslea during 1985, one as a remedial reading assistant and the remaining volunteering to cover staff breaks, cover reception duties, and greet and visit the residents.<sup>3002</sup>

In 1987, as Kingslea prepared to accept male residents from the closed Christchurch Boys' Home, local Burwood residents formed a committee they called the "Residents Action Group". They were concerned about the impact of admitting boys to Kingslea and about the staff to resident ratios. They wanted to be consulted about onsite building developments, and to be informed of the supervision arrangements (particularly for off-campus outings). They stated there was a need to balance the rights of the community with the rights of the Kingslea residents.<sup>3003</sup> Many of them were worried that the boys would pose a threat to them, their families and their property.<sup>3004</sup> The Regional Director nominated an officer to work with the group and requested the Principals of Kingslea and Christchurch Boys' Home to organise a meeting with them.<sup>3005</sup> The meeting went ahead, and the outcome was an agreement that local residents and the Principals would meet once a month to discuss concerns and share information, and the local residents would contact

<sup>2997</sup> Memo from M E Judge, Acting Assistant Principal to Assistant Director (Social Work), 31/7/78, Kingslea Contact with Community 2005013475.

<sup>2998</sup> Kingslea Newsletter 1980/34, 16/10/80, Kingslea Contact with Communities F5000005628258.

<sup>2999</sup> "The practice of residential care at Kingslea Christchurch" compiled by Kingslea staff, August 1981, Kingslea Profile F5000005133784.

<sup>3000</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1984, Kingslea Annual Reports F5000004606486, p 14.

<sup>3001</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1984, Kingslea Annual Reports F5000004606486, Keller Report, p 1.

<sup>3002</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1985, Kingslea Annual Reports F5000004606486, p 14.

<sup>3003</sup> E R Brussovs, Representatives of Residents Action Group to Director General, 17/7/87, Kingslea Profile F5000005627905.

<sup>3004</sup> Minutes from Shirley Neighbourhood Support Groups meeting, 22/9/87, Kingslea Profile F5000005627905.

<sup>3005</sup> T M Comer, Regional Director to E R Brussovs, Residents Action Group, 6/8/87, Kingslea Contact with Community F5000005627905.

Kingslea if they had immediate concerns regarding youngsters' behaviour in and around their property. The Residents Action Group also decided that they would nominate two of their group for membership of the Institution Management Committee "as a way to more formally participate in the life of Kingslea and develop an active neighbourhood community ethos which includes Kingslea."<sup>3006</sup>

In 1989 the Christchurch Golf Club complained about damage to their property by Kingslea residents. Manager G D Reid requested that Kingslea cover the costs of the many break-ins and thefts that had occurred, and informed the Principal that the club would be laying complaints with the police in respect of the latest incident. In reference to discussions held with local residents and community groups prior to the integration of Kingslea and the Boys' Home, the Manager wrote "the assurances given to residents were but hollow promises..."<sup>3007</sup> The Principal replied that the period since the merger of the two institutions had been a difficult one due to loss of staff, as well as trying to bridge two staff and management cultures and philosophies. She stated Kingslea was "still confident that longer term the higher risk to neighbours in this area should not be much greater than in the general community", noting that the crime rate in the area had not risen since the merger and that residents had become easy targets for blame. She did, however, agree to Kingslea meeting any difference between insurance paid and actual cost incurred, although remarked that this was not an ongoing obligation as the Director General was not responsible for the torts of his wards.<sup>3008</sup>

## Media interest

There were several 'Letters to the Editor' in 1968 about Kingslea and what it offered its residents.<sup>3009</sup>

Channel One filmed a documentary about Kingslea in 1979 in which they featured a previous resident 'made good' as well as residents still admitted. The producer noted that the documentary could dispel the myths which surrounded Girls' Homes.<sup>3010</sup> Staff members discussed the pros and cons of appearing in the documentary with girls and their families, and consent was required before any residents were filmed.<sup>3011</sup>

The television programme 'Viewfinder' aired an episode about life at Kingslea in 1985 which the Principal noted was good quality film but only lasted 10 minutes and "hardly warranted the time given to its preparation."<sup>3012</sup>

<sup>3006</sup> Memo from Vaughan Milner for Regional Director to Director General, 28/8/87, Kingslea Contact with Community F500005627905.

<sup>3007</sup> G D Reid, Manager Christchurch Golf Club to M E Judge, Principal, 10/5/89, Kingslea Contact with Community F5000003920983.

<sup>3008</sup> M E Judge, Principal to G D Reid, Manager Christchurch Golf Club, 15/5/89, Kingslea Contact with Community F5000003920983.

<sup>3009</sup> See for example, W A Craig to the Editor, *Christchurch Star*, 27/4/68, Kingslea Contact with Community Archives W50481376 2006/8588.

<sup>3010</sup> P Jones, Director TV1 Documentary Unit to Mr J Callahan, Director General, 23/4/79, Kingslea Profile F5000000925867.

<sup>3011</sup> S J Callahan, Director General to P Jones, TV1 Documentary Unit, Kingslea Profile F5000000925867.

<sup>3012</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1985, Kingslea Annual Reports F5000004606486, p 10.

## Visiting Committees

There was a Visiting Committee in 1980 with four members that maintained regular contact with Kingslea. The Principal believed the Visiting Committee was working effectively.<sup>3013</sup>

The Principal commented that the Visiting Committee was "largely defunct" in 1981, stating that although the Chairperson had maintained her interest and contact, the rest of the committee members had not.<sup>3014</sup>

The Principal noted that the Visiting Committee was "moribund" for most of 1982 and would be phased out in 1983. He commented that it was an "enduring frustration" that the committee members had not taken their duties as seriously as they might.<sup>3015</sup> Due to a change in legislation, the Visiting Committee was not phased out as planned, and all Committee members were reappointed. The principal noted improvement in the new committee in 1983. At this stage girls who complained of being treated unfairly were encouraged and assisted to contact a committee member.<sup>3016</sup>

In 1986 the Visiting Committee had four members. The weekly "Kingslea bulletin" was provided to committee members and they visited the home over the year. The Chairman commented "the girls at Kingslea seem well aware of the existence and the purposes of the Visiting Committee and on three occasions have communicated directly with committee members." He noted that the residents seemed satisfied with being given the opportunity to air their grievance, but that the committee member was satisfied on each occasion that the girls "had not suffered any real injustice and each particular circumstance had a reasonable explanation." The Chairman was impressed with the facilities and staff at Kingslea.<sup>3017</sup> The Committee was contacted frequently by girls during 1986; the Principal commented that "mostly this has been in a manipulative way... We are also needing to work with the Visiting Committee, so that they understand the girl's behaviour and also the basis for our treatment goals for the girl."<sup>3018</sup>

In 1987 the Visiting Committee had only two members. In the Annual Report to the Minister of Social Welfare, the Chairperson commented that the two members had kept up regular visits, and noted that there had been two direct approaches by residents who had questions about privileges and discipline, and the complaints were resolved. He reported that many staff members had had doubts and anxieties about the amalgamation of the Boys' Home on the Kingslea campus.<sup>3019</sup>

<sup>3013</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1980, Kingslea Annual Reports F5000004606486, p 6.

<sup>3014</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1981, Kingslea Annual Reports F5000004606486, p 12.

<sup>3015</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1982, Kingslea Annual Reports F5000004606486, p 6.

<sup>3016</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1983, Kingslea Annual Reports F5000004606486, p 12.

<sup>3017</sup> P D Dunbar QSM JP, Visiting Committee Chairman to Minister of Social Welfare, 20/6/86, Kingslea Reports F5000005133876.

<sup>3018</sup> M E Judge, Principal, to Director General, 23/9/86, Kingslea Reports F5000005133876, p 4.

<sup>3019</sup> P D Dunbar, Visiting Committee Chairman to Minister of Social Welfare, 30/6/87, Kingslea Profile F5000006661405.

## Contact with families

Up until 1960 there were no formal provisions for home leave for girls in the residence. The Superintendent wrote that "a child is sometimes permitted to return home for a brief holiday but the reason is usually a wedding or other celebration or the serious illness of a parent. The privilege has been a haphazard one..." He requested the establishment of a home leave policy for residents in training centres, and recommended all residents be permitted to go home for a short period nine months after admission, provided their behaviour justified this.<sup>3020</sup> The policy was approved, subject to the condition that at least six months had elapsed since the resident's last serious incident. Furthermore, periods of leave were to be staggered in order to prevent the risks of residents associating and getting into trouble together while away. The Superintendent commented that as well as being a useful incentive, the visits would help residents view their home situations more realistically, and would help staff assess the suitability of the resident returning home upon discharge.<sup>3021</sup>

In 1960 a letter was sent to residents' parents stating that the only times a girl could receive parcels were at Christmas, Easter and her birthday, and that parcels sent at other times would be returned. The writer commented that this was because it would be unfair "if some girls have parcels sent in while others have neither letters nor gifts." The letter to parents stated: "What does help the girls, is to get regular and frequent letter from home... if in your letters you advise her always to try and do what is asked of her cheerfully and willingly, there is no reason why the future should not be a happy one."<sup>3022</sup>

In 1965 the requirements were changed so that residents could be granted home leave after four months residence, although the Superintendent commented that this was strictly a minimum and "only those who have made a most favourable response should be permitted home leave after such a short period of training." The period a resident had spent in a family home prior to her admission to Kingslea was not included in the four months.<sup>3023</sup>

In 1969 residents who attended the school were not granted home leave for the August school holidays as staff did not want the school girls "to be treated as a privileged group".<sup>3024</sup>

In the 1970s Kingslea sent a letter out to parents of new residents which gave a physical description of the grounds, set out the educational and recreational programmes offered to girls, and explained some of the contact parents could have with their daughters.<sup>3025</sup>

In 1972 Kingslea staff requested that residents' home leave periods be extended to two weeks. They noted that the most important of Kingslea's roles was to "give girls an awareness of the difficulties they must face and overcome in the normal

<sup>3020</sup> Memo from C E Peek, Superintendent to the Hon. M B Howard, 19/9/60, Kingslea Contact with Families F021158/2003028572.

<sup>3021</sup> Circular Memorandum 1960/49, 21/10/60, Kingslea Admissions F021158/2003028572.

<sup>3022</sup> Letter sent to residents' parents, writer unknown, 21/12/60, Kingslea Contact with Families F021158/2003028572.

<sup>3023</sup> Circular Memorandum 1965/21, 16/3/65, Kingslea Contact with Families Archives W5048/376 2006/8588.

<sup>3024</sup> Memo from K J Ford, Principal to Superintendent, 30/12/69, Kingslea Contact with Families Archives W5048/376 2006/8588.

<sup>3025</sup> Sample letter sent to parents, O T Ryan, Principal, circa 1977, Kingslea Profile 2005013475.



community". They believed this could only be achieved with longer and more frequent visits home, as when home leave was limited girls became too dependant on the Institution.<sup>3026</sup> The request was granted. The rules that disallowed home leave within less than six months of a resident's last serious offence, and required the resident to have been in the Home for more than four months, were also both abolished.<sup>3027</sup>

There were increased amounts of home leave in 1972, the Principal was of the belief that it was unrealistic to assume that simply because a resident was doing well at Kingslea she would also do well at home, and it was therefore necessary for girls to face their "real problems" during the course of their training.<sup>3028</sup>

Girls were able to "buy" phone calls with their pocket money in 1976.<sup>3029</sup>

Residents' incoming and outgoing mail was censored in 1977. Staff noted that residents were aware of this and that the censorship relaxed as staff got to know the girl and her correspondents.<sup>3030</sup> Kingslea would accommodate residents' parents who wished to visit for a meal or an overnight stay, and would meet them at the train station or airport. Staff noted that whole families were encouraged to visit and stay, and a furnished house was available.<sup>3031</sup>

In 1978 the role families could play in helping residents was recognised and family counselling was increasingly offered. Out-of-town families were encouraged to visit, and were not charged for staying in the accommodation provided at Kingslea. In instances where a visit from family was considered crucial, Kingslea could apply for finance to help cover the cost of the trip for the family.<sup>3032</sup>

In 1978 the Acting Assistant Principal commented that although many girls were interacting with families in the community, Kingslea's major responsibility for each resident was still "the rebuilding of her permanent relationship with her own family wherever this is at all possible."<sup>3033</sup>

In 1979 Principal M P Doolan advised staff that home leave was granted to girls at his discretion and as such should not be used as a bargaining tool. He stated that previous abscondings would be one of the factors taken into account when considering home leave, but that home leave would not necessarily be forfeited on account of absconding. He also stated "staff are never to threaten a girl with the loss of home leave if she behaves a certain way, although one can point out to girls that loss of home leave is one of the possibilities they face if their response is poor."<sup>3034</sup>

In 1980 staff were advised by the Principal to make the most of family visits to Kingslea as an opportunity to work with the family unit.<sup>3035</sup>

<sup>3026</sup> Memo from unknown writer to Director General, 3/7/72, Kingslea Contact with Families Archives W5048/376 2006/8588.

<sup>3027</sup> Notes to be included in a circular memorandum under Social Work, date unknown circa 1973, Kingslea Contact with Families W5048/376 2006/8588.

<sup>3028</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1972, Kingslea Annual Reports 2005013670, p 10.

<sup>3029</sup> Newsletter 76/17, 8/6/78, Kingslea Profile F5000005133786.

<sup>3030</sup> Questionnaire sent to National Institutions, 1977, Kingslea Admissions 2005013475, p 2.

<sup>3031</sup> Questionnaire sent to National Institutions, 1977, Kingslea Admissions 2005013475, p 3.

<sup>3032</sup> "The Philosophy of Residential Care at Kingslea", author unknown, August 1978, Kingslea Reports F5000005628256, p 7.

<sup>3033</sup> Memo from M E Judge, Acting Assistant Principal to Assistant Director (Social Work), 31/7/78, Kingslea Contact with Community 2005013475.

<sup>3034</sup> Newsletter 1979/33, 20/11/79, Kingslea Contact with Families F5000005628255.

<sup>3035</sup> Kingslea Newsletter 1980/17, 28/5/80, Kingslea Contact with Families F5000005628258.

One of the objectives for Kingslea in 1981 was to "maintain and improve a girl's contact with her family and significant others, and enhance her capacity to relate effectively in the community." Girls were generally permitted three periods of home leave per twelve months in the Residence, and home leave was not to be restricted as a disciplinary measure. Staff noted that Kingslea would be open over the holiday period and girls could be returned if problems arose.<sup>3036</sup>

Mail censorship ceased at Kingslea in 1980. Principal M P Doolan stated however, that staff would retain the right to open a girl's mail in her presence if they had reason to be concerned about the nature of the correspondence, and that they would continue to inspect the contents of parcels.<sup>3037</sup>

In 1985 Principal M E Judge commented that 20 of the 41 extended care girls were left without their May holiday arranged, or arrangements made that appeared inappropriate. She strongly recommended "that all social workers with girls in Kingslea consider options for all holidays so that remaining at Kingslea through lack of alternatives does not occur."<sup>3038</sup> Kingslea continued to provide accommodation for parents who wished to stay onsite. There was constant demand for the accommodation and at least two weeks notice was required for requests.<sup>3039</sup>

In the early 1990s staff recommended that field social workers and parents or caregivers accompany residents when they were admitted to the Care and Protection unit, so the new resident would feel less intimidated and would settle in more quickly.<sup>3040</sup>

In the early 1990s, staff noted that from the day a Care and Protection resident was first admitted, plans were made for her discharge back to family, and it was therefore vital to use every available opportunity to involve the family in the rehabilitation process, and in making plans for the residents. Staff recommended that new residents were accompanied by their parents when first admitted. Family visits were considered important while young persons were in residence and could be negotiated with case workers. Residents' families could stay in flats at Kingslea for \$30 per night. Meals were not provided and families were expected to make their own way to and from Kingslea. Visits from those other than family members had to be approved by the Field Social Worker. Families could call residents at any time; friends could call with case workers' approval. Young people were encouraged to write to their families, and staff did not read incoming or outgoing mail.<sup>3041</sup>

In 1992 staff informed contributing districts that limited accommodation was available at Kingslea for parents and whanau of residents from outside the Christchurch area. The home district was responsible for covering the costs of the family's travel and the Kingslea accommodation which was \$30 per night. Residential social workers had discretion as to determining the terms of the visit.<sup>3042</sup>

<sup>3036</sup> "The practice of residential care at Kingslea Christchurch" compiled by Kingslea staff, August 1981, Kingslea Profile F5000005133784. For more information on staff views on discipline at the time, see Discipline section.

<sup>3037</sup> Kingslea Newsletter 1980/8, 13/3/80, Kingslea Contact with Families F5000005628258.

<sup>3038</sup> M E Judge, Principal to the Director (Social Work) Dunedin, 11/6/85, Kingslea Contact with Families F5000000923404.

<sup>3039</sup> Notes for inclusion in the next General Circular Memorandum, 22/4/85, Kingslea Profile F5000005133782.

<sup>3040</sup> Care and Protection Unit document, untitled, author and date unknown, circa early 1990s, Kingslea Reports F5000003759606.

<sup>3041</sup> Care and Protection Unit document, untitled, author and date unknown, circa early 1990s, Kingslea Reports F5000003759606.

<sup>3042</sup> Memo from F Erickson, Manager to Manager (NZCYPS) of all contributing districts, 2/6/92, Kingslea Contact with Families F5000000923407.

## Preparation for discharge and after care arrangements

A newspaper article from the 1960s stated that once the girls were living in the hostel (the last unit before discharge) staff would start to attempt to find them a job, and that this was "a task not as easy as it used to be, for employers are demanding higher standards of education all round." Girls would also be sent to stay with their parents or guardians prior to their discharge to decide whether or not they wanted to return to that environment.<sup>3043</sup>

The Principal noted in 1974 that there was a need for guidance and assistance from specialised officers upon residents' discharge from Kingslea.<sup>3044</sup>

In 1986 Principal M E Judge wrote to the Director General requesting an exemption from the rule that staff members could not board Wards. There was a resident who had been ready for discharge for a year but remained at Kingslea due to the lack of an appropriate alternative. She had formed a "healthy open attachment" to a residential social worker, and the social worker had requested that the girl board with her family.<sup>3045</sup>

<sup>3043</sup> "Jobs found for girls at end of period of training", Dorothy Braxton, *Christchurch Star*, date unknown circa 1963, Kingslea Programmes F021158 2003028572.

<sup>3044</sup> Kingslea Annual Report 1972, Kingslea Annual Reports 2005013670, p 5.

<sup>3045</sup> Memo from M E Judge, Principal to Director General, 18/8/86, Kingslea Profile F5000005133876.

